

From
THE MIDNIGHT SUN
to
THE LONG WHITE CLOUD

Finns in New Zealand

OLAVI
KOIVUKANGAS



**FROM
THE MIDNIGHT SUN
TO
THE LONG WHITE CLOUD**



Institute of Migration
Piispankatu 3
20500 Turku, Finland
Tel. +358+21+231 7536
Fax +358+21+233 3460

MIGRATION STUDIES C 11

**FROM
THE MIDNIGHT SUN
TO
THE LONG WHITE CLOUD**

Finns in New Zealand

Olavi Koivukangas

INSTITUTE OF MIGRATION
TURKU – FINLAND
1996

ISBN 951-9266-50-X
ISSN 0356-780X

Gummerus Kirjapaino Oy
Jyväskylä 1996

CONTENTS

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS	9
Chapter I: INTRODUCTION	11
1. The Islands	11
2. A Land of the Long White Cloud	12
3. A Land of the Midnight Sun	16
4. Former Research	20
5. The Aim of the Study	21
6. The Major Sources	22
Chapter II: HERMAN SPÖRING FROM TURKU, FINLAND, SAILED WITH JAMES COOK IN NEW ZEALAND IN 1769–70	24
Chapter III: FINNS AMONG WHALERS	32
Chapter IV: GOLDDIGGERS AND OTHER EARLY FINNS	41
Chapter V: SOUTH ISLAND – THE GATEWAY TO THE COLONY	51
1. Port of Lyttelton	54
2. Little River	58
3. Pigeon Bay	66
4. Other South Island Settlers	72
Chapter VI: NORTH ISLAND – THE MAIN SETTLEMENT	89
1. Province of Auckland	89
2. Hawkes Bay Province	119
3. Wellington Province	129

Chapter VII: FISHERMEN ON STEWART ISLAND	140
Chapter VIII: GABRIEL JOHANSON, A SHIPWRECKED SETTLER, CHATHAM ISLAND	153
Chapter IX: THE "PAMIR" – A PRIZE OF WAR 1941–49	156
1. A Rose of White Sailing Ships	156
2. The Seizure	157
3. The Crew in New Zealand	162
4. Conclusion	167
Chapter X: ATTEMPTS TO GET FINNISH TIMBER WORKERS IN 1949–50	170
Chapter XI: PIONEERS OF THE PULP AND PAPER INDUSTRY ..	180
1. Armas Kivi – a Canadian Finn	180
2. Sulo Kanerva	181
3. Jerm Thorwald Christiansen	183
Chapter XII: FROM THE KYMI VALLEY TO THE VOLCANIC PLATEAU – TOKOROA 1953	187
1. Arrival	187
2. Settling Down	189
3. The Tokoroa Finnish Club 1961–77	196
Chapter XIII: KAWERAU – THE FINNISH STRONGHOLD	201
1. The Paper Mill and the Town	201
2. From Finland to the Foot of Mount Edgecumbe	204
3. Settling down in Kawerau	209
4. The Kawerau Sauna Club	215
5. The Lutheran Church	217
6. The Kawerau Finnish Club 1961–84	222
Chapter XIV: WOMEN IN THE MAIN ROLE – FINNS TO NEW ZEALAND IN RECENT DECADES	231

Chapter XV: GENERAL REVIEW	245
1. Numbers	245
2. Areas of Origin	246
3. Dates of Arrival	246
4. Age at Arrival	250
5. Places of Settlement and Occupations – Major Contributions	254
6. Social and Religious Life	258
7. Offences against the Law	259
8. Contacts with Finland and Search for Roots	261
 Chapter XVI: CONCLUSION AND INTERNATIONAL PERSPECTIVES	 262
1. Patterns of Migration	262
2. International Contexts	264
 NOTES AND REFERENCES	 266
BIBLIOGRAPHY	287
Appendix I: Finns to New Zealand before 1949	299
Appendix II: Finns to New Zealand after 1949	374

Acknowledgements

Often when I have mentioned my study on Finns in New Zealand, the response has been: "Are there any Finns in New Zealand?" Then I explain that you can hardly find a place on earth where there aren't any Finns. Even the first white settler in Tahiti was a Finn.

Distant places have always fascinated me. My interest was furthered in 1968 when the Australian National University in Canberra granted me a Ph.D. scholarship to study Scandinavian migration to Australia. Since then I have also been collecting data on Finnish immigrants in New Zealand. On the way back to Finland in 1972 my wife and I and our eight months old daughter had the pleasure to visit New Zealand for ten days.

In 1988 on my journey to Australia for the Bicentennial conferences in Canberra and Melbourne I visited New Zealand to collect a memorial stone from Spöring Island for the Spöring Monument in Turku, Finland, a monument unveiled in 1990. I also visited some New Zealand universities to seek a good base for my future field work. My choice was Massey University in Palmerston North, because of its central location in the country and the university's interest in migration studies.

I would like to thank the Research Council for Humanities, Academy of Finland, for a Grant for Senior Scientists for one year to study the Finns in New Zealand and Australia in 1991–92.

I would also like to thank the Department of Sociology, Massey University, Palmerston North, for a position as a Visiting Fellow, August 1991 – February 1992. I am especially grateful for the support of Dr. Andrew D. Trlin, a prominent migration scholar and an expert on Yugoslavs in New Zealand, and the excellent facilities at the Massey University Library.

I am also indebted to the staff of the National Archives in Wellington for their co-operation, and especially Mr. Eammon Bolger who once wondered why I wished to dig out every Finn from the original Naturalization Files. My thanks are also due to the Turnbull Library in Wellington, especially for their excellent picture service. I would also like

to thank the Registrar General's Office in Lower Hutt. Unfortunately time did not permit an adequate search of the death registers. With regard to the immigration after the Second World War, I am grateful to the New Zealand Immigration Service in Wellington for their prompt expert service.

Without the assistance and cooperation of the Finnish community in New Zealand this book would have been much shorter. I am grateful to the descendants of the old settlers and the postwar immigrants. Especially I would like to mention Elvira Sundell and Harry Hermanson from Opotiki, photographer Don Roy from Wellington, Marlene and Jack Brankin in Christchurch and George H. Wäst from Invercargill living now in Wanaka. From the Finnish arrivals in the 1950's my thanks are especially due to Mrs. Hilja Lajunen in Tokoroa and Mrs. Kerttu Kärkkäinen in Kawerau – living now in Finland. I would also like to thank the Finnish community in Auckland and especially Saara St. Martin, Telle van Oorde and the Finnish Consul Mr. and Mrs. Ari Hallenberg. Thanks to Jussi Parkkali, who had arrived in New Zealand as a child, for reading the manuscript and for useful comments; thanks also to Liisa Tate-Manning in Dunedin for valuable comments.

From Sweden I am indebted to Sten Aminoff, a former Swedish Ambassador to New Zealand and the author of a book on Swedes in New Zealand, for the material he gathered on Finns, as well as for his support and advice.

In Finland I have received crucial support from the Institute of Migration, Turku, and especially from my temporary research assistants Timo Lintula, B.A., in 1991, Ilse-Mari Söderholm, M.A., in 1993–94 and 1995, Thurid Eriksson, M.A., in 1994, Timo Jaakkola, M.Pol.Sc., in 1995, and Helinä Kiviluoma, M.A., in 1995–96. Finally I would like to thank my wife Pirjo, who once again followed me round the world and helped me to collect information in many archives and libraries in New Zealand. Her support and encouragement has been invaluable.

This book is dedicated to the Finns and their descendants in *Aotearoa*, who made their homes on the remote islands of the Southern Seas.

Turku, New Year's Eve 1995

Olavi Koivukangas

Chapter I: Introduction

1. *The Islands*

New Zealand, a self-governing member of the British Commonwealth, is located in the Pacific Ocean midway between the Equator and the South Pole, approximately 1,600 kilometres east of Australia. With a land area of 268,105 square kilometres, New Zealand is similar in size to Britain, Italy and Japan. There are two main islands, separated by Cook Strait. The land is generally hilly and the terrain broken; a third is unsuitable for human habitation. Hilly uplands separate fertile coastal plains and valleys. The spectacular Southern Alps of the South Island, which rise amid permanent snowfields and glaciers, include 19 peaks exceeding 3,000 metres. Here on the south-west coast high mountain ranges meet the ocean in a series of dramatic fiords. A special feature of the North Island is the central volcanic region with three active volcanic peaks and thermal activity featuring hot springs, geysers and boiling mud pools. Both major islands contain fertile lowland areas of pastoral land, large forests, sandy beaches and swift-flowing rivers. Numerous lakes exist on both islands. In the ancient times most of New Zealand was covered by dense and evergreen rain forest. Today only 25 per cent of the land area remains forested. Generally woodland has been converted to farm land and pastures. New Zealand has a wide range of mineral resources. The quantities are too small to be of great commercial value, coal is the exception.

Lying within the South Temperate Zone, New Zealand has an oceanic climate, without pronounced extremes of heat or cold. The average temperature is 15 °C in the North Island and 10 °C in the South Island. The highest mountains are snow-covered throughout the year, and winter brings extensive snow falls in the Southern Alps. The country enjoys ample sunshine and rainfall, although the weather is rather changeable. Seasons are the reverse of the northern hemisphere.

Because of its isolation many species of animals never reached New Zealand, e.g. snakes and poisonous insects. In the absence of predatory

animals some species became flightless. The moa is now extinct, and the kiwi has been adopted as the national symbol.

2. *A Land of the Long White Cloud*

New Zealand's earliest pre-European history cannot be reconstructed with certainty. The islands were discovered and settled by the Maori, a Polynesian people, who migrated from the South Pacific. According to convention the Great Migration – a fleet of canoes probably from the Society Islands – is supposed to have occurred from about 1350. Maori research has always stated that the "Great Fleet" of the Maori tradition was a myth. More likely the country was settled haphazardly over several centuries – at least from about 800 A.D. Living primarily in the North Island, the Maori tribes had a primitive economy based on agriculture,



The Maori War Dance from the book Thomson, Arthur S., The Story of New Zealand, Vol. II, London 1859.

hunting and fishing. Their arts and crafts were highly developed, and warfare, a seasonal occupation, was a supreme art. The Maori population before the arrival of Europeans may have been about 200,000.

The first documented Europeans to see the land were the Dutch navigator Abel Tasman in 1642 and the English explorer James Cook in 1769.¹ The Maori culture remained virtually unchanged by European contact until the early 19th century, when traders, whalers, and sealers exposed the Maori to a different material civilization, and Christian missionaries introduced new spiritual concepts. The introduction of rum, diseases, and the use of muskets in intertribal wars took a terrible toll. Christianity, introduced by Samuel Marsden in 1814, was assimilated quite successfully into Maori beliefs. At first settlement was slow because of the hostility of the Maori. The population of Europeans in 1800 is estimated to have been about 50 persons, mainly whalers and sealers, shipwrecked sailors and escaped convicts from Australia, rising to some 200 in 1815 and perhaps up to 2,000 by the end of the 1830's.

In 1840, by the Treaty of Waitangi, negotiated by William Hobson – the second Governor of New Zealand – and the leading Maori chiefs, sovereignty (in the English text and "kawanatanga" or 'governing' in the Maori interpretation) over New Zealand was ceded to the British Crown. The Maori became British subjects and were guaranteed ownership of their land. New Zealand was made a part of New South Wales, but became a separate colony in 1841. In 1841 the European population was 5,000 rising to 22,000 by the middle of the century. Representative institutions were soon provided and the constitution was established in 1852. Provincial governments were set up in 1853 to meet the needs of the scattered settlements.

In the meantime the first settlers of the New Zealand Company, an organization promoted by Edward Wakefield, had arrived in Wellington in 1840, followed by settlements at New Plymouth and Nelson. According to Wakefield's idea the revenue derived from the sale of land to gentleman farmers was to finance the immigration of selected farm workers and artisans. Agriculture, however, proved to be unprofitable for many years. Small farms, laboriously hacked out of the forest, became typical of the North Island, while immense sheep farms were established in the South Island. From 1840 to 1860 natural increase was small and immigration was the principal means of increasing the population.



SINCLAIR 1988, p. 236

The discovery of gold at Collingwood in 1857 and in Central Otago in 1861 brought a large number of new settlers – altogether 204,786 arrivals in the 1860's. Most immigrants went to the South Island, principally Otago. Obviously many found neither *El Dorado* on the goldfields nor *Utopia* and left in disillusionment. After the boom, New Zealand was in a depression.

The extensive immigration of the early 1870's resulted largely from a vigorous scheme of assisted immigration and public works programme, inaugurated by Sir Julius Vogel. The result was an increase in European population to a magnitude not exceeded until after the Second World War. Among these settlers there were a few thousand Scandinavians.

Despite the difficulties caused by the Maori Independency Wars, especially in the 1860's, the European New Zealand developed rapidly. The growth of the pastoral industry, following the first successful shipment of frozen meat to Britain in 1882, laid the basis for a more permanent period of economic prosperity for white immigrants. Agricultural products have since provided the major source of New Zealand's export income. But as a whole, a depression prevailed throughout the 1880's. Unemployment increased, farm bankruptcies multiplied, immigration fell to a trickle, and many colonists returned to Australia or England.

Finally, in 1890, a reformist Liberal political party was swept into office by a coalition of urban workers, recent immigrants, and landless farmers. Land reform sought to break up the large estates and to open land to small farmers, and to stimulate rural prosperity by low interest state loans. Also a compulsory arbitration system in labour disputes was introduced, as well as regulated factory conditions, wages and working hours. In 1893, New Zealand became the first country in the world to grant women the right to vote, and in 1898 an old-age pension was introduced. The return of prosperity, however, was due as much to higher revenue from exports as to government policies.

Despite its geographic location, New Zealand has been closely involved with the major international events of the 20th century. New Zealand, which had become a Dominion of the British Empire in 1907, fought alongside the United Kingdom in the First World War. The war also brought a new wave of immigration to a standstill. Following the prosperity of the early postwar years, New Zealand's economy was mildly depressed by low export prices throughout the 1920's and seriously

affected by the world-wide depression of the 1930's. In 1935 a Labour Government won a sweeping electoral victory. Although its programme was interrupted by the Second World War, the Labour Government completed New Zealand's transformation into a welfare state. During the War New Zealand forces served in Europe, the Middle East and the Pacific. New Zealand also became a founder member of the United Nations organization. In 1951 New Zealand, together with Australia and the United States, signed the ANZUS defensive alliance and became a member of the Southeast Asia Treaty Organization (SEATO). From the late 1940's to the early 1970's New Zealanders experienced a period of increasing prosperity, but economic growth has since slowed as the world's economic difficulties have intensified. There are over 3,500,000 New Zealanders of all races, but they are predominantly of European and Polynesian origin. The Maori population is around 10 per cent, but intermarriage means that many New Zealanders have both Maori and European origins. The overall density of population is 13 persons per square kilometre, and more than two-thirds live in the North Island. Auckland, the largest city, has a population of one million in the metropolitan area. Living standards in New Zealand have generally been high with a comprehensive social welfare system. In the late 1980's and early 1990's New Zealand was badly affected by the worldwide economic depression. In the middle of the 1990's New Zealand economy is slowly recovering.

3. A Land of the Midnight Sun

The area of present day Finland is approximately 338,000 square kilometres. One quarter of the country lies north of the Arctic Circle. The terrain is mainly lowland, rising to the Scandinavian highland in the North. Finland has a surprising moderate climate for such a northerly latitude. The northern part of Finland has continuous daylight for several weeks during the short but brilliant summer, and during midwinter an equally long period of darkness. The greatest natural resource is forest, which covers some 70 per cent of the country.

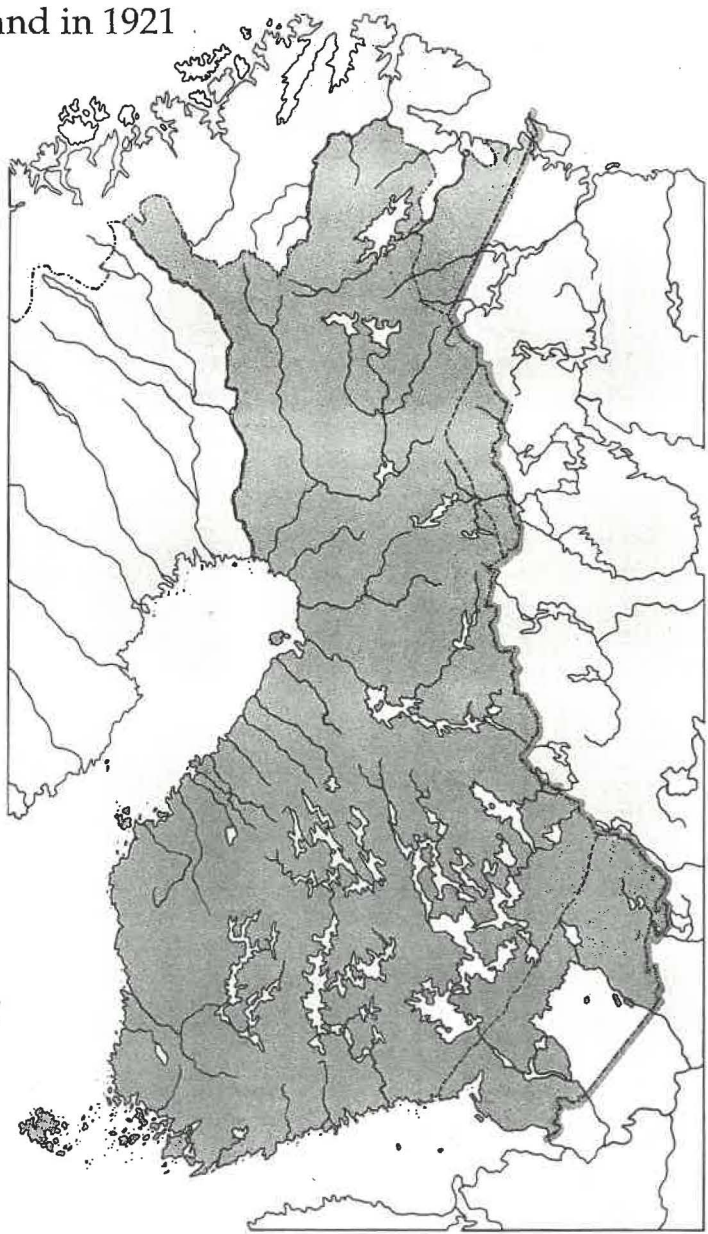
In the following a short history of Finland is presented, mainly for the descendants of Finnish settlers in New Zealand, to show how deep the roots of the people of Finland are.

The most ancient relics of human culture found in Finland date back to 8000 B.C. At that time people, making their weapons of stone and bone, were mainly concentrated in the coastal areas. About 5000 B.C. the Finnish climate became damp and warm. Few centuries after that the first culture using pottery, the Comb Ceramic culture, spread throughout Finland. Around 2500 B.C. the people in Finland had reached the agricultural stage and raised cattle. About 1500 B.C. bronze was introduced to Finland, and about 500 B.C. began the era of iron. During the Iron Age Finland had indirectly commercial contacts even with remote Rome. The Roman historian Tacitus portrayed the wild and primitive people called *Fenni*. The Finnish national epic the Kalevala tells in folklore about this prehistoric epoch. In the 9th century the Gulf of Finland became the main route of the Swedish Vikings on their expeditions eastward, resulting the founding of Russia in 862. The end of the Viking period in the 11th century was a time of unrest. Except for the Åland Islands, there were no permanent Swedish colonies in Finland at the end of the pagan period.

During the 12th century the competition on Finland developed into a conflict between West and East – Sweden and Novgorod. The first Christian influences apparently came from the East. About 1151 the King of Swedes, Erik, and an English-born bishop, Henry, made the first crusade to Finland. After the first crusade, Finland oriented towards Sweden, Turku, an old trading place, being the main domain. Tavastia and Karelia were annexed with later crusades. Finally, in 1332, peace was established with Novgorod at Pähkinäsaari dividing Karelia between Sweden and Novgorod. For 650 years the Finns shared the history of the Swedish people. As a result of the 30 Years' War in the 17th century Sweden was emerging as a major power in European politics. Mercantilistic principles led to the founding of a colony, known as "New Sweden" on the Delaware River in North America in 1638. Many of the colonists were Finns, especially Finns from Central Sweden where they had moved from Savolax since the 16th century.

During the 18th century the competition on Finland continued. The Great Northern War ended in the Treaty of Uusikaupunki in 1721 and cost Sweden Karelia and many other possessions. Finally during the Napoleonic wars Alexander I of Russia invaded Finland in 1808, and the country was ceded to the Tzar by the Treaty of Hamina in 1809. Finland was organized as a Grand Duchy with Alexander as its Grand Duke. The

Finland in 1921



SUOMEN HISTORIA, 6. Weilin + Göös 1987, p. 391

19th century saw a marked development of Finnish nationalism. The Bolshevik upheaval in Russia in 1917 finally enabled Finland to declare its independence. On December 31st, 1917, Lenin's government announced its recognition of the new state, followed by France, Sweden and other countries.

After the Finnish Civil War in 1918, Germany tried to link Finland to its sphere of influence. Prince Frederick Karl of Hessen was elected King of Finland, but the collapse of German arms late in 1918 ended these plans. A republican constitution was adopted in June 1919, and the Treaty of Tartu (Dorpat) with Russia in 1920 confirmed the country's independence. The outbreak of the Second World War introduced a difficult period for the young republic. Behind the Winter War of 1939–40 lay the Soviet Union's old fear for the safety of Leningrad. An opportunity to redress occurred when Hitler attacked the Soviet Union in June 1941, and Mannerheim led the Finnish army far into Soviet Karelia. The Finns always insisted that they were fighting a separate war. An Armistice, signed in September 1944, entailed a third war, lasting nearly nine months, with the former military associate, Germany. Following Finland's defeat, the terms confirmed by the Treaty of Paris were harsh. Altogether 10 per cent of the country's area had to be ceded to the Soviet Union. More than 425,000 persons from the ceded territory had to be settled. In 1948 Finland signed the Treaty of Friendship, Co-operation and Mutual Assistance with the Soviet Union. By 1955, when Finland joined the Nordic Council and became a member of the United Nations, Finland had returned to full sovereignty. The basic theme of the Finnish foreign policy, led by Presidents J. K. Paasikivi and Urho Kekkonen, was to take the Soviet Union into consideration. In 1982 Mauno Koivisto was elected President, followed by Martti Ahtisaari in 1994. In 1991 when the Soviet Union was dissolved, the Treaty of 1948 between Finland and the former Soviet Union was abolished.

Finland, with a present-day population of 5,1 million – of these six per cent Swedish speaking – has for a long time been an area of heavy out-migration. Since the United States Civil War in the 1860's, Finland has lost over 300,000 persons to North America, about the same number to Sweden since the Second World War, and since 1809 nearly 200,000 to Russia and elsewhere. The total net outflow of population thus amounts to around 800,000. Perhaps no more than 2,000 of these ended up on the remote shores of New Zealand – a small but none the less significant number,

illustrating the distances Finns were prepared to venture to establish a new life in a foreign land. It is this very group that I focus on in my study.

4. Former Research

European immigration to New Zealand has been minor compared with that of North America or Australia. The proportion of non-British immigrants has also remained relatively small. BURNLEY, in PRICE's "Bibliography on Australian Immigration" (1970), stated that of all the immigrant groups in New Zealand, continental Europeans have been least studied, particularly contemporary communities. In addition to the Scandinavians, other minority group settlement, such as that of Austrians and Moravians in Canterbury, or Finns at Waiuku (South Auckland) and Little River (Canterbury) or Hungarians at Tuaterepere have been mentioned by LOCHORE (1951)² but need further examination. These late nineteenth century settlements were all small, yet descendants are still in the same rural area, possibly indicating the survival of a separate group identity. These groups need further study involving intensive field surveys and interviews and also utilization of early Aliens Registration and Naturalization Records.³ I. H. Burnley – a former New Zealander and my colleague at the Australian National University in 1969–72 – has in his Thesis some references to the Finnish settlements in New Zealand.⁴

Neither in Finland nor elsewhere is there any comprehensive study on the Finns in New Zealand, mainly due to the long distance and small numbers. In 1975 Mrs. Saara St. MARTIN, a Finnish immigrant in Auckland, a former graduate of the University of Helsinki, published an article on the adjustment of Finnish papermill workers in New Zealand.⁵ In 1981 Martti GRÖNFORS, Ph. D., University of Helsinki, distributed a questionnaire to Finns in New Zealand and wrote an article including also a historical point of view.⁶ A more comprehensive study was conducted in 1985–86 by Mrs. Sinikka PUOSI for her M.A. Thesis in Cultural Anthropology at the Johann Wolfgang Goethe University in Frankfurt am Main. In addition she has published two short articles on the topic.⁷ In my earlier studies on Scandinavians and Finns in Australia I have made references to Finns in New Zealand⁸, as the immigration and settlement patterns of these two countries have always been closely related.

It is also worth noting that there is no comprehensive study of the Danes, Swedes or Norwegians in New Zealand. Sten AMINOFF, a former Swedish Ambassador to New Zealand, has produced an account of the Swedes in New Zealand before 1940.⁹ In Denmark a book containing articles on the Danish emigration to New Zealand was published to commemorate the 150th Anniversary of New Zealand in 1990.¹⁰ On the Scandinavian immigrants who started to arrive in thousands as early as in the 1870's there are studies by J. S. LYNG (1939)¹¹ and G. C. PETERSEN (1956)¹². In addition there are two M.A. theses, both produced in the 1930's, on the Scandinavians in New Zealand.¹³

On the continental European immigration to New Zealand there have been a number of studies produced since LOCHORE's earlier mentioned account (1951). These studies cover the Yugoslavs, Poles, Jewish refugees, Irish, Scots, Greeks, Italians etc.¹⁴

5. The Aim of the Study

While studying the history of the Scandinavians and the Finns in Australia, I have since 1969 constantly collected information pertaining to the Finns in New Zealand. The aim of this study is to provide as comprehensive an account as possible of the Finns in New Zealand from the first visit of a Finn to the present times and to evaluate the Finnish contribution to the development of New Zealand.

First, the tiny Finnish emigration to faraway New Zealand will be seen as a byroad of the extensive Finnish overseas emigration, mainly to North America. But in spite of, or because of the "Tyranny of Distance", this emigration to the Southern seas has a number of unique and interesting features. Secondly, the dispersed settlement and the adjustment of the Finns in the new environment will be studied, based on a hypothesis that their occupational and socio-cultural background was a major factor assisting them to find a niche in a new and strange environment. Thirdly, the general acculturation and contribution of the Finnish settlers will be investigated, and also to some extent that of their descendants – many of them now interested in their family roots and relatives on the northern hemisphere. A Name Index of the Finnish Immigrants in New Zealand will be provided mainly for genealogical purposes. Finally, an attempt will

be made to find any general patterns or models e.g. the chain migration processes linking a locality in Finland to certain Finnish settlements in New Zealand that enhance our understanding of Finnish immigration. In general, theoretical considerations have been sadly neglected in migration studies.

6. The Major Sources

This study is based on data collected over a period of 20 years in Finland, Australia, New Zealand and other countries. This data, coupled with additional information collected during short term visits to New Zealand in 1972 and 1988, and especially while a Visiting Fellow at the Massey University, from August 1991 to February 1992, represents a fairly comprehensive set of source material, at least compared with studies on Finnish emigration to other parts of the world.

The most important sources are as follows:

1. Finnish Church Records
2. Finnish Passport Journals
3. Passenger List from Northern European Ports
4. New Zealand Naturalization Records
5. List of Aliens in New Zealand in 1917
6. List of the Finns in New Zealand, kept by the Finnish Consulate in Sydney
7. Death Registers:
 - a. by the New Zealand Registrar General
 - b. by the Finnish Ministry of Foreign Affairs via the Consulate in Sydney
8. Census and Migration Statistics in New Zealand and Finland
9. The Archival material of the New Zealand Immigration Service
10. Newspapers in Finland, New Zealand and other countries
11. Other sources:
 - a. List of Finnish Master Mariners and Mates in New Zealand
 - b. Family papers, letters, photographs etc.
12. Personal interviews
13. Photographs

Because of the variable reliability and coverage of the above mentioned sources each data set must be analyzed separately to make any conclusions or generalizations. The alphabetical Name Index of the Finns in New Zealand has been compiled from the New Zealand Naturalization, Aliens and Death Records, with auxiliary information from the Finnish passport and passenger list.

With regard to the research methods employed this study falls primarily within the field of historical demography and social history. Other disciplinary perspectives and research techniques will be used where appropriate to illustrate the story of the sporadic arrival of the Finns, their integration and contribution to the development of New Zealand's multiethnic society.

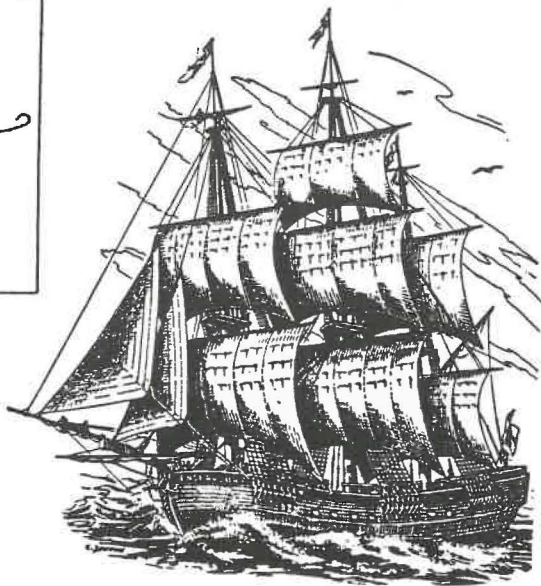
Chapter II: Herman Spöring from Turku, Finland, sailed with James Cook in New Zealand in 1769–70

The Maori and their predecessors were the first human beings to arrive in the Pacific Islands, later known as New Zealand. The Spaniards and Portuguese may have visited the remote islands in the South Pacific in the 16th and 17th centuries. However, Abel Tasman, a Dutch navigator and one of the great explorers, was the first European recorded to have sighted the southern island in December 1642 at a place now called Golden Bay. Tasman named it Murderers' Bay after natives had killed four sailors. Tasman was unwilling to further test the friendliness of the natives and sailed away without landing. There is also reason to believe that European ships had occasionally touched the coasts of the islands before 1769.¹

James Cook, the Columbus of the South Seas, and his crew were the first known Europeans to step ashore both in New Zealand and Australia. The European history of New Zealand began on October 9th, 1769, when Cook and his crew landed at the mouth of the Turanganui River, in a place called Poverty Bay by Cook. Onboard the *Endeavour* – perhaps even in the first boat with Captain Cook, Joseph Banks and other scientists – was *Herman Dietrich Spöring*, the first person from Finland to visit New Zealand.

Herman Spöring was born about 1733² in Turku (Åbo in Swedish), where his father was Professor of Medicine and a correspondent of the famous botanist Carl Linné. Herman Dietrich Spöring, Jr., studied medicine at the Academy of Turku until 1753 when he moved to Stockholm to continue his studies. Instead of qualifying as a physician he appears to have got interested in natural history. After a couple of years Spöring left Sweden and two years later settled in London eventually gaining a solid reputation in his own sphere.³ Among other things he was a draughtsman, clocksmith and an assistant to a Swedish botanist Carl Solander who also sailed with the *Endeavour*. Spöring's leanings towards natural sciences brought him into contact with Banks and made him a

Spöring's
New-Zealand
Oct. 20. 1769
Spöring's



'They sailed out into the unknown..'

The signature of H. D. Spöring in New Zealand in 1769. British Museum.

member of Cook's expedition. Banks's suite on the *Endeavour* comprised Carl Solander, Herman Spöring, Francis Parkinson, Alexander Buchan and four servants.

HMS *Endeavour* set sail from Plymouth in England on August 25th, 1768, carrying a crew of 94 men. Just over half were to return three years later. The ship crossed the Atlantic, visited Rio de Janeiro, sailed around Cape Horn, and set a course across the Pacific for Tahiti to make observations of the transit of Venus across the Sun. On April 13th, 1769, the *Endeavour* reached Otaheite (Tahiti). About a month before the observation date the natives stole and broke the quadrant, indispensable for the measurement of angles. Spöring was able to repair it with the tools he had brought with him. Cook records: "Mr Spöring ... to this gentleman we are obliged for repairing many defects we find in several of our Instruments."⁴

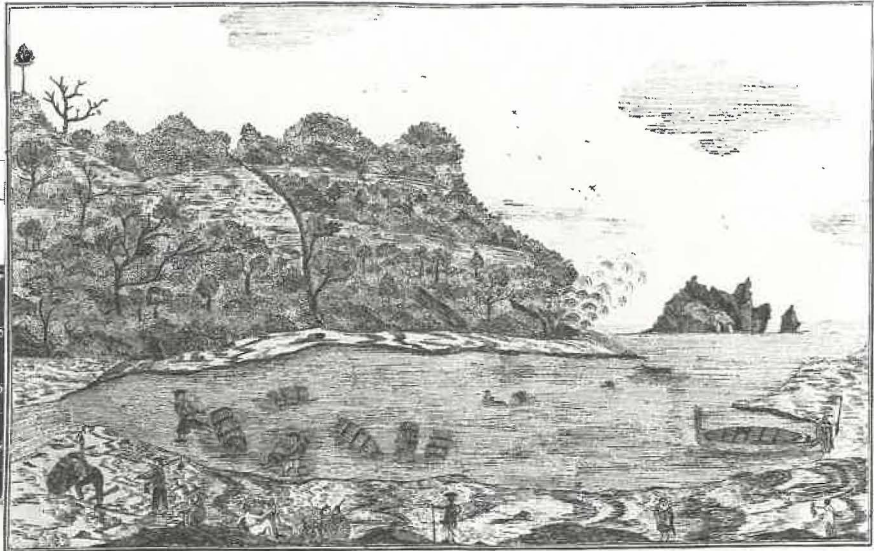


Spöring Island is located near Tolaga Bay north of Gisborne. Captain Cook's Admiralty Chart, British Museum.

In recognition of his services Spöring became the first person of the expedition to have an island named after him. This was at Tolaga Bay 65 kilometres north of Gisborne, on New Zealand's east coast.

In addition to Cook's obvious gratitude, another reason for naming the small isles after Spöring may be that while the *Endeavour* was obtaining water and other supplies for nearly a week at Tolaga Bay in October 1769, Spöring spent most of his time on the island making drawings. Banks tells an amusing story as to how it came about that Cook so honoured Spöring:

"Whilst Mr Sporing was drawing on the island he saw a strange bird fly over his head. He described it as being about the size of a kite and brown like one. Its tail, however, was of so enormous a length that he at first took it for a flock of small birds flying over him. He, who is a gravely-thinking man, and is not at all given to telling remarkable stories, says he judged the tail to be ... yards in length."⁵



A VIEW of the WATERING PLACE at TOLAGA

The Watering Place with the Spöring Isles. Earlier it was thought that Parkinson had made this drawing, but the new research considers that Spöring made the original. (COBBE 1979 and JOPPIEN & SMITH 1985). British Museum, London, and Mitchell Library, Sydney.

Banks probably intended to requestion Spöring before he filled the gap before the word "yards", but neglected to do so.⁶

The main island of the Spöring Isles is a ridge less than a kilometre in length and a few hundred meters wide rising high above sea level and separated by a narrow channel from the mainland. When Spöring visited the island in October 1769 there was a Maori village, but nowadays it is uninhabited. The native name for the island was *Pourewa* – which means "platform elevated on a post" referring to a watchtower on the stockade of a *pa* (a fortified village). This name has outlasted the one given to it by Cook⁷.

Cook describes the island as follows:

"On the 28th, we went ashore upon an island that lies to the left hand of the entrance of the bay, where we saw the largest canoe that we had yet met with

the was fifty-eight feet and half long, five broad, three feet six high ... Upon this island there was a larger house than any we had seen; but it seemed unfinished and was full of chips ... The fides of the posts were carved in a masterly style ..."⁸

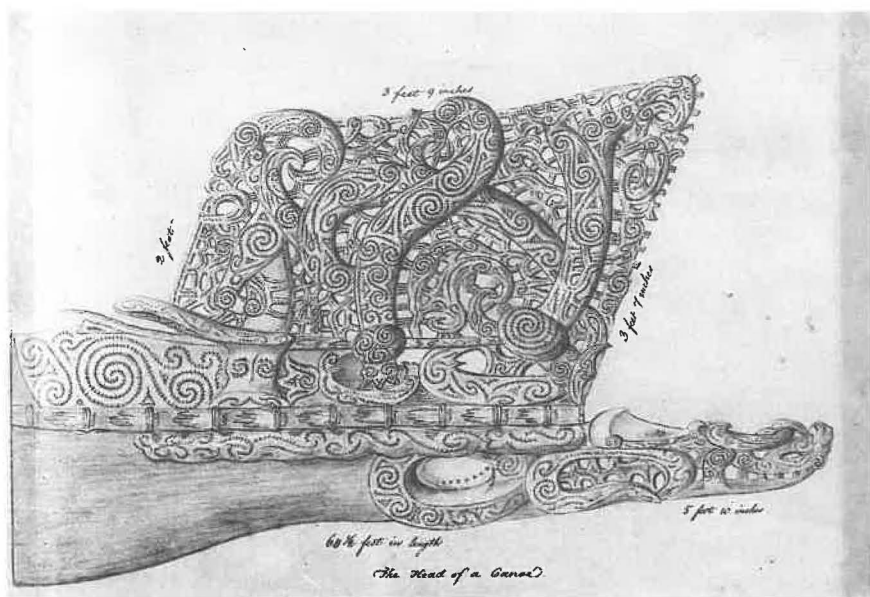
J. S. POLACK visited the island in the 1830's and found that

"Spöring's Isle forms the south headland to Uwoua; it is separated from the mainland by a narrow channel. On the top of this island, the hill is scarped, and was formerly occupied as the Pa, or a stronghold; but since the introduction of European implements of war, they have been abandoned, in a great measure, and have fallen into disrepute."⁹

When I visited the island in 1988 in search of a memorial stone to be transported to Finland for the Spöring monument, I noticed that the local population in Tolaga Bay still knew "Spöring Island" by its old name.

Anyhow, it is interesting to note that the first new island found by James Cook was named after Spöring – who was ranked third in Banks's scientific suite – after Banks himself and Solander. The latter also had a small island named after him off the coast of the southern island. But Spöring was honoured another time as well. According to Solander's biography a cave at Mercury Bay on the northern coast was named "Spöring's Grotto".¹⁰ This arch has since collapsed but a drawing by Cook, probably based on the sketch by Spöring, has survived.

The major contribution of Herman Spöring were the drawings he made of the coast of New Zealand. Alexander Buchan, the other artist of the *Endeavour*, had died in Tahiti, and Spöring took on the duties of a draughtsman. Many of Spöring's drawings are deposited in the British Library in London. Only few of them are identified by his signature. In 1954 Dr. Averil LYSAGHT and Mr. Alwyne WHEELER were the first to distinguish Spöring's drawings from those of Parkinson and Buchan, with which they had previously been confused.¹¹ The frequent misattributions were primarily due to the fact that Parkinson was widely regarded as Banks's artist while Spöring was quite unknown in that capacity. Spöring almost never signed his work, but his style is usually recognisable. The precise eye of the watchmaker was apparent in everything he drew. Spöring's drawing is of a technical kind, suitable for providing constructive details, such as the plan and elevation of a canoe.¹² The study



A copy of the head of a Maori canoe was drawn by Spöring on Spöring Island. British Museum, London.

of the coastal profiles on the voyage has revealed that Spöring drew in Tahiti and that he was responsible for most of the New Zealand coast. Here Spöring drew some delightful views and also made superb studies of Maori canoe carvings. But his most important works are, however, coastal views and fishes.¹³ Anne SALMOND in her excellent book *Two Worlds* concerning the first meetings between the Maori and Europeans in 1642–1772 emphasizes that Spöring’s coastal views were extremely accurate ... as well as ... the “artificial curiosities” and the sketches of them made during the voyage by Herman Sporing provide an invaluable sample of Maori material culture in 1769–70.¹⁴

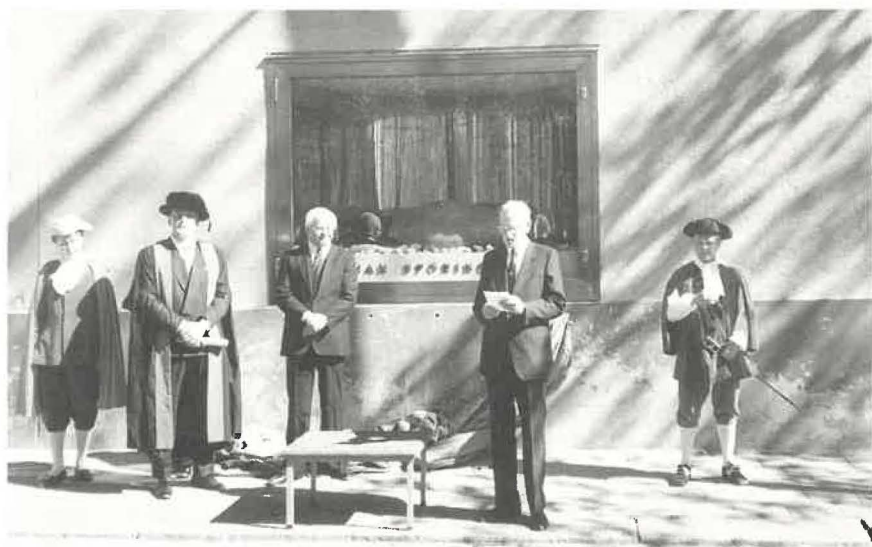
Cook chartered the North and South Islands of New Zealand and the strait – named after him – between them. He next surveyed the east coast of Australia and claimed it for Great Britain landing at Botany Bay on April 29th, 1770. On the voyage home the crew of the *Endeavour* was plagued by dysentery in Batavia (Java). The ship’s physician was one of those to

succumb and both Solander and Spöring fell ill. On the voyage home on January 25th, 1770, Cook wrote in his diary: "Departed this life Mr Spöring, A Gentleman belonging to Mr Banks's retinue."¹⁵ Spöring was buried in the Indian Ocean some 300 kilometres from the Christmas Islands. According to LYSAGHT it is possible that some drawings, journals and collections belonging to Parkinson and Spöring were stolen after their death between Batavia and the Cape of Good Hope. Otherwise it would be difficult to explain the absence of some Australasian paintings by Parkinson and some drawings by Spöring from the Endeavour River onwards.¹⁶

Cook, Banks, Solander, and Parkinson acquired a permanent place of fame. Spöring was forgotten for almost 200 years¹⁷. For example, J. S. LYNNG in his book on Scandinavians in Australia, New Zealand and the Western Pacific, published in 1939, does not mention Spöring, but only Solander in Cook's expedition.¹⁸ In Canberra Spöring is now commemorated in the street named after him. In Turku, Finland, a memorial monument, a central element being a big stone brought from Spöring Island, was unveiled in May 1990 by John McArthur, Ambassador of New Zealand and by Olavi Granö, Chancellor of the University of Turku, on the place where Spöring was born. This event was also connected with the 150th anniversary of New Zealand – as well as dedicated to the 350th anniversary of the old Academy of Turku, where Spöring started his studies.

Not only in Finland, England and Australia but also in New Zealand Spöring has received more attention, as the recent study by Anne Salmond indicates. A forty-five minutes film of Spöring has been made recently in Turku, Finland. We are also planning to raise a granit monument made by a Finnish sculptor on the shore of the island Cook named after Spöring or near it on the mainland.

Herman Dietrich Spöring, Jr., a naturalist from Finland, together with Captain James Cook on his first expedition to the farthest reaches of the globe in the South Seas now has his place in history recognized, after 200 years. These brave men opened people's eyes to completely new worlds, along with the tempting possibilities which they offered.



The Spöring monument was unveiled in 1990 in Turku, Finland, on the place where H. D. Spöring was born. The stone was brought from Spöring Island, New Zealand. SI, Turku.

Chapter III: Finns among Whalers

Some twenty years after the discovery of New Zealand by James Cook, unorganized settlement of the country began. The first European arrivals were whalers, shipwrecked sailors and escaped convicts from Australia, followed by traders and missionaries. At first settlement was slow, mainly because of the hostility of the Maori. In 1800 the European population was about 50 persons, rising to 200 in 1815 and perhaps up to 2,000 in 1839. Attempts at organized immigration from Britain had more or less failed. In the 1840's the New Zealand Company brought out some 12,000 immigrants.¹ The Census of European population in 1851 gave the population as 26,707.

Where there any Finns among these pioneer settlers?

If so, they were most likely merchants or seamen who had arrived onboard a whaling ship.

From the 1780's mainly whalers and sealers were calling at various points around the New Zealand coast to replenish food and water supplies and for ship repairs. The Bay of Islands emerged as the main port of call for whalers who also often loaded kauri logs for sale in Canton, China.² Towards the end of the 18th century it was noticed by voyagers, and by convict ships on the Australian run, that the bays and estuaries of Australia, Tasmania, and New Zealand were full of Right Whales. It became the custom to equip convict ships with whaling gear. Thus began "bay" whaling in the Antipodes, a practice that proved to be immensely profitable. However, soon the business became very crowded.³

Whaling was already quite well established in Europe and America, before New Zealand and Polynesia became part of the global industry late in the 18th century. Because of its exploitative nature the whaling industry had sought to expand. Whaling and sealing in New Zealand waters attracted ships and men from all over the world.⁴ Deep sea whaling began in 1791-92 when the whaler *William and Ann* tested the prospects of the New Zealand coast. The Americans were present in New Zealand waters from 1797 and soon outpaced their colonial and British rivals. In 1839

there were eighty American whale ships in New Zealand.⁵ In the 1830's and 1840's the international whaling industry was expanding while British industry was declining. Whaleships from Canada, Germany, Denmark, and Portugal turned up in New Zealand to compete with the British, Australian, French and American ships. The vast expansion of industry, population, and domestic expectations required oil for lubrication and lighting.⁶ Consequently, because of the rapid exploitation, the southern Right Whales began to grow scarce in the 1820's, and by 1850 bay whaling ceased altogether.⁷ According to Harry MORTON whaling in New Zealand waters spanned roughly two generations, from 1792 until the late 1850's.⁸

Whale ships – as well as merchantships – in the New Zealand waters often had quite international crews. British and American crews became polyglot, as international recruitment became even more marked in American ships after about 1830. International recruitment of whalers was necessary because of the high rate of desertion and because of an almost constant need for replacements, even in most unlikely ports. Recruitment expanded because many foreigners would work with fewer demands for either higher pay or better treatment than native British or American sailors.⁹ A whaleship's crew was usually as mixed a collection of human beings as could be found in the small space which was their home. According to DAKIN, Yankee owners, particularly from 1830 to 1860, deliberately sought crews mixed in nationality as well as in colour. There was less chance of mutual agreement and mutiny with such a heterogeneous crowd.¹⁰ Conditions in American whaling and sealing ships were so dreadful, life was so hard and dangerous and the food so rotten that it was a common thing for the sailors to desert whenever they had a chance. On a South Sea island – it is related – a deserter with a brace of pistols or a musket could set himself up as a chief.¹¹

For centuries Finnish seamen have sailed under foreign flags, notably Dutch and British. Especially on British and American ships the boatswain or the ship's carpenter was often a Finn. In the 19th century, descriptions of life on board often included the figure of someone known as the "Russian Finn". Many tales surrounded this taciturn, slow, but powerful and reliable figure, it was believed for instance that the Finn had supernatural powers and could tame the wind.¹²

Harry MORTON in his book on sailors and sailing ships in the Pacific

relates that the most terrible of men amongst sailors was a Russian Finn. Finns were believed to control the winds and so could be blamed for either plenitude or death, as circumstances warranted. Some sailors went even further: "the sail-maker was a Finn, and he could do anything he was a mind to."¹³

Herman Melville, the author of *Moby Dick*, published in 1851, describes in his earlier book *Omoo* (1847) a Finnish deep sea sailor – an old yellow-haired sea-prophet – as follows:

"... among ignorant seamen, Finlanders, or Finns, as they are more commonly called, are regarded with peculiar superstition. For some reason or other, which I never could get at, they are supposed to possess the gift of second sight, and the power to wreak supernatural vengeance upon those who offend them. On this account they have great influence among sailors, and two or three with whom I have sailed at different times, were persons well calculated to produce this sort of impression, at least upon minds disposed to believe in such things."¹⁴

MELVILLE, who had experiences as a seaman in the first half of the 1840's, relates in *Moby Dick* that by the middle of the 19th century the United States outnumbered all the rest of the banded whalers of the world; sail a navy of upwards of seven hundred vessels; manned by eighteen thousand men.¹⁵ This information is probably quite accurate. In 1840 it was estimated that the Americans employed in the southern fisheries 600–700 vessels with more than 18,000 seamen.¹⁶ According to DAKIN the American whaling fleet of 1844 consisted of 675 vessels, and most of these were in the Pacific Ocean. Sixteen thousand men were required to man the ships. By 1846 the American whaling fleet had become a navy of over 700 vessels, and it was almost entirely engaged on the Pacific. It was at the very height of this phase that the story of *Moby Dick* was published.¹⁷

It is impossible to imagine that among the 16–18,000 whalers in 700 American vessels in the 1840's there would not have been any Finns. The total number of Finnish seamen on the intercontinental routes in the first half of the 19th century amounted to several thousands. It is estimated that in 1860 about 11,000 Finnish seamen were sailing on Finnish ships, and maybe as great a number under foreign flags.¹⁸

Many sailors in the Pacific deserted their ships to go ashore to be employed where the pay was no worse, the work little harder, and the



There were Finnish seamen among the whalers on the New Zealand waters catching the big spermacetti whale in the 19th century. Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.

living conditions much better. Desertion in the Pacific was caused by negative conditions onboard, especially the danger and harsh discipline, and by the positive attractions of women, liquor, and higher wages ashore. Many of the whalers stayed on in New Zealand as coopers, carpenters, farmers, and boatmen long after whaling itself was no longer profitable.¹⁹

The most important contribution of the sealers and whalers was the exploration of the coasts and the opening up of harbours for later settlements. Especially they were pioneers in relationships with the Maori. In New Zealand before 1840 it was the whaling ships, and to a lesser degree the trading ships, which provided forty years of contact before land purchases became an issue. In particular the shore whalemens, who married Maori, might become Maoris themselves. These *Pakeha-Maori* were persons who either from fear of their own people or for love of someone among the Maori, had gone to live with and in the manner of the Maori. The "marriages" were individually beneficial, but they were also – according to MORTON – a positive and moderate pressure for cultural change.²⁰

A good example of an influential and colourful *Pakeha-Maori* is a

Danish-born whaler and pioneer settler Philip Tapsell, originally Hans Homman Felk, born in Copenhagen in 1777. After a long career in Pacific whaling, Tapsell settled as a trader at Maketu near Tauranga in 1828 and had a significant impact on the surrounding Maori tribes. Tapsell, from the ship *Minerva*, was perhaps the first whaling officer to marry a highborn Maori girl shipping her slaves as a crew. The union was not a success, but Tapsell married twice more, each time a Maori girl. He died in 1873 at the age of 94 as a patriarch of a very large family of descendants.²¹

It is difficult to ascertain whether there were any Finnish-born pioneer settlers – although of a lesser calibre than Tapsell – in New Zealand in the first half of the 19th century. At least it is obvious that Finnish sailors from whaleships and merchantships visited New Zealand from the very beginning. The favourite rendezvous was the Bay of Islands; in 1836, for example, a total of 186 whaling ships visited there, 98 of these Americans, made post.²²

In my earlier study on the Finns in Australia I came to the conclusion that about half a dozen Finns had settled permanently in Australia before the goldrush of 1851.²³ But I also found that a Finnish seaman, named Peter Hagerstein from Helsinki, deserted in Tahiti in 1793 from the *Daedalus*, the cargoship of the famous explorer George Vancouver. Hagerstein was the first European to stay permanently in Tahiti, as previous deserters were caught by the assistance of the Natives. The Finn married a widow of a seaman involved in the mutiny of the ship *Bounty*, soon becoming the general of the army of King Pomare. His second wife, *Tano Mano*, was related to the royal family, and obviously Hagerstein became a happy *Pakeha-Tahitian* dying in 1813.²⁴

So my conclusion is that there were at least one or two Finnish sailors living in New Zealand before 1851. This conclusion is supported also by the information on the first naturalizations and deaths of persons born in Finland. Unfortunately the dates of arrival are not given in the very first cases. However, these first settlers from Finland came long before the period of documented naturalizations in the second half of the 19th century. The first person from Finland was naturalized in 1878 and the first documented arrival of a naturalized person took place in 1854. Usually Finns went to sea as young boys, and among the early Finns in New Zealand there were sailor-pioneers who had probably arrived in New Zealand before the first Census of 1851.

There were Finnish seamen not only in American whalers but also in Russian ships visiting New Zealand. The Russian Imperial Navy set out from Kronstadt, the Russian naval base close to the Finnish border. The visit of the *Vostok* and the *Mirnyi* led by a Baltic German F. G. Bellinghausen in 1820 was accidental. The Russian Antarctic expedition set out from Sydney, but a storm drove the ships into Cook Strait. The Russians spent a few active and productive days reprovisioning and watering in Queen Charlotte Sound. As BARRETT's studies indicate, the Russian presence on the New Zealand waters in the 19th century was quite common and was regarded as the main external threat.²⁵

Also my fieldwork among the descendants of early Finnish settlers in New Zealand indicated that many Finns had arrived to New Zealand as whalers. If the person was not naturalized later, it is difficult to find out the date of arrival, or this information may be missing even in the naturalization records.

Andrew Wanhalla, who according to the family tradition had arrived in New Zealand as a whaler, was never naturalized. Consequently there is no information about his place of origin in Finland nor about the date of his arrival. Through an enquiry in a genealogical periodical in Finland it was found that Antti Vanhala came from the Island of Hailuoto near Oulu. The family history in Finland relates that he had walked to northern Norway and taken a whaler to the South Seas. According to the New Zealand family history Andrew Wanhalla had at the age of 18 arrived in Banks Peninsula on a whaler, obviously in the 1870's. First he worked at Little River, Banks Peninsula, one of the earliest Finnish settlements in New Zealand. In 1890 he married Henrietta Mehlhopt, a daughter of a German immigrant, in the Anglican Church in Tai Tapu. Two daughters were born but the marriage did not hold, and in 1903 Wanhalla moved to Clarence Bridge Marlborough, where he stayed until his death in 1923.²⁶

Another example is *Francis Victor Urwin* from Houhora, North Island. According to the family history Francis Urwin was shanghaied on the Barbados Coast of North America, obviously in San Francisco, to an American whaling ship bound for the South Sea. Young Francis and his mate, a Delaware Indian, deserted the ship in Hawkes Bay, on the East coast of the North Island of New Zealand. A local Maori family – the Urwins – hid the two men while the search was going on. Obviously the Finn lived for a while with this family, as he adopted the name Urwin.²⁷



Andrew Wanhalla, b. in 1852 in Finland at Hailuoto, d. in 1923, holding his granddaughter Peggy. Standing his daughter Mary Adelaide (1894–1970) and her husband Samuel Hamilton. SI (Siirtolaisuusinstituutti, Institute of Migration), Turku.

The Urwin family history relates that meanwhile at the whaling station in Hawkes Bay Francis Victor and his two companions heard of the discovery of gold at Thames in the Coromandel. They accordingly left the whaling station and hid in the bush. But the two companions were captured by Maori bounty hunters who were at the time paid by the shipping companies to return runaway sailors to their ships for punishment. Such sailors were tied by their wrists and ankles to a pole and carried by two warriors. But Francis Victor managed to remain concealed and was subsequently befriended by white settlers who passed him from one to another at night. About three weeks later he reached Thames where he later met his future wife Emma Brown at the Shakespeare Hotel. They got married in 1876 and moved to Sydney, where they ran a sailors' boarding house. Francis Victor also held the sailors' pay in safekeeping and found places on ships seeking for crew. The Urwins had seven children: Alice, b. 1879, Albert, b. 1881, Francis Victor, b. 1882, Henriette

Francis Victor Urwin, originally Frans Viktor Lundgren, came to New Zealand in a whaling ship in 1867. In the picture from 1914 or 1915 Francis Victor, Emma (née Brown), Ida May and grandson Wynn. SI, Turku.



Ida May Gaelic, born Dec. 24. 1897, the youngest daughter of Frans Victor Urwin, pictured in 1992 in Auckland. SI, Turku.



Louisa, b. 1888, William Edward, b. 1889, killed in the First World War in 1916, Frederick Charles, b. 1895, killed in the First World War in 1917, and Ida May, b. 1897. The family later returned to New Zealand where they lived in the Helensville-Kaipara area for some time before moving to the Houhora-Northland area. At Houhora Francis Victor became a farmer and butcher, and he was naturalized in 1900. The whaler Finn died in Auckland in 1933.²⁸

The naturalization records reveal that Francis Victor Urwin was born on January 20th, 1844, in Uusikaupunki and arrived in New Zealand in 1867. According to the family, his original name was Frans Viktor Lundgren, but the church records of Uusikaupunki – as well as of Nauvo or Nagu – do not have any Lundgren born on or about that date. In January, 1992, I met Mrs. Ida May Gaelic in Auckland, the youngest daughter of Francis Victor Urwin, but she did not have much information about the origin of her Finnish father.²⁹ In Finland I have made enquiries in newspapers and genealogical journals, without any success.

Chapter IV: Golddiggers and Other Early Finns

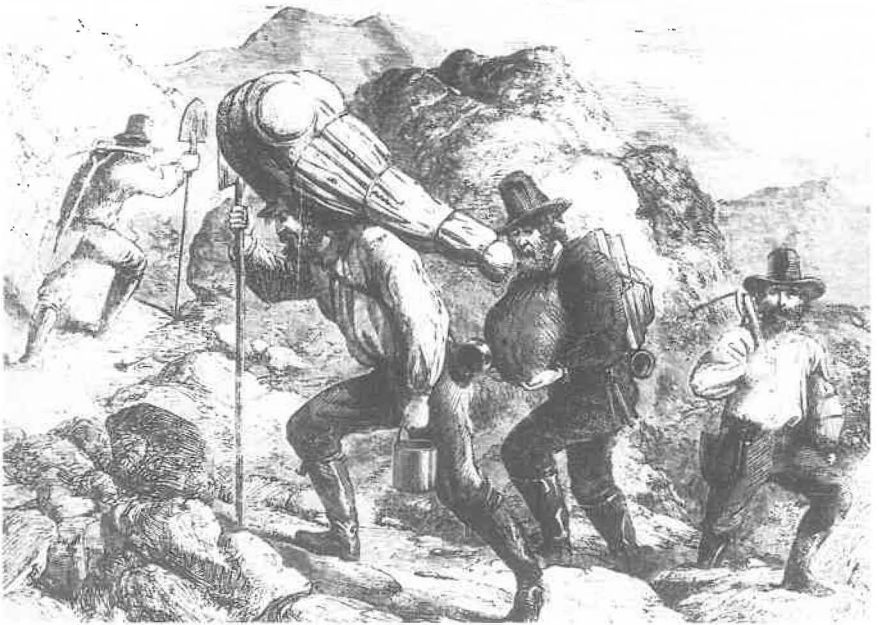
The goldrushes, especially to the South Island in the 1860's, produced one of the most spectacular changes in the population patterns of New Zealand. Until the goldrushes most settlers lived in the North Island. While the history of the North Island was one of deteriorating race relations, the South Island story is of Europeans, their sheep and gold. In the goldrushes California, and the "forty-niners", set a pattern which was repeated, with local variations, in Australia and New Zealand.¹

From the beginning of European colonization the existence of gold in New Zealand was known. Small quantities had been found by whalers in 1842 in the Coromandel district in the North Island, as well as some minor discoveries near Nelson in the South Island. Early prospectors were interested only in alluvial gold, i.e. a deposit formed by material washed down or transported by water. In 1852 some Auckland citizens offered 100 pounds for a gold discovery. Soon Charles Ring, newly arrived from California, claimed the reward.² But only a small rush followed. The Victorian goldfields in Australia had just started an era of splendid expansion. The next important discovery was made in Nelson in 1856, resulting in more interest among miners.



The harbour of Hokitika where the earliest goldminers arrived since the beginning of the 1860's. West Coast Historical Museum, Hokitika.

Then in May, 1861, Gabriel Read, a miner with Californian and Australian experience, discovered gold in Otago in the South Island³, and within two months there were 2,000 miners in Gabriel's Gully. Miners, chiefly from the decaying goldfields of Victoria, Australia, poured into the province, often at the rate of 1,000 per day⁴. By the end of 1861 Otago's population rose from under 13,000 to over 30,000, more than half of the arrivals coming from Australia. Then followed the Dunstan and Wakatipu rushes, and in 1863 the Taieri rush. Miners rushed to the gold diggings, and no fewer than 45,730 people arrived in New Zealand in 1863, most of them miners from the declining goldfields of Victoria, as well as several thousand from China.⁵ The greatest yield of gold was won in 1863 when the mining wardens estimated the total population on the goldfields was



"Gold diggers out prospecting in New Zealand" from the "Illustrated London News" in 1863. Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.

24,000 and the total population of Otago at 60,000.⁶ However, soon the peak of the rush faded and the Otago goldfields lost much of their glitter.

After the decline of the Otago and Collingwood fields many miners moved in 1864 to Marlborough, and rich gold deposits were found in the Wakamarina River near Havelock. Some 6,000 miners were working around Canvastown. However, the gold in surface pockets was soon worked out and many miners were attracted by the new fields on the West Coast. By 1865 there were 1,500 miners on Hokitika fields, and many more were arriving from the Australian goldfields. By September 1865 there were over 16,000 miners, mainly spread between Hokitika and the Grey River. There were about 20,000 arrivals in 1865–67. The foreign-born (Non-British) element seem to have been about 10 per cent. On the streets of Hokitika German, French, Italian, Greek and several other tongues were to be heard.⁷ Hokitika became the capital of the West Coast goldfields, the sixth town in the Colony, and in shipping and immigration one of the chief ports.⁸ Rushes to Okarito, Bruce Bay, Brighton etc. followed. Westland was the only part of New Zealand where the gold miners really formed the first spearhead of the European settlement. Early in 1864 the West Coast had been virtually unoccupied. Two years later there was a restless population of tens of thousands (probably 40–50,000) spread along 290 kilometres of goldbearing country. Gold made Westland a living community out of the virgin bush.⁹ However, by 1868 the West Coast gold rush was already showing signs of steadying as the alluvial deposits were exhausted. After the West Coast goldrush the transition from gold to coal was gradual, including the development of the transport system, especially the railway.¹⁰

In 1867–68 the alluvial prospectors began to move from the West Coast to Thames in the Coromandel Peninsula in the North Island, or drifted away to Gympie in Australia. However, there was little alluvial gold. Some miners joined to form companies to work on quartz claims, but after 1869 the numbers of returns fell rapidly and many who had rushed to the field were forced to become labourers in the employ of the large companies, a development very similar to those on the Victorian goldfields. The Thames, Hauraki and Ohinemuri goldfields were the scene of the last major goldrushes in New Zealand. After the boom the surviving companies settled down for a long period of steady production.¹¹

New Zealand experienced the stimulus of gold in the first hand in the



Goldmining at Kumara, 24 kilometres south of Greymouth in the Province of Westland. West Coast Historical Museum, Hokitika.

early 1860's. For some years gold was New Zealand's major export. In this period New Zealand experienced her most rapid population growth; the total population, exclusive of Maori, rose from some 98,000 in 1861 to 172,000 in 1864. Mainly because of the gold discoveries the excess of arrivals over departures between 1860–69 was 116,292 people. According to the Census of 1867 New Zealand's population, excluding Maori and Imperial military personnel with their families, was 218,668 people. A result of the gold boom was that the South Island achieved a lead in population which it maintained for 40 years. The influence of the goldrushes was stronger locally, especially in the isolated districts of Westland, Thames and Coromandel. New Zealand goldfields were soon brought under legal control; there was no Californian anarchy or Victorian revolt.¹²

Most countries of Continental Europe were represented on the goldfields, although names like German Gully and Scandinavian Hill in

the Westland¹³ may give rise to an exaggerated view of numbers of non-British people in the goldrush community. The Phoenix mine at Bullendale on the Shotover River was discovered in 1863 by three prospectors – Southberg, Olsen and Duncan, who formed the Scandinavian Company.¹⁴ It has been estimated that on the goldfields the foreign groups formed a proportionately larger group than generally in New Zealand, e.g. in Westland, Germany and Austria 4.1 per cent of the total, the Scandinavian countries 3.5 per cent etc., according to the information from Westland hospital reports 1867–75.¹⁵ However, this material is not very comprehensive and representative. Obviously foreigners, especially if they did not have the command of the English language, were not very eager to seek medical services.

In his book AMINOFF estimates that there were 4,000–5,000 Scandinavians in the South Island during the peak period in 1863–66, the majority of them being Swedes. Most of the Scandinavians left New Zealand after 1867. Of the Swedes about 30 per cent remained in the country. For a miner, New Zealand was a better place to settle in than Australia, particularly because of the climate.¹⁶ This may be an overestimate as in the 1867 Census there were 2,283 Germans, 553 Frenchmen and 2,196 other Europeans in New Zealand. It is also difficult to believe that the majority of the goldrush Scandinavians were Swedes. On the Australian goldfields nearly half of the Scandinavians were Danes, especially after the Schleswig-Holstein Wars in 1848 and 1863. According to the Australian Naturalization Records in 1851–69 there were nearly twice as many Danes as Swedes. In the Victorian Census of 1871, of 2,254 Scandinavians counted in the Colony, 45 per cent were Danes, 37.5 per cent Swedes and 17.5 per cent Norwegians.¹⁷ The great proportion of the Scandinavian goldminers in New Zealand came from Victoria. Their composition in New Zealand was about the same – the proportion of Danes probably slightly smaller, as the Danes more often than Swedes and Norwegians settled on the land and remained in Australia.

According to LYNG (1939) the number of Scandinavians in New Zealand in 1867 may be estimated at about 500.¹⁸ This may be an underestimate, especially as the early colonial censuses in New Zealand (or elsewhere) were not very accurate, at least as far as the mobile gold digger population was concerned.

Consequently it is difficult to ascertain the number of the Finns on New

Zealand goldfields. As stated earlier, Californian, Australian and New Zealand goldfields were part of the same process, i.e. international gold rushes. In my previous study I came to the conclusion that there were about 200 Finnish goldminers, and altogether 400 Finns in Australia between 1851–69.¹⁹ Many of the Finnish argonauts continued their search for gold in New Zealand. An example of these men is Isaac Mattson, born in 1824 in Turku. In 1852 he arrived from San Francisco via Sydney to the Ballarat goldfields in Australia, where he lived for seven years. After that he moved to New Zealand for a year and a half, and then went to Tasmania, where he stayed for 30 years. The rest of his life he spent in Melbourne where he was naturalized in 1911.²⁰ Quite a number of Finnish seamen also deserted their ships in New Zealand ports or came directly from Finland or America. If one estimates that every fourth Finnish goldminer in Australia tried his luck on the other side of the Tasman Sea, there were possibly a few dozen Finns in New Zealand in the 1860's, some already arriving in the 1850's. One of these was Gustaf Berg (Perttula), born in Tornio in 1833, jumped off the ship in Melbourne in the early 1850's and went to the Victorian goldfields. In 1857 Berg arrived in New Zealand going to the Collingwood goldfields.²¹

In the Census of 1871 there were 256,393 people, excluding Maori, in New Zealand. Among these were enumerated 109 persons born in Russia or inside the Russian territory. Only 13 of these were females. In addition to the Finns among the Russians in New Zealand – as well as in Australia – there were quite a number of Russian Jews and Poles. But obviously half of the "Russians" could have been seafaring and gold-seeking Finns. Estimating also that quite a number of Finnish goldminers – among other nationalities – had left New Zealand before 1871, the number of Finns arriving in New Zealand between 1851 and 1871 could have been well over one hundred. Presumably only a few dozens settled permanently in New Zealand. It should be remembered, however, that by 1871 many goldminers had already left New Zealand for other destinations. It is also interesting to note that in the Census of 1871 most of the "Russians" lived

→

The application of a Finnish goldminer Herman Isaacson to become a British citizen in New Zealand in 1882. Herman Isaacson was born in Turku in 1835 and arrived in New Zealand by 1861. When naturalized in 1883 he lived at No Town, Red Jack's County of Grey. New Zealand Naturalization Records, National Archives, Wellington.

8/1009

To His Excellency the Governor of New Zealand.

Name. Herman Isaacson
 Residence. Red Sacks County of Grey in the Colony of New Zealand,
 Occupancy. Miner made in conformity with the provisions of
 "The Aliens Act, 1880."

Humbly sheweth,—

- Name. 1. That the name of your Memorialist is Herman Isaacson
 Age. 2. That your Memorialist is 48 years of age.
 3. That your Memorialist was born at Bo Finland
 4. That your Memorialist resides in Red Sacks County of Grey
 5. That your Memorialist has been residing in the Colony of New Zealand for
22 years, and is desirous of settling therein.

And your Memorialist prays that Letters of Naturalization may be granted to him.

Signature of Memorialist: Herman Isaacson

DECLARATION OF VERIFICATION.

I, Herman Isaacson, the above-named memorialist, do solemnly and sincerely declare that all the above-stated facts relating to myself are true as I have stated them; and I make this solemn declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true, and by virtue of an Act of the General Assembly of New Zealand intituled "The Justices of the Peace Act, 1886."

Declared at Red Sacks
 this 6 day of December 1882
 before me—Albion Ford



I, the undersigned Henry Blatnough Stratford do hereby certify that I know Herman Isaacson the Memorialist named in the foregoing Memorial, and that, to the best of my knowledge and belief, he is a person of good repute.

Place Miner
 Date 6. Dec. 1882 Albion Ford



in the goldrush areas: 35 in Otago, 22 in Canterbury, 14 in Nelson and 10 in Westland. The important seaports Auckland and Wellington had 12 and 11 "Russians" respectively.

For posterity there are not many records of the small and mobile group of goldminers from Finland. The Naturalization Records are a reliable source, taking into account that many of the early settlers never applied for British citizenship.

Assuming that only every third early Finnish settler in New Zealand later got naturalized, there were about 50 Finnish residents in New Zealand before the 1871 Census.

The first Finns to New Zealand originated mainly from the coastal and Western parts of Finland; the traditional seafaring areas. In regard to the occupations, given at the time of naturalization – usually decades after the



A Kauri Gum washing machine on the old Urwin farm at Houhora in the 1930's. SI, Turku.

Table I: *Naturalized Finns, arrived in 1854–70*

	Birth- year	Arr. year	Birth- place	Occup.	Res.	Nat.
WEST, Erik	1823	1854	Vaasa	Carpenter	St. Albans	1883
JOHNSON, John	1835	1855	Vaasa	Farm Lab.	Dargaville	1908
ISAACSON, Herman	1835	1860	Turku	Miner	Notown, Jack's County	1883
ANDERSON, Peter	1828	1862	Finland	Gumdigger	Waitemata	1901
FAHLER, John A.	1830	1862	Finland	Accountant	Reefton	1899
BROWN, Augustus	1833	1864	Åland	Carpenter	Alexandra S.	1906
MATHEWS, John	1826	1864	Kristiina	Farmer	Reefton	1901
BECKMAN, William	1833	1865	Loviisa	Miner	Dunganville Clifton Terr.	1887
KOSKELA, John	1841	1865	Oulu	Labourer	Lyttelton	1878
MEMME, Wilhelm	1820	1867	Oulu	Scrubfeller	Masterton	1886
URWIN, Francis	1844	1867	Uusik.	Farmer	Houhora	1900
HAGGMAN, Isaac	1838	1867	Finland	Miner	Rimu	1887
REYNOLDS, John	1823	1868	Rauma	Gumdigger	Kumeu Flat	1901
WILLIAMS, Charles	1845	1868	Vaasa	Labourer	Oamaru	1923
GOLDSTREAM, John	1841	1870	Finland	Carpenter	Palmerst.N.	1893
ARMSTRONG, Julius	1851	1870	Finland	Miner	Hokitika	1891

New Zealand Naturalization Records, National Archives, Wellington.

arrival – it must be born in mind that the Finns usually started as seamen on New Zealand coastal waters and/or tried their luck on the goldfields. This is also confirmed by many family histories. Quite a number of the Finns continued to search for gold, mainly in the South Island, as well as on gumdigging fields, north of Auckland in the North Island. About half of the Finns spent the rest of their lives at Hokitika, Reefton, Alexandra and other goldfields – as well as on gumdigging areas. This work was closely related to mining. Kauri gum was collected from many parts of the Auckland Province, from North Cape to Rangiriri. An experienced man could earn from 10 pounds to 15 pounds weekly and many put in a lot of hard work. Kauri gum was an important export from the Auckland area 1864–1900, after which it was exceeded by gold. During 1885 nearly 7,000 men were digging gum either full or part-time.²² The Register of Deaths in New Zealand reveals a number of early Finns with the occupation “miner”.²³ Unfortunately the year of arrival is not given and must be found from other sources. Even in the Aliens Register of 1917 some old Finnish miners, e. g. Isaac Haggman – now Hofman and still living in Hokitika – could be found.²⁴

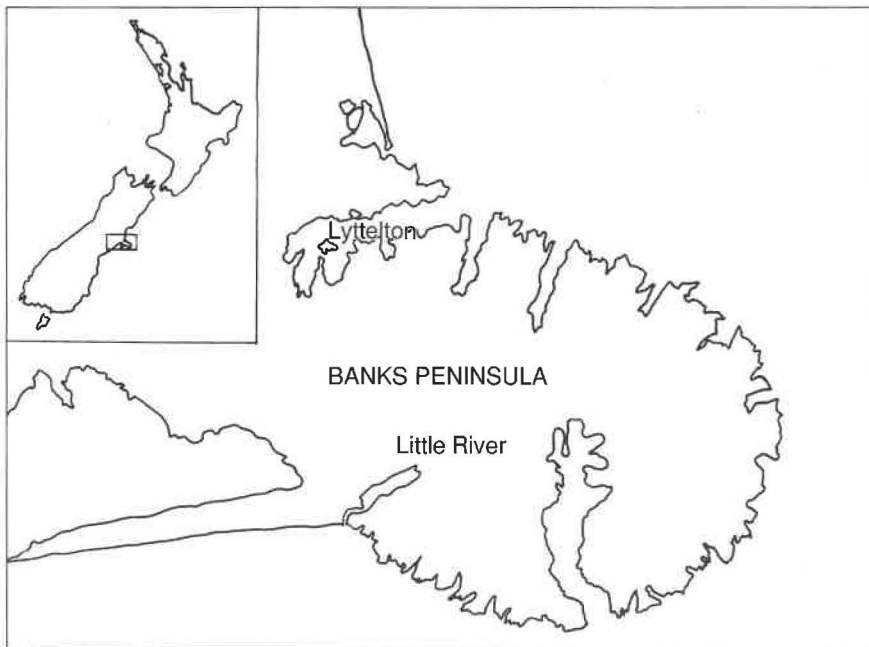
Some Finns became wharf labourers like John Koskela in Lyttelton. He was the first Finn to be naturalized in New Zealand in 1878. According to a family history he continued to work at the port until his death. His descendants – still Koskela – are employed by the Port of Lyttelton.²⁵ The Koskela family will be discussed in the next chapter.

There were also Mates and Master Mariners among Finnish sailors. *John Graenleaf*, born in Rauma in 1832, received his Master Mariner’s Certificate in 1876, but had obviously sailed for a long time on New Zealand waters. *Carl Forsberg*, who had arrived in 1861, received his Master’s Certificate also in 1876.²⁶ These men may also have spent some time on the New Zealand goldfields as well.

Among the Finnish goldminers and sailors in New Zealand before 1871 there were men who settled on the land and became farmers, especially if they married a New Zealand girl, of European or Maori origin. As in North America and Australia they were pioneer settlers, who often later invited their relatives and friends to join them. A seaman, a fisherman, a wharf labourer, or even a mobile miner, could start a migration chain – or at least a living family contact – continuing up to the present day.

Chapter V: South Island – the Gateway to the Colony

After the explorers, seamen, whalers and early gold-diggers had discovered New Zealand, the farthest corner of the world, some of them settled permanently in the Colony sometimes sending letters of invitation to their compatriots to join them. Some returned to Finland, either to leave for New Zealand again or to spread in their home district knowledge about the islands faraway and about the prospects of success over there.



Banks Peninsula – the most important area of arrival for the Finns.

The first Finnish settlements in New Zealand were closely connected with seafaring and the seaports. Seamen, who had got tired of the harsh life on the high seas, were paid off, or they deserted their ships. They found work in nearby rural areas or started to work as watersiders in quickly developing ports. Together with Auckland the major gateway for the early Finns to New Zealand was Banks Peninsula, and especially the port of Lyttelton, on the east coast of the South Island.

Captain James Cook – and Herman Spöring from Turku with him – visited the “island”, which Cook named after Mr. Banks, in February 1770. At that time the peninsula was virtually an island cut off from the main land by swamps and lagoons. Sealers and flax traders paid occasional visits to the peninsula in the two decades of the 19th century. However, it was the whalers who from 1836 were the first Europeans to make more than passing contact with Banks Peninsula and its Maori population. The most prosperous years for whaling were from 1839 to 1843 when many whaling stations were established. The first Europeans were whalers and *Pakeha Maoris* – white men living with the Natives. However, by 1845 the whale population had thinned out, but whaling continued sporadically until 1876.

In 1840 a handful of French and German colonists arrived at Akaroa. The annexation of New Zealand to the British Empire took place in 1840 and in the following year it was proclaimed to be a separate Crown Colony. New Zealand sheep grazing was an offshoot of an established Australian economy, and the first squatters were Wellington colonists with capital. In 1851 some of them, wearied by prolonged drought, sailed for Lyttelton with sheep for sale, intending also to speculate some land sales. The first Canterbury settlers landed in December, 1850, and the scheme by the New Zealand Company brought out some 3,300 “pilgrims” to the plains in 1850–52. While by the end of the 1850’s in the North Island the conflict over land with the Maori escalated again, the South quickly became an area of flourishing development outside effective Maori resistance.¹

→

Erik West, born in 1823 in Vaasa, came to New Zealand in 1854. He was the first documented Finn to arrive in New Zealand. N. Z. Nat. Rec., N. A., Wellington.

To His Excellency the Governor of New Zealand.

Name. THE Memorial of Erik West
Residence. of Palcaeman Road H. Albans in the Colony of New Zealand,
Occupation. Carpenter made in conformity with the provisions
of "The Aliens Act, 1880."

Humbly sheweth,—

- Name. 1. That the name of your Memorialist is Erik West
Age. 2. That your Memorialist is 60 years of age.
Birthplace. 3. That your Memorialist was born at Russian Finland
Evidence. 4. That your Memorialist resides in Palcaeman Road H. Albans
Length of residence, I desire to settle. 5. That your Memorialist has been residing in the Colony in New Zealand for
18 years, and is desirous of settling therein.

And your Memorialist prays that Letters of Naturalisation may be granted to him.

Signature of Memorialist: Erik West

DECLARATION OF VERIFICATION.

I, Erik West, the above-named memorialist, do solemnly and sincerely declare that all the above-stated facts relating to myself are true as I have stated them; and I make this solemn declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true, and by virtue of an Act of the General Assembly of New Zealand intituled "The Justices of the Peace Act, 1880." 1880.

Declared at Christchurch,
this 10 day of November 1883,
before me—

J. M. ...



Erik West

I, the undersigned John Lewis ...
do hereby certify that I know Mr Erik West
the Memorialist named in the foregoing Memorial, and that, to the best of my knowledge and belief, he is a person of good repnte. John Lewis ...

Place: Palcaeman Road H. Albans
24 Park Terrace
Christchurch E. R. Blackiston J.P.
Date: Nov. 10 1883



On Banks Peninsula, in addition to grazing, boat building, fishing and timber processing began as by-products of the whaling era. Many ex-whalers and sailors turned to bush felling and pit sawing. From 1854 onwards timber became king. The quickly growing milling industry created some prosperous entrepreneurs. The work in timber felling and at the mills was hard and dangerous. However, many workers soon earned enough to set themselves up on small farms. The Peninsula's population was made up of ex-whalers, remittance men, runaway sailors and former gold-diggers, as well as of new immigrants from all over the world. The clearance of the bush also accelerated dairy farming, which had started in Akaroa in 1839. Grain and seed industries also became important industries. Cocksfoot growing became a major industry in its own right. Akaroa cocksfoot was considered the best in the world, and in its heyday, 1880–1930, cocksfoot growing was enormously lucrative. In 1904–05 Banks Peninsula produced 83 per cent of all the cocksfoot seed in New Zealand. Combined cocksfoot and dairy farming on 12–16 hectares could make a tolerable living. There was also a great demand for rural workers. Each year a thousand casual labourers were doing harvesting. The Peninsula's population rose to a peak of 4,768 in 1886, with all available land taken up.² Among them there were pioneer immigrants and early settlers from Finland.

It is difficult to ascertain who was the first person from Finland settling permanently on the land. According to the Naturalization Records it was *Erik West*, born in Vaasa in 1823, who had arrived in the Colony in 1854. According to the List of Freeholders of 1882 he was a carpenter by trade, lived at St. Albans and had a property of 300 acres worth 200 pounds. In the following year he was naturalized.³ St. Albans is nowadays a part of Christchurch, but in those days it was a halfway settlement between the city and the bush. However, there may have been others, who either never got naturalized or left New Zealand for other destinations.

1. Port of Lyttelton

The town of Lyttelton lies on the northern shore of a sea inlet in the north-west of Banks Peninsula. The harbour was called *Te Whaka* by the Maori. The town lies at the foot of the precipitous hill which divides it from

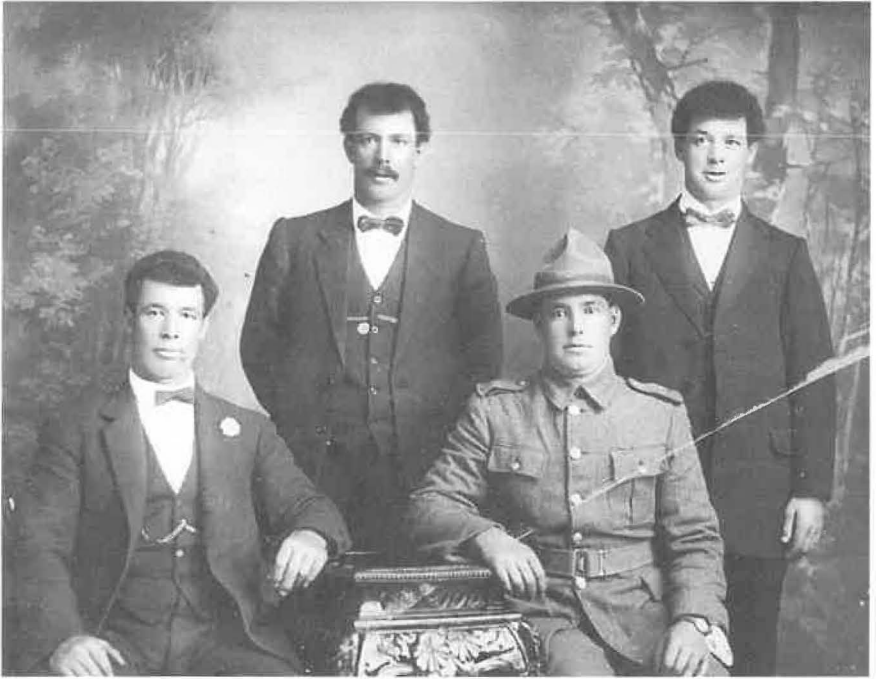
Lyttelton. N. Z.



The harbour of Lyttelton at the beginning of the century. Lyttelton was a gateway for the early Finns to the South Island. SI, Turku.

Christchurch. The town was named after Lord Lyttelton in 1850 and until 1857 it remained the largest and most important town in Canterbury.⁴

For the Finns it was the main gate of arrival to Banks Peninsula and the Canterbury Plains. Some of them – being former seamen – remained in this lively harbour forever. The first to become naturalized, in 1878, was *John Koskela*, a wharf labourer. He had been born in Oulu in 1841 and had arrived in 1865.⁵ According to the family history Koskela married Elizabeth Jane Brown in 1875. John Koskela died in 1903. His wife had passed away in 1892. The old family Bible further reveals that their son John Henry Koskela died in 1916, Charles Frederick in 1924, and Alfred Thomas in 1944. A son, Reuben Koskela, went to the First World War, was wounded badly and later settled in England. The descendants of John Koskela worked in trades related to sea, fishing and shipping. Graeme Robert Koskela, cargo plant operator, and his brother Bryan Gary Koskela, foreman, work at Lyttelton harbour. Christopher Robert Koskela,



The sons of John Koskela at Lyttelton during the First World War. From the left Charles Frederick, William, Reuben and Alfred. SI, Turku.

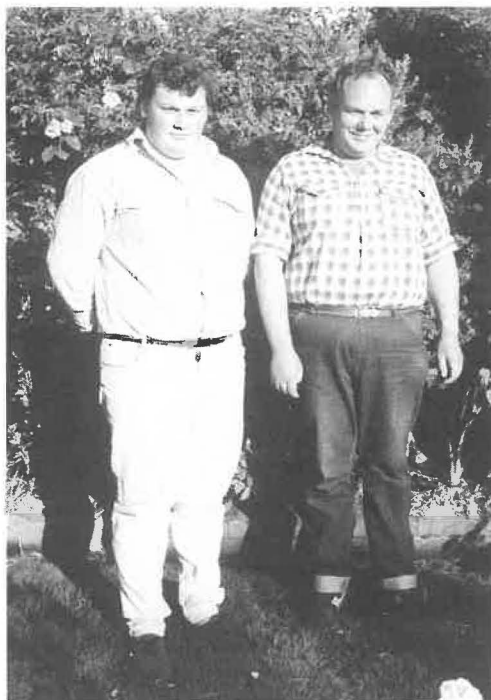
Graeme's son, is a sixth generation descendant of old John Koskela. He started to work at Lyttelton Harbour in 1991.⁶

One of the witnesses at the wedding of John Koskela in 1875 was *John Johnson*. Among the naturalized Finns there is John Johnson, a sawyer, who had arrived in 1855 and been naturalized in 1905 at Greymouth.⁷ His grandson Bruce Johnson in Kaiapoi believes that John's original surname was Hakkanen and the year of birth was 1835. He had sawmills in Greymouth and Stewart Island. He may have died in Auckland. John Johnson had three sons: Jack, William (Bruce's father) and Henry.

According to the Naturalization Records the following Finns settled in Lyttelton:

	Born	Arriv.	Occupation	Nat.
KOSKELA, John	1841 Oulu	1865	wharflabourer	1878
CORDELIN, August	1856 Rauma	1879	mariner&custodian	1884
NYSTRÖM, August	1851 Vaasa	1882	seaman	1884
JOHNSON, David	1842 –	1887	labourer	1890
SPAAN, John	1864 Vaasa	1887	shipcarpenter	1901
NYSTROM, Oscar	1858 Jacobst.	1889	mariner	1899
HELLMOND, Axel	1864 Helsinki	1899	shipcarpenter	1906
SALONEN, Frans	1886 Abo	1909	seaman	1913
ASPLUND, Otto	1893 Kimito	1914	"	1921

Another major source, the Aliens Register of 1917, reveals that in addition to Cordelin and other old timers, still alive in Lyttelton in 1916, there were four more sailors.⁸



The descendants of John Koskela, Graeme Robert Koskela and his son Christopher Robert Koskela, Lyttelton 1991. Graeme is 5th and Christopher 6th generation New Zealanders of Finnish origin. SI, Turku.

2. Little River

The main access point between Banks Peninsula and the Canterbury Plains is Little River, south from Christchurch near Lake Forsyth. Until 1860 there were only a few settlers and pit sawyers working in the bush. A new coach road to Christchurch was completed in 1872. The first train to Little River arrived in 1886. After the bush was cleared Little River turned out to be very fertile farmland. In 1873 William Coop began saw-milling and also launched the cocksfoot industry. A large body of bushmen and millhands worked at Little River, some investing their hard earned money in land. At the turn of the century Little River's population had risen to 380, among them many European families. By this time the heyday of the timber industry was over, and Little River settled down to sheep and dairy farming. Cocksfoot cutting still brought an annual influx of casual workers.⁹

According to the Naturalization Records the Finnish settlement in Little River started in 1879. Obviously there had been earlier casual Finnish workers in bush clearing and timber cutting. The following naturalized Finns lived at Little River.

	Born	Arriv.	Occupation	Nat.
ERIKSON, Andrew	1859 Nykarleby	1879	Farmer	1884
ERIKSON, Jacob	1854 "	1879	"	1884
HOLM, Jacob	1859 "	1879	"	1884
SUDERLUND, Erik	1847 Munsala	1883	Labourer, Brunnerton	1887
BRAHAMS, Andrew	1868 -	1886	Labourer	1923
NORDBERG, Leonard	1864 Abo	1891	"	1902
ERICKSON, John	1875 Vaasa	1897	"	1908
NEILSON, Eric	1886 Munsala	1912	"	1946

The Erikson family history relates that *Anders Erikson* was born at Munsala on the 19th of September 1858 and emigrated to New Zealand in 1878. According to the 1917 Aliens Register Andrew Erikson was a contractor at Little River. He married Jane Campbell (1867–1938), originally from

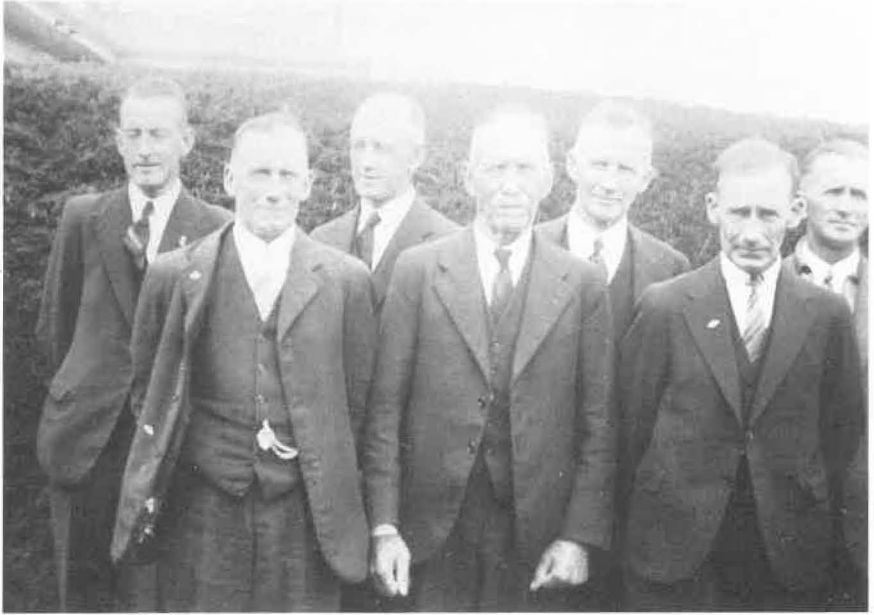
Scotland, at St. Andrews Presbyterian Church, Christchurch, in 1887. They had eight sons:

Andrew Gabriel	b. 1888 died inf.
Robert Cambell	1889-1978
George Edward	1891-1961
Karl Wilhelm (Charlie)	1893-1973
John Jacob	1895-1924
Henrik Donald	1898-1984
Randall Colin	1900-1971
Duncan (accident)	1902-1919

During the First World War five sons saw active service with the New Zealand Expeditionary Force, and four of them returned with war disabilities. Donald received instruction in aviation, but the war ended before he got to the front. Andrew Erikson died on January 30th 1943. According to an obituary he was well known on Banks Peninsula. He was said to have come to New Zealand when 21 years old and made his home



Donald Erikson, a son of Andrew Erikson, was trained as a pilot in the First World War. SI, Turku.



Pioneer Andrew Erikson with his six sons after the funeral of his wife Jane Erikson in 1938. From left: Colin, Andrew, Donald, Andrew Erikson, Robert, Karl and George. Five sons went to the First World War. SI, Turku.

at Pigeon Bay. In his later years Erikson lived at Spreydon, where his wife died in 1938. It is recorded that the late Andrew Erikson was fond of relating stories of the North European countries and their struggles for freedom. He specially loved to tell stories of his favourite warrior, Gustaphus Adolphus of Sweden. At the time of Andrew Erikson's death the Second World War was raging, and his grandsons were fighting for New Zealand. The third generation was air-minded, for the sons of Colin and Donald were serving in the New Zealand Air Forces.¹⁰ The number of the descendants of Andrew Erikson and his six sons is great, extending at the moment to the fifth and sixth generations. The family is proud of their Finnish heritage and still gives Nordic names, like Sven and Finn, to the newcomers in the Erikson family.



Finn and Sven Erikson, descendants of Andrew Erikson, Christchurch 1991. SI, Turku.

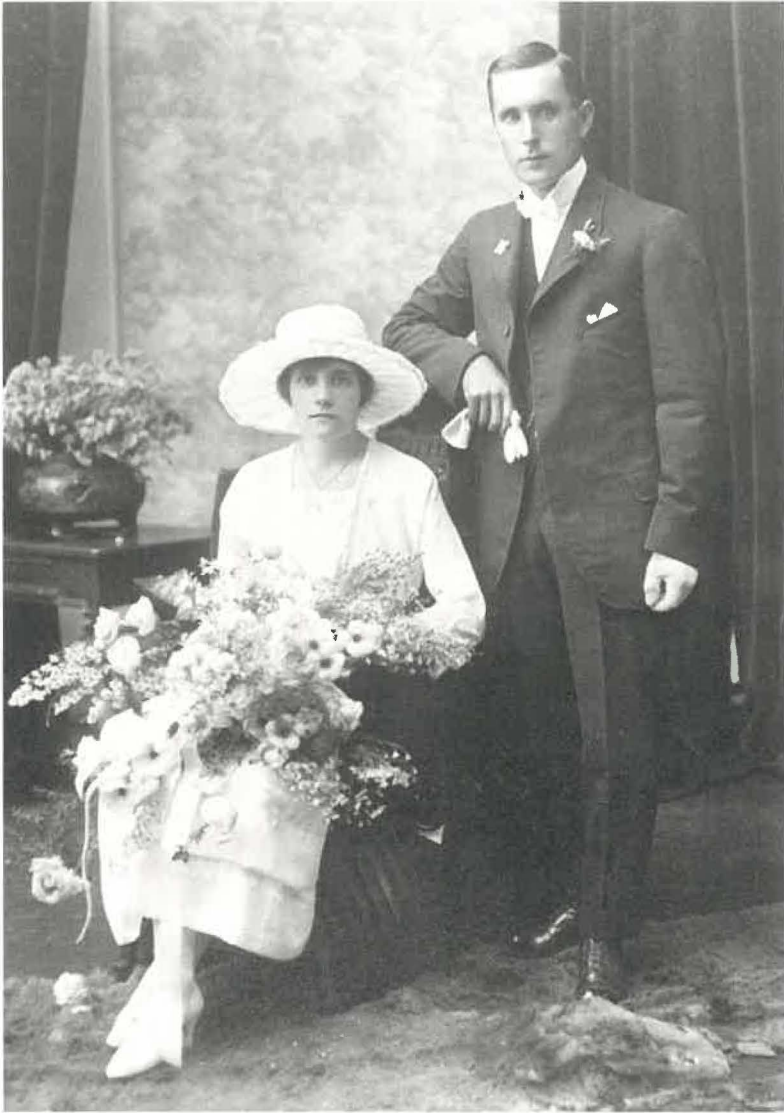
Another pioneer *Erik Suderlund* or *Söderlund* was born in the village of Pensala, Munsala, and came to New Zealand in 1882 according to the family history. However, according to his naturalization records, it was a year later. Apparently his brothers Karl Petter and Jacob also came out in 1882, but returned later to Finland. In 1879 Erik Söderlund had married Sofia Henrickson, born in 1854. Obviously in the early 1890's Söderlund returned to Finland to take his family to New Zealand as according to Munsala Church Records the family, Erik, Sofia, and daughter Olga, born



Sophia and Erik Söderlund had a farm at Bull's Run, Little River. They are pictured with their children Oscar, Olga and Albert and with three unknown, obviously Finnish grass seeders. SI, Turku.



Oscar Sutherland, son of Erik Sutherland (Söderlund) was killed in the First World War. SI, Turku.



If the Finnish community was large enough, second generation Finns could marry each other. Sydney Albert Sutherland (Söderlund) was married on April 21, 1920 to Jenny Josephine Blomqvist. Jenny died in 1967 at the age of 68 and Albert in 1964 at the age of 70. SI, Turku.

in 1883, moved to New Zealand in 1893. The sons, Sidney Albert and Oscar Robert Suderlund (sic), were born in 1894 and 1896 in New Zealand. The family settled at Bull's Run, Port Levy Road, Little River. This farm was one of the "headquarters" for the new arrivals from Finland. In 1898 Olga Sofia married Erik John Holm, a 26-year-old labourer from Little River. Olga Sofia died in 1902, the cause of death being Pulmonary Phthisis and Exhaustion. The Suderlund family took care of the children, and Erik Holm returned to Finland. Then in 1912 Sofia Suderlund died. When the First World War broke out sons Oskar and Albert joined the New Zealand Forces. In 1916 Erik Suderlund sold the farm and decided to return to Finland. But on the way he died on March 30th, 1917, at Onewhero near Auckland. Oscar Suderlund – or Sutherland as the boys were called – was killed in France, but Albert returned and married Jenny Blomquist, Isaac's daughter. The young couple bought a farm, which they, however, had to give up during the depression. After that Albert Suderlund worked for the county council at Little River.¹¹

The following story about Erik Suderlund is recorded in the school history of Little River:

"One episode in connection with clay roads is worth mention. Mr. Gilling (Headmaster) seemed to have no understanding of the roads, especially in wet weather, so complained of dirty boots and said if certain children came to school next day with dirty boots he would strap them.

The father of these children (Erik Soderlund), a fine upstanding specimen of the Scandinavian race, decided that he would have something to say about this so accompanied his family to school and took the Headmaster by nose and indicated what would happen to him if he strapped the children for something they could do absolutely nothing about. History does not record any further references to boots, dirty or otherwise!"¹²

In the 1880's there were quite a number of Finns at Little River. Most of them worked at the sawmills. Here at the Lake Forsyth Arms Hotel an incident took place on October 2nd, 1887, which is well recorded in notable happenings at Banks Peninsula – even over 100 years later.

A party of three Russian-Finns, working at Mr. Coop's saw mill, went to the hotel at about nine o'clock. Two of the men had words. The bigger man was quarrelling with one of the small ones, while the other kept out of it. After a time the quarrel seemed to cease, but a short time afterwards a man named Leon saw a man lying on the verandah – as he thought – dead



The Little River Hotel, where Nils Jacobson (Blomquist) murdered Max Johnson on Oct. 2, 1887. SI, Turku.

drunk, and the big Finn standing a short distance away, ready to leave. Leon told the Finn not to leave his mate there. The Finn replied in his own tongue to the effect that his mate was all right where he was. But then a man named Ray lit a match to look at the supposed drunken man and noticed that his face was ghastly white. There was a general exclamation that he was dead, and then they noticed blood on his clothes. They rose the alarm, and George Robinson saddled his horse and started in pursuit of the big Finn, and overtook him at the distance of some 200 yards from the hotel. Robinson found the other Finn between Joblin's store and Coop's mill. This man came back quietly, and they were both locked up. Nothing was found on them but some matches and tobacco. The body was left where it was until the arrival of a constable from Akaroa.

The murdered man was *Max Johnson* (Matts Johanson Skrifvars in Finland), the murderer was *Nils Jacobson* (Blomquist or Bertula in Finland), while the third man was *Anders Nyman*. At the inquest, held at the hotel three days later, it was the general opinion that the man committed the crime when maddened by drink. At the trial before the Christchurch

Supreme Court on January 14th, 1888, Nils Jacobson was found guilty of manslaughter alone, and was sentenced to penal servitude for life, later changed to a few years imprisonment.

The following amusing incident was often told about the Little River murder:

“Some of the residents, who were watching the other Finns with interest shortly after the murder, saw two of them steal away into the bush one night, and following, found them digging a grave. Thinking another tragedy had occurred, they sent a man post haste for the Akaroa police, who arrived on the scene in time to find the Finns carefully burying an old white horse of theirs, which had succumbed to old age.”¹³

According to the *Lyttelton Times* (Oct. 6, 1887) Jacobson knifed Johanson because of an argument over a game of cards. The interpreter in the trial was Anders Rikson (obviously Anders Erikson). The incident was also reported in the local newspaper in Finland, stating that both the men came from Vexala village in Munsala.¹⁴ According to a recent study by OGILVIE in 1990 the killer was believed to have returned to Banks Peninsula after he was released from the prison, and lived the rest of his days under a different name.¹⁵ As a matter of fact Nils Jacobson returned to Finland in 1910 and married for another time in 1917. He died in 1930 at the age of 79 years. Of the third man, Anders Nyman, there is no further information.

3. Pigeon Bay

The major agglomeration of Finns in New Zealand was, however, at Pigeon Bay, close to Lyttelton and Little River. To whalers of several nationalities from the middle of the 1830's Pigeon Bay was a blissful haven from storm and stress. It was the gem of the Peninsula. Scots Ebenezer Hay and Francis Sinclair settled at Pigeon Bay in 1843. There were already Europeans in the bay – as well as a Maori Pa. In 1850 Ebenezer Hay was contracted to supply timber for the new township of Lyttelton. Shipbuilding also took place in the bay in the 1850's. Whaleships continued to find refuge in the bay, and there were numerous runaways. Tracking down deserters among the Peninsula hills was a regular practice by ship officers, the Akaroa police and local property owners. Grazing and

dairying were also important industries. The post office was opened in 1863, roads were built and a steamer visited regularly. By 1880 Pigeon Bay had a population of about 250 persons, growing to 350 by 1900. By the end of the century the closing of sawmills and the cessation of timber cutting meant that workers either had to move elsewhere or to take casual farmwork – or take on small-scale dairying and cocksfooting to survive.¹⁶

The first Finns to Pigeon Bay came over the hills from Lyttelton and Little River. The deserting seamen easily found employment on sheep farms as well as in timber cutting. It is also told that the members of the Hay family used to go to the port of Lyttelton to persuade them to desert their ships, as the Finns were found to be excellent scythemen in cocksfoot harvesting.¹⁷

The Naturalization Records 1878–1948 reveal that at least the following Finns lived at Pigeon Bay.

	Born	Arriv.	Occupation	Nat.
HOLM, Erik J.	1871 Munsala	1879	Labourer	1909
BETREL, Henrig	1846 Oulu	1882	"	1899
ERICKSON, Edward Erik	1865 Munsala	1882	Labourer; Christch. before Pigeon Bay	1923
JAKOBSON, Karl Niclas	1862 Munsala	–	"	1891
KLOCKARS, Andras	1864 Munsala	1886	"	1891
BLOMQUIST, Henrik	1860 Munsala	–	Farmer	1913
BLOMQUIST, Isaac	1863 Munsala	1889	"	1920
ANDERSON, Erik Johan	1864 Munsala	1890	Labourer	1911
ERIKSON, Anders W.	1873 Munsala	1901	"	1922
TILLAEUS, Jonas S.	1881 Ruokol.	1913	Stationhand	1923

It is difficult to ascertain who was the first Finn to live at Pigeon Bay. Most likely he was a former seaman, who had left his ship in Lyttelton, had worked then in sawmills and timbercutting at Little River before moving to beautiful Pigeon Bay. It is also difficult to estimate the number of Finnish immigrants in Pigeon Bay. Before the turn of the century the Finns were moving from place to place in search of work, and even of the permanent

settlers only 25–50 per cent became naturalized. Consequently, at the early stage the number of Finns living at Pigeon Bay permanently was probably no more than twenty, until the wives and children started to arrive from Finland. Then there were casual Finnish workers coming from the North Island to do cocksfoot harvesting. Now and then a Finnish sailor jumped off his ship at the port of Lyttelton and walked over the hills to nearby Pigeon Bay, probably knowing that his countrymen could be found there.

An interesting feature is that one of the early settlers, Erik Johan Holm, had arrived in 1879 at the age of eight years. His father was *Erik Johan Holm* and mother Brita Holm, née Matson. Although nearly all the first arrivals were young single men, there was also some family immigration from Finland already in the 1870's.

Another feature is the dominance of the parish of Munsala as a place of origin among the Finnish settlers. Pigeon Bay was the major agglomeration of the Munsala people in New Zealand, and chain migration nurtured the colony for decades. This can be seen clearly from the Aliens Register of 1917. By this time the wives and children had arrived to the settlement.

The Blomquist family in particular had settled on the shores of Pigeon Bay. Three sons of Jacob Nilsson from Bertula, Munsala, arrived in New Zealand in the 1870's and 1880's. They worked at sawmills at Little River. *Nils Jacobson* killed another Finn in 1887, and is well recorded as told earlier. *Henrik Johan Blomquist* was born in 1860 and worked also in a sawmill at Cooptown. Here he met Brita Sofia Holm, also from Munsala, who was working as a cook for the Hay's at Annandale. After a few years she and another woman went to Broken Hill in Australia and set up a boarding-house there. Henrik Blomquist followed and married Brita Holm at Broken Hill. Two children were born there, but they died in infancy. After the Miners' strike the couple returned to Finland where four children were born: Henrik Hugo, Jacob George, Anna Alina and Johannes Lennart. Then – according to the family history – Tom Hay and Tomas Guthrie visited the family during a tour (1909) and persuaded them that they would have a better life in New Zealand. Henrik Blomquist set out a year ahead of the family and purchased 48 hectares of land at Pigeon Bay and set about building a house. In the following year, 1910, Mrs. Blomquist and four children sailed to New Zealand on a steamer from Southampton to Wellington and further to Lyttelton. Initially the family lived in a

homestead at Annandale in 1911 until the new house was ready. Dairy farming was not easy as they had little experience. They had 30 cows, and milk was taken by horse and cart to the Pigeon Bay cheese factory. In 1914 a "Zealandia" milking machine was bought. The cutting of cocksfoot by hand provided further income. Henrik Blomquist worked also as a carpenter, and this talent was passed onto his sons. Then in 1921 Henrik Blomquist died. The children went about building their own lives farming, grass-seeding and working in the cheese factory. Anna went to nursing. After the death of her husband Sofia and daughter Anna made a trip to Finland in 1922-23. The rest of her life Sofia lived in a cottage on Duxbury's farm.¹⁷

The third brother *Isak Blomquist* (b. 1863) was, according to the draft drawing, ordered in 1885 to the military service for three years in the Third Finnish Sharpshooter Battalion in Vaasa. He got the first prize as the most skilful shooter and was advanced to the rank of "jefreiter" (corporal) – to lose it later for refusing to obey an order given by a superior. He was placed in the reserve on May 9th, 1889.¹⁸ Four months later Isak Blomquist left for New Zealand, where he already had two brothers. He arrived at Little River, where he probably worked in the sawmills like most of the Finns. In the 1890's Isak Blomquist returned to Finland, and in 1897 he married Sofia Josefina, born in 1873, of Skrifvars. According to the Munsala Church Records Isak Blomquist left for America in 1899 – obviously soon returning back to Finland. Following the example of his brother Henrik Blomquist three years earlier, in November, 1912, Isak and Sofia Blomquist and the children Jenny Josefina (b. 1898), Irene Susanna (b. 1902), Isak Evert (b. 1904), Elna Maria (b. 1908) and Anna Augusta (b. 1912, d. 1921) left for New Zealand. Isak Blomquist bought a farm at Pigeon Bay, where he lived until his death in 1944. His son Isak Evert – or Edward – continued farming until he sold the homestead just before his death in 1990.¹⁹

A reason for the Blomquist brothers' and their families' emigration to New Zealand in 1909-12 was the visit of the members of the Hay family to Finland in 1909, mentioned earlier. The Hay family had a special liking towards the Finns. Ebenezer Hay used to go to Lyttelton to make Finnish seamen desert their ships to work for him. Tom Hay and his brother-in-law, Lieut-Col Tomas Orr Guthrie, travelled to Finland to visit the Finns they had met in Banks Peninsula. In a letter, published later by his daughter, Mr. Guthrie relates the story:



Isak Blomquist from Munsala served for three years in the army in Vaasa before his departure for New Zealand in 1889. Blomquist won a prize in a shooting competition. SI, Turku.



From Munsala to New Zealand. Isak Blomquist had left for New Zealand for the first time in 1889. He had two brothers there. In 1912 he re-emigrated with his family. In the picture front row: children Elna and Edward. Back row: Irene, Isak, wife Sofia and children Anna and Jenny. SI, Turku.

"Some years ago in New Zealand my wife's brother had befriended and hidden at Annandale two Finns, who deserting their ship, had fled to the peninsula. They stayed on with him there, soon proving themselves to be the best workers he had ever employed. Later they sent to Finland for some of their friends and wives, they soon formed quite a little colony in Pigeon Bay. It was an old-standing promise that if ever we visited their native land we should call upon some of those who had already returned to Kobi-Yoki."

The New Zealanders met at Wexala village in Munsala a man called Jacob (probably Jacob Leander Erikson, born in 1880, who left for New Zealand in 1912 again with family) and many others who had been in New

Zealand. The Finns who had been in New Zealand had saved money and were able to return to their own country to buy very nice farms.²⁰

The visit took place in the year 1909, as Tom Hay died in 1909 in Sweden on the way back. The visit by New Zealanders encouraged further emigration from Munsala to Banks Peninsula.

By this time the Pigeon Bay Finnish settlement was well consolidated. It had close contacts to the home district in Finland, and a newcomer could always start his life in a new country with casual work for a Finnish farmer or his neighbours. But the colony also had close contacts to the other smaller Finnish settlements in New Zealand. At Pigeon Bay a greenhorn from the old country could get the information where to go to find work and where other Finns could be found.

Not all the Finns settled on Banks Peninsula. However, it definitely was often the place of arrival, and perhaps of first employment. After some time at Little River or Pigeon Bay – and with some colonial experience – the Finns could try their luck in other parts of the country. In the Canterbury area, and especially in Christchurch, there were a number of Finns, who had arrived individually. They were in different trades; general labouring and carpentering being the most common ones. As mentioned earlier Erik West from St. Albans had arrived already in 1854.

The Canterbury Plains were the most populated area of the South Island and Finnish settlement followed this general pattern. However, the agglomeration of the Finns on Banks Peninsula was the result of the seafaring tradition of the pioneers, followed by decades of chain migration to the first Finnish group settlements in New Zealand.

4. Other South Island Settlers

The western side of the South Island especially was not very alluring mainly because of the difficult natural circumstances. Only a few of the Finnish immigrants have lived in that area. *Carl Peter Carlson*, born in Turku in 1854, had a farm in Kikiwa. He was naturalized in 1887 in Dillmanstown, Kumara. He was married to Jane Meurtha and they had three children. Carlson died in Kikiwa in 1932. According to the New Zealand Register of Aliens 1917, in Waiuta there lived a goldminer, *Robert Olin*, born in Vihti in 1855. Olin had formerly been a miner in Tasmania. He

90/3368.



Oath of Allegiance.

I, *Carl Bernhard Telenius*

do swear that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her

Majesty Queen Victoria, Her Heirs and Successors, according to
as far as that law is in accordance with Gods will.

law. ✓ So help me God.

Sworn at *Brightwater*, this *23rd*

day of *October*, 1890, before me,

G. W. W. Lightbana. J. P.

Carl Telenius's Oath of Allegiance to her majesty Queen Victoria in 1890. Telenius was born in Uusikaupunki in 1842 and arrived in New Zealand in 1879. In 1890 he was a draper in Nelson. In his early days he was probably a goldminer as "Telenius Creek" indicates. New Zealand Naturalization Records, National Archives, Wellington.



Telenius House, Spring Gove

Waimea South Photo

The house that Carl Telenius erected in Wakefield. From the book "From River to Range".

was naturalized in 1886 in Greymouth and he died in 1923.²¹

In Nelson, right in the northernmost corner of the South Island, lived *Carl Bernhard Telenius*, who had been born in Uusikaupunki in 1842. He had arrived in New Zealand in 1879 and probably was at first a gold-digger. Between Inangahua Junction and Murchinson there is a little river called Telenius Creek, which possibly is named after Carl Bernhard. Maybe it is a memory of his gold washing days in that area. Later Telenius set up as a draper and importer on the Spring Grove corner near Nelson. He married Lydia Walker, and they had one son. Lydia managed the shop, and Carl had a cart. He often hired a local hall in the outlying areas and had a warehouse sale. In 1907 he married again, this time Eliza Dickens. In 1908 Telenius erected a new home in Wakefield with a shop adjoining. Telenius was naturalized in 1890 and he died in Nelson in 1931.²²

Johan Henrik Sandos was born in Vaasa in 1864. He sailed on Finnish ships around the northern hemisphere at the age of 17. Later he was a

In addition to a creek also a road near Nelson was named after Carl Bernhard Telenius. Photo Ari Hallenberg.



sailor on square riggers which traded with America. His ship was wrecked in the English Channel, after which he shipped on an English ship bound for New Zealand. Johan jumped off the ship in Lyttelton. The family history relates that he arrived in New Zealand in February 1883. While the ship was berthed at Lyttelton Johan befriended a farmer who was searching for men who could use a scythe. In Finland hay harvesting was done namely by scythe. The young Finn was hidden in a hay loft while the ship company was searching for him. It is highly likely that the farmer employing Sandos was Mr. Hay from Pigeon Bay, or one of his neighbours. Johan Sandos probably worked on the farm for a while. Later he became a fisherman, farmer and contractor at Kaikoura.

It seems that Johan Sandos felt lonely in the beginning. He invited his father under the same name, Johan Henrik Sandos, born at Munsala in 1842, to join him. The father had emigrated from Finland to America in 1882 and settled in Seattle. After the father's arrival they both lived at Little River according to a letter by John Henry Sandos to the Department of Internal Affairs in 1922. In the letter Sandos relates that he had applied for naturalization in Christchurch in 1883 together with two other Finns,

Leander Erickson and Mat Erickson. Unfortunately the certificate was burned in a fire which destroyed his father's residence at Little River during the latter part of that year. This indicates that the son and father lived at the first Finnish group settlement in New Zealand. From Little River the Sandoses moved to Kaikoura and became fishermen. After 4–5 years, however, the father returned to Finland as his wife had become ill in 1887. She died in the following year. Johan Henrik Sandos, Sr., died in Finland in 1900.

Then, in 1901, Johan Henrik was joined by his brother *Karl Siegfried* (1869–1916) and sister *Maria Wilhelmina* (1879–1964). They all settled in Kaikoura where Karl worked as a tailor in a factory, according to his own account, helped by his sister Maria. Karl Sandos never married. He died in Kaikoura in 1916. Maria married James Leitch, who had the farm on the other side of the road. They had a son, Private M. S. Leitch, who died in action in Egypt in 1940. Maria Leitch died in 1964.

It seems clear that there was a small Finnish settlement in Kaikoura at the turn of the century. E.g. *Lennart Högbäck*, an engine driver at Kaikoura, was naturalized in 1910. From the Finnish shipping records it appears that 19-year-old Högbäck came from Munsala in 1901 with Karl and Maria Sandos to join Johan Henrik Sandos. The group also included *Herman Hongell*, 24 years, *Arvid Andersson Huggare*, 23 years, and *Herman Honga*, 29 years. The price of a ticket was 550 Fmk. According to the Finnish Steamship Company, the group sailed from Hanko on board the *s/s Polaris* on October 5th, 1901, to arrive in New Zealand early in 1902. This was typical group emigration: to join a pioneer emigrant, a relative of someone already settled in New Zealand.

About the middle of the 1890's Johan Henrik Sandos had settled at Middle Creek, Kaikoura. Sometime in the early 1890's Sandos had married Clara Elizabeth de Kierski, née Schröder (1863–1935). In 1881 Clara Elizabeth had been married to Count Eustachius de Kierski, born in 1853. The Count had mysteriously disappeared. Johan Henrik and Clara Elizabeth had five children: Ivy Louisa, b. 1893, Eva May (1896–1976), Archie Sigfrid (1898–1912), Bert Magnus (1901–63) and Venla (1906–1975). Johan Henrik Sandos worked as a farmer and contractor in Kaikoura. He also played drums in the Kaikoura Brass Band. About 1914 Johan Henrik Sandos moved to the North Island and settled as a farmer at Whatawhata 15 km from Hamilton. Johan Henrik Sandos died in 1940.



The New Zealand Eight Oar Team, which won the Silver Medal in 1930 at the Empire Games, Canada. Bert Magnus Sandos is the third from the left. SI, Turku, original John Sandos, Hamilton.

His son *Bert Magnus Sandos* was a champion rower representing New Zealand at the British Empire Games in Canada in 1930, coming first in fours and second in eights. He also represented New Zealand at the Los Angeles Olympics in 1932, but he did not win any medals.²³

On March 30th, 1986, the descendants of Johan and Clara Sandos had a reunion at John and Jean Sandos, 11 Norma Place, Hamilton.

One of the later arrivals was Master Mariner *Andrew Bloom*, born in Vaasa in 1861. He had left Finland at a very early age and had been sailing in British ships. He arrived in New Zealand about 1879 and was engaged in the coastal trade in and out of Lyttelton. For 27 years – as recorded in 1919 – he had been the Master of the schooner *Lily* and was “well known all round the coast of New Zealand as a Native of Finland”. Andrew Bloom was naturalized in 1920 living at Heathcote.²⁴

Another example, *Waino Sarelius*, born in Tornio in 1883, studied at the Gymnastic College of Stockholm for a degree. From 1904 to 1912 he lived



The descendants of Clara and John Sandos had a family re-union in Hamilton in 1986. SI, Turku.



John Sandos, grandson of Johan Sandos, Hamilton 1991. SI, Turku.



Kristina Sophia Erikson (left) and Sophia Blomquist from Little River promoting the war effort during the Second World War. SI, Turku.

in Edinburgh, arriving in New Zealand in 1913. He started to practice as a masseur, being also employed by various colleges and hospitals, especially as an examiner of massage. He was married and had four children. In 1923 he was appointed Vice-Consul for Finland in Christchurch.²⁵

Of the Finns in Christchurch we can also mention *Anders Wilhelm Erikson* born at Munsala in 1871. He visited New Zealand twice before deciding to reside there permanently and bring his family with him. Anders Wilhelm had many relatives in New Zealand. His brother Jacob Leander was a farmer in Waiuku and his two cousins *Matt Alarik Holm* and *Anders Wilhelm Holm* were also in the country. The family first lived on New Brighton Road. They were known to keep up old Finnish traditions. His wife, *Kristiina Sofia (née Holmberg)*, was an excellent spinner. Also the language of the old country was regularly spoken in the house. When

Anders Wilhelm died, his wife became a famous person in Christchurch, where for years she took care of the city pumping station in the area which was often threatened by floods. The city rewarded her with a badge of merit.²⁶

Anders Wilhelm and Kristiina Sofia had two daughters and obviously a foster son, *Anders Wilhelm Holmberg*. Both daughters married Finns. Tekla married *Harry Hägglöff*, and the younger daughter Signe married *Gordon Erikson*. Gordon's father, *Edward Erikson*, was a cousin of the Sundells in Opotiki. He was born at Munsala in 1866 and he came from London to Port Chalmers in 1882 on the *Taranaki* after 80 days at sea. In New Zealand he married Helen Mary McCausland and altogether they had 11 children. While living in Christchurch Edward Erikson had a variety of jobs. The marriage of Signe Eriksson and Gordon Erikson united two large Finnish families in New Zealand. The descendants of these families form a considerable share of people with Finnish origin in New Zealand.²⁷

Besides these families there lived in Christchurch *Gunnar Neilson* (former Stenbacka). He was born at Munsala in 1909. While being a farmer in Finland he heard about the possibilities in New Zealand and decided to emigrate. He left Finland in October 1930 and arrived in New Zealand on the *s/s Orford* (sic) in December. First Neilson was working as a road constructor in Westport but after a few months he moved to Christchurch permanently, apart from a stay of six months in a Waiuku dairy in 1938. In Christchurch he set up a milkshop, which was quite prosperous. He decided to change his name because Stenbacka was such a difficult name for English-speakers. Little by little he saved money and bought a house and a car. His wealth had increased a lot from that 20 pounds he had when he arrived in New Zealand. In 1944 he married Aurelia Elizabeth Le Leivre, who had been born in Dannevirke. According to Neilson he had five cousins in New Zealand. He also kept close contacts with relatives in Finland. Neilson was naturalized in 1947.²⁸

Otto Wilhelm Sandelin, who had been born in Helsinki in 1881, was another representative of Finnish private enterprise in Christchurch. He had arrived in New Zealand in 1903 and had an electric shop on Chester Road. In his free time Otto Wilhelm was a well known wrestler. In 1924 his nephew *Otto Arne Sandelin*, born in Helsinki in 1907, came to Christchurch. Otto Arne worked in his uncle's shop for six years until he moved to Waitaki in 1930 and got a job as an electrical fitter in a hydroelectric plant.²⁹

On the eastern coast there also lived some isolated Finns. *John Whitberg*, who had been born in Uusikaupunki in 1850, was active in Methven, south of Christchurch. After his arrival in 1879 he worked as a farm labourer in that area and was commonly known as "Russian Jack". Some of "Russian Jack's" spare time was spent on a traditional Finnish interest; he was sentenced to pay fines because of drunkenness.³⁰

Charles Williams (Karl Widlund) was born in Vaasa in 1845. He arrived in New Zealand in 1868 and became a farmer. Williams married an English girl, *Emily Raymond* in 1874, and they had six children. He kept on farming until 1914, when he sold his farm because of his old age. After that he lived totally moneyless with his youngest daughter, Mrs. *John Temple* in Island Cliff. Williams was naturalized in 1921.³¹

Although the first Finns in New Zealand were mostly single men, quite early there were also some Finnish families. One of them was *John and Mary Keinan*. Their descendants were not found, and consequently the information is based on public documents.

In the list of Scandinavian seamen in New South Wales, Australia, Mr. *James Sanderson* found a *J. W. Keynanen*, born in Finland circa 1845 and arrived in Sydney on the ship *Maitland* in June 1871. He invited his family to join him, and they arrived at Port Chalmers on January 9th, 1875, and settled in the South Island. The journey was assisted by the Government, and therefore somebody already in the colony had made an application on their behalf for an assisted passage. *John Keinanen* died in Invercargill in 1887 and left behind a wife and five children. He was never naturalized. *Mary Gustava Keenan*, née *Lindström*, was born in Oulu in 1842, and was naturalized in Bluff in 1906. She died in 1926 in Christchurch. One of the sons was *John Oscar Keinan*, born in Uusikaupunki in 1869. This indicates that the family came probably from Uusikaupunki or at least had lived there.

The main features of the family history appear from the naturalization records of *John Oscar Keinan* in 1935. The family had arrived in New Zealand in 1875 on the ship *Margaret Galbraith*. From 1875 to 1909 the family lived at Bluff, where the son was educated at the Bluff school. In 1909 *John Oscar* moved to Dunedin where he resided until his wife died in 1927. *John Oscar* moved to St. Kilda, where he resided until 1929 when he took up residence with his married daughter Mrs. *Janie Allen*, also in St. Kilda. It is further stated in the naturalization records that the applicant

had attained Dux of his school and had an adequate knowledge of the English language. "He is a splendid penman, and his reading of English is perfect." He had four daughters and a son all residing in Otago. John Oscar had been married to Louisa Sherlock, British subject, born in Jersey Island. He was in poor circumstances as he neither owned property nor money. He had been a storeman but was now employed on Relief Work by the Unemployment Board. He had made an application earlier for the Old Age Pension to obtain the pension, which he had to wait for 12 months after being naturalized. The man had a splendid character, and his son was a returned soldier. There was no offence committed by the applicant, stated the Police Report.³²

Karl Robert Lauren was born in Turku in 1869. He was a seaman and probably came to Dunedin, New Zealand, in 1894. First he worked on



The family of Karl Robert Lauren. Backrow from left: John, Molly, Winnie, Pat. Frontrow from left: Jim, Mary Maud, Lucy, Karl Robert. Picture taken about 1919-20. SI, Turku.

small coastal vessels, like the *Corinna* and the *Te Anau*. Later he worked as a watersider at the harbour. Karl Robert married Mary Maud White in 1902. Mary was a daughter of an Irish blacksmith. Before the marriage Karl Robert had become a Catholic like Mary. They lived in Dunedin and brought up a family of six children: Mary, Margaret, Robert, John, James and Lucy. The family was close and Karl Robert was described as a good father who was full of fun. He maintained a good vegetable garden to help feed his family. He also kept cage birds and did wood carving. Karl Robert died in Dunedin in 1933.³³

Benjamin Backholm was born in Vaasa in 1856. His mother died when he was young, and he stayed with an aunt. When grown up Benjamin worked on a sailing ship which visited the Amazon area of South America where he took a great interest in Indian carving. When the ship came to New Zealand Backholm jumped from the ship in 1882 and settled in Alexandra, Otago. On the goldfields Backholm worked on gold dredges and lived in Manuherika Road. In 1895 arrived his brother Frederick (Fridtjof in



Benjamin Backholm (1856–1938) was a former seaman who came to New Zealand in 1884. He was a miner and a dredge-man. In 1895 he married *Elizabeth Forrest*. Later they had an orchard homestead at Alexandra. SI, Turku.



Benjamin Alfred Backholm (born July 4, 1896) fought in France in 1914–18 and was seriously wounded. He lived in Dunedin and died in 1983 at the Levin War Veterans' Home. He had one son Errol who was in the Second World War. SI, Turku.

Finland), who had been born in Vaasa in 1864. When naturalized in 1899 Frederick was a miner at Puhi Puhi.

After some years on the goldfields Benjamin Backholm bought an orchard on Ventry Street, Alexandra. In 1895 Backholm married Elizabeth Forrest, whose husband had died two years earlier. From the marriage they had three sons: Fridtjof and twins Alfred and Walter. All the sons went to the First World War. In his old age Benjamin – it is recorded – became very deaf (possibly because of the noise of the mining) and had a crooked walking stick. Benjamin died in 1938.

The oldest son *Fridtjof Backholm* (1895–1962) was brought up at the orchard. He went to the First World War fighting in France and was

decorated twice, M.M. (Military Medal) and D.C.M. (Distinguished Conduct Medal). In 1919 he was presented with a medal from the people of Alexandra. Fridtjof lived in a mud cottage at Mount Nicholas station as a rabbitier. During the Second World War he married Addie Corrigan and lived in Lumsden Southland for many years.

Alfred Backholm (1896–1983) was also brought up at the family orchard in Alexandra, where he helped until going to the First World War. He also fought in France and became seriously ill. So his return from England was delayed one year. He also received a medal from the people of Alexandra. After the war Alfred worked as a grocer at Wardell's in Dunedin from 1919 to 1926 boarding for some time with his twin brother Walter. In 1923 Alfred married Marie Crawshaw and built a house in Magda Street. They had one son, Errol Benjamin Backholm, born in 1924. Alfred worked as a Grocer all his life. His wife died in 1938, and Alfred sold the house and moved to a boarding house with Errol. In 1941 he was remarried, this time to Alice Caldwell, and lived in Oxford Street, Dunedin. Later they moved to Palmerston North in the North Island. His son Errol Backholm fought in the Second World War.

After his schooling in Alexandra *Walter Backholm* (1896–1970) lived with his elder half-sister Grace and her husband George Reilly in Bluff. There he became a tailor. When the First World War broke out he joined the merchant navy for the years 1914–18. In 1919 he also received a medal from the town of Alexandra. After the war Walter lived in Dunedin working as a tailor and later as a truck driver for the City Council. He was called up for the Second World War in 1939–41 and went to Tonga and Fiji with the army on garrison duties. In 1951 he went to Moa Creek, Central Otago, to work as an irrigation worker. He went round the irrigation races on horseback. He bought a section and two huts from in the Roxburgh Dam site and lived there until he got heart problems and moved to a War Veterans Home in Dunedin. Walter was never married. He had a great sense of humour and he loved Central Otago.³⁴

In Invercargill, Southland, there lived a man called *Nils Edward Nelson* (former Hällström). He had been born at Kristiinankaupunki in 1876. The family had moved to America in 1895. It was there the name was changed to Nelson. During his student years Nils Edward got interested in missionary work and he began service in Watchtower-organization in 1900. At first he was doing that work in Canada and Australia but then

came to Bluff, New Zealand, in 1910. During the next four years he made three missionary journeys to Australia. During the years 1915–36 he lived in all of the big cities in New Zealand until he settled in Invercargill, from where he kept on working as a missionary. Nelson married in Christchurch in 1915. He was naturalized in 1938.³⁵

Robert Johnson, born in Vaasa in 1855, lived in Matura Island. He had arrived in 1879 at Port Chalmers on the ship *Peter Stewart*. At first he worked all around the South Island as a farm labourer and a constructor. For seven years he lived at Abbotsford Station, near Dunedin. During that time he married Esther Lewis. The couple moved into the Matura area in 1888, where they first had a farm near Pine Bush and later on Matura Island. As Johnson was getting too old for heavy work he applied for naturalization as he wished to receive the Old Age Pension. Johnson died in 1943.³⁶

August Israel Nyberg also went to the Otago area. He was born in Helsinki in 1886. His father was a sailmaker. He arrived at Lyttelton on the barque *Waiiti* in 1906 and was discharged there. He began his working life in New Zealand as a wagoner in Waihola near Milton, from where Nyberg moved to Kaitangata and got employment in an oil-company for seven years. During the war time he wanted to enlist but as a Finnish citizen he was rejected. After a year as a fisherman in the Tautuku area he moved to Waikawa in 1924 and practiced the same trade. He married Alice Wilson, a daughter of the Justice of Peace in Kaitangata. They had four children: Margaret Rosemary b. 1911, Dagmar Elizabeth b. 1913, Evert August b. 1915 and George Samuel b. 1916. In 1927 the family moved to Niagara because Alice was taking care of the post office there. Nyberg was naturalized in 1928.³⁷

Francis Oscar Lindquist was born in Nagu in 1875. He was a sailor and came to New Zealand in 1898. He landed at Bluff where he deserted the ship together with six other men. Four of the men continued to Australia, but Francis Oscar, known as Oscar, stayed in New Zealand together with his friend "Big-Charlie". Oscar Lindquist went to Preservation Inlet, where he worked around goldmines. After that he started taking mail from Glenorchy to Martins Bay. It was hard and adventurous work; he travelled by foot on bush trails for many days. He went back to Bluff and became a fisherman, fishing oysters on the Dickinson brothers' boat. He was paid according to the amount of oysters, six pence for every bag. As the oyster

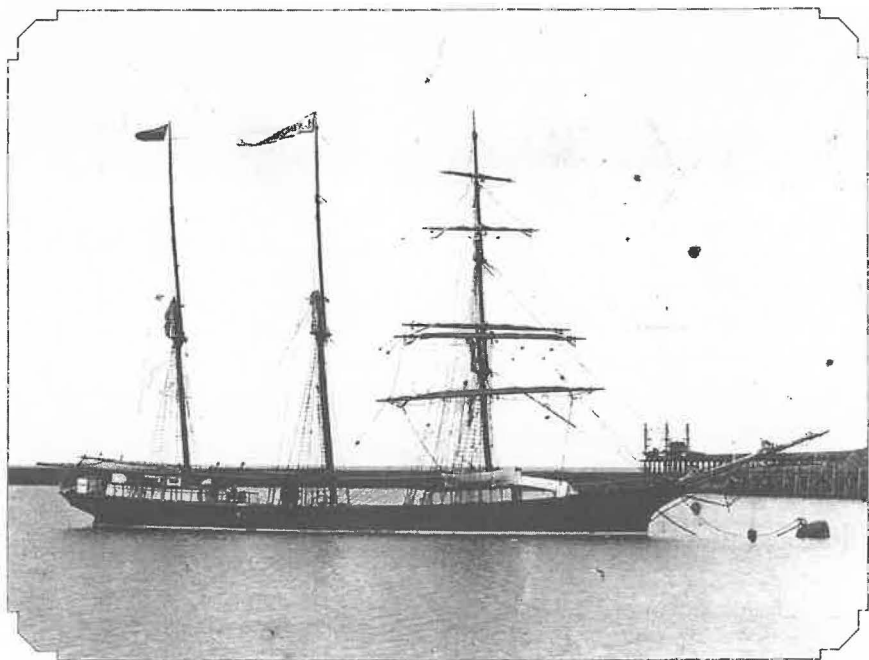
Susan and John Lindquist with their children, Dunedin 1992. John is a descendant of Francis Oscar Lindquist in the third generation. John and Susan have given a name "Finn" to their son. SI, Turku.



season lasted only eight months Oscar also worked at a woolstorehouse. He was naturalized in 1903 and received his Master Mariner's Certificate for fishing boats in 1906. He married Robine McLeod, who came from a Scottish family living in Milton. From the marriage they had four children: Mary, Francis Oscar, Hilda and James. Oscar's mothertongue was Swedish but he spoke English to his children. He died in 1955 at the age of 83 years. His wife died six months later.³⁸

The story of Captain *George Mylius* (1859–1906) ends tragically. He was born in Tampere and arrived in New Zealand in 1900. He was naturalized in 1903 and registered in Timaru. In 1902 when Captain Stone left the ship *La Bella* he recommended his mate George Mylius as a competent officer, and Mylius was promoted to Master Mariner. *La Bella* was owned by Mr. D. C. Turnbull. Captain Mylius sailed the barquentine, loaded with timber, coal, potatoes etc. between New Zealand and Australia. In 1904 the ship was stranded in Owhiro Bay by a heavy wind. Some months later *La Bella*

sailed again. In 1905 on her way from Kaipara to Warrnambool *La Bella* was wrecked on Annabella Reef at the entrance to the port of Warrnambool, Australia. The wreck of the ship resulted in the death of seven men. Captain Mylius survived but later lost his certificate of competency for twelve months. The court had found him guilty of the loss of *La Bella*, because he had tried to enter the port without the services of a pilot. Some months later Mylius was charged with the manslaughter of Harald Watson, who was one of the crew and had lost his life. However, the jury found him not guilty and he was discharged. Mylius never recovered from these tragic experiences, and on May 27th, 1906, he died of a heart attack. Mylius had not returned to New Zealand after the loss of his ship and was buried in the Melbourne General Cemetery.³⁹



La Bella, the ship of captain George Mylius. *La Bella* was wrecked on Annabella Reef at the entrance to the port of Warrnambool, Australia. From the book: Churchouse, Jack, Leonard Robertson, the Whangaroa and *La Bella*, Wellington 1982, p. 108.

Chapter VI: North Island – the Main Settlement

From among the Finnish immigrants in New Zealand one can find truly interesting and colourful stories, but also sad experiences resulting from disappointments and failures. Some of these stories are already told in previous chapters. These are stories of men and women of whom we know quite a lot from different documents and from stories which have survived among the descendants. However, very often the immigrants keep their secrets, we only know their names and perhaps the day of their arrival in New Zealand. The following stories complete the picture of the early Finnish immigrants and their adjustment to the new country.

1. Province of Auckland

The most important centre of Finnish immigrants was, and still is, the city of Auckland, but you can find Finns even in the northernmost corner of the North Island. Perhaps the northernmost point was Hokianga, where *Hjalmar August Suominen* was a farmer. He was born at Paimio in 1889. Suominen was a former seaman, who had left Finland in 1910. He deserted his ship in 1911. While being a seaman he lost all his papers and documents in Africa. In Hokianga he had a farm of 242 hectares, nearly 4000 sheep and 70 cows. Suominen was married to a Maori woman named Maungaroamore Tukuriri and had one child. He was naturalized in 1920 and visited Finland in 1929. Suominen died in 1937.¹

A little further south, we find a few Finns in the Whangarei county, for example *David Anderson* and *Jacob Erkkilä*. Andersson was born in Raahe in 1853, and he came to New Zealand in 1879. At first he was working in Onehunga at different farms and as a kauri gumdigger. Finally he settled down in Whakapara where he worked as a carpenter. In 1913 he married a woman of Maori descent named Mep Potiti. There were no children born



August Hjalmar Suominen (1889–1937) was a former seaman who came to New Zealand in 1911. Later he was a farmer in Hokianga. SI, Turku.

in that marriage. Andersson was naturalized at the age of 74 when, according to the official documents, he had absolutely nothing to live on, and the local residents were helping him to survive. The application for naturalization in 1928 was done primarily to fulfil the requirements so that he could get the old age pension.²

The story of *Jacob Erkkilä* is truly colourful. He was born in Raahe in 1855, left for sea as early as at the age of 18, and, according to his own telling, spent a few years (1873–78) in the USA and Canada. He also relates that he escaped from an Estonian ship in England and after that was hired to an English ship which was sailing to New Zealand. In Wellington he deserted that ship in 1879.

The first few years in New Zealand he spent in bush-felling and timber-cutting, earning some 300 pounds. After that he left for Australia to seek gold. There he also worked in road construction in Woodburns, New

South Wales, among other places. Most likely he visited Finland in 1892. In the same year he married an Irish girl, Annie Jennings, in MacLean, along the Clarence River. They bought a little farm on which Erkkilä was working. He was also doing some bushfelling at other farms in that area. The three daughters of the family, Hilda, Aina and Bertha, were born in McLean. The family then moved to a place called New Italy, where they set up a hotel, "The Half Way House". Obviously it was some kind of success, because another Finn, *Otto Räikkönen*, told that the local residents talked a lot about Erkkilä's big earnings. A son, Charlie, was born in New Italy. Erkkilä also had another business, washing gold in Australia. In his last 12 years in Australia Erkkilä acted as a foreman at the railways. He was naturalized in Australia in 1895. He had also a brother in that country.

Erkkilä and his family returned to New Zealand in 1903, first to Gisborne and shortly after to the Auckland area. There Jacob held a variety of jobs, including a job as an assistant to a grain dealer, and as a caretaker for St. Mary's convent. Finally he set up a little greengrocer's shop of his own in Haggerd Street. At some stage in New Zealand he also had a hotel in Whangarei. After four and a half years in Auckland Erkkilä moved on again, this time to Arkles Bay, where he was working on farms for three years. In 1925 he was already in Taurikura, where he was applying for naturalization. At some stage he moved to Greenhithe, where he was living with his youngest daughter. The last days of his life Erkkilä spent in Glen Eden, Auckland, until he died in 1938. This Finnish immigrant was known as a real athlete. He was not interested in making contacts with other Finns in New Zealand, at least not in his last years. He collected all his experiences in a diary which he kept, as told, over 50 years, but the diary has not been available for this study.³

A little colony of Finnish immigrants had developed in Dargaville and Te Kopuru, Hobson County. Most were farmers and dairyfarmers. One of them was *Johan Henrik Henriksson*, who was born at Munsala in 1864. To avoid military service in the Russian Army he left Finland at the age of 19 and travelled by train to Gothenburg and then took a sailboat to London. He was then sent to New Zealand as a part of the programme to populate the British colonies. According to the family history the ship he came to New Zealand on was the *Hermione*, which arrived in Auckland on October 18th, 1883. This was one of the rare cases when a Finn had an assisted passage from London to New Zealand.



Charles Rose was a Finnish gumdigger in northern New Zealand. His original name was Karl Wahlroos and he was born in Rauma in 1858. He left for sea in 1875 and arrived in New Zealand in 1881. He lived in Ahipara, County of Mangonui, 375 km north of Auckland, and died in Whangarei in 1926. Ministry of Foreign Affairs, Helsinki.

First Johan Henriksson worked in road making in Te Kopuru with Ellen Andrew's brothers. He also did some carting of kauri gum in the forest areas. Henriksson married Ellen Andrew in February 1891. Both the groom and the bride were then 26 years old. The young couple farmed at Te Kopuru until shifting to Tatuani and Matamata. They had three children: Henrik, John and Ellen. All the children ended up with farms – two in Matamata and one in Tatuani. John Henriksson, the son, was drowned at Bowentown in 1939. Henrik Henriksson married Beatrice Reidand, and they lived on the farm at Tatuani. They had five children, and the family still owns the farm.

Johan Henrik Henriksson was born in 1864 in Munsala and arrived in New Zealand in 1887. He was a farmer at Matamata and was married to Ellen Andrew. They had three children. Johan Henriksson, pictured here with a grandchild, died in 1927. SI, Turku.



Johan Henrik Henriksson saved up enough money to have his sister, *Maria Lovisa Henriksdotter*, come to New Zealand. Here she met another Finn, *Johan Erik Johanson Sikström*, born in 1870 at Munsala, and they married. After their marriage they returned to Finland. Johan Henriksson also helped a nephew, *August Svevar*, come to New Zealand. However, August did not like it much here, so he went off to Australia. According to the Church Records from the parish of Munsala, August Svevar went to New Zealand and disappeared on the way to Australia. Nevertheless, all this indicates that there was a chain migration from Munsala, which in Finland was a major place of departure to New Zealand.

When Johan Henriksson was naturalized in 1907 he was a farmer in Matamata. He is remembered having been a quiet and gentle person. Johan Henriksson passed away in 1927.⁴

David Davidson, who was born at Loviisa in 1872, lived in Maungaturoto. He came to New Zealand in 1894 and at first lived in the Otago area until he left for Australia, where he spent two years, probably as a goldminer. After returning to New Zealand he settled down in Maungaturoto working as a tunnelling foreman in the Public Works Department. He also kept a local hotel. Davidson got married to Ellen Rowe. According to a police report he was known as a sober and hardworking man. Davidson died in 1921.⁵

The city of Auckland itself was a gathering point for many Finns, especially former seamen, many of whom worked at the wharves. One of these seamen was *Samuel Granros*, a boatbuilder. Granros originated from the town of Rauma and had arrived in New Zealand in 1902. According to the Aliens Register in 1917 Granros was a single man. Then in the 1920's Granros visited Finland and got married there. His young wife, Hulda, was an only child. She agreed to emigrate to New Zealand with her husband only if her 17 years old friend *Jenny Polttila*, a niece of Sam Granros, could come with them. In 1924 they left Finland for New Zealand. They went via London on the ship *Ulimaroa*. With them were many Finnish emigrants bound for Australia, among them *August Lammi*, later a well-known Finnish farmer in Kulnura, New South Wales. After arriving in Auckland Samuel got work through his former contacts. At first Samuel and Jenny settled at a friend's place working in the Salvation Army. Another Finn, *Konsta Ojala*, had helped them to find accommodation. When Sam Granros was naturalized in 1922 he was a carpenter in Mount Eden, Auckland. He built and repaired boats for sale and, according to his landlady, "he was a most respectable man, strictly teetotal, inclined to be religious, played in the Central Mission Band for 10 years and was now playing in the Salvation Army Band". Granros and his family lived in Auckland until the late 1930's when they planned to return to Finland. In 1936 Mrs. Granros and the younger daughter returned while Samuel with his elder daughter were to sell their property in Auckland. However, finally Sam Granros decided to remain in Auckland, where he died in 1946.⁶

Jenny Polttila felt homesick at first, although the large city reminded her

of her hometown Rauma. She first lived with the Granros family. Jenny got work as a house maid with an elderly couple. She couldn't speak any English but she managed with a dictionary. Later on Jenny got work in a bakery at Grey Lynn, where she worked for two years. Then she opened a bakery shop of her own in Dominion Road. Her sister Naimi and Mrs. Niskanen, née Kaskisto, helped her – as well as Jenny's husband *Arthur Ruohonen*. Jenny had married Arthur, who had been a sailmaker in a Finnish sailing ship *Olivebank* and had arrived in New Zealand in December 1926. Artturi Ruohonen had been born at Tyrvää in 1898. At first Arthur was engaged on a steamer trading between New Zealand ports and San Francisco. After the marriage Arthur worked as a stevedore at Auckland Harbour, later becoming a foreman. Arthur and Jenny rented a house and later bought a house of their own. They had five children: George, Barbara, Sylvia, Norman and Frank. George became a dental



*Jenny and Arthur Ruohonen,
Auckland. SI, Turku.*

surgeon and Barbara married a Missionary and lived in Papua, New Guinea. The children never learnt Finnish, and – it is recorded – they later regretted this. Jenny Ruohonen never visited Finland. Jenny spent her last years with her son Norman and died of a heart attack in 1980. Arthur had passed away earlier.⁷

A friend of Samuel Granros in Auckland was *Konsta Ojala*. The following biography is quite a detailed history of a Finnish settler to New Zealand as related by his son and documented with other sources.

Konsta Reinikkala – later named Ojala – was born in 1880 in Virolahti on the south-east coast of Finland, known as Karelia. Young Konsta and other children were given a good upbringing in the Lutheran tradition by mother Helena. She warned especially about the evils of strong drink, and early in his life Konsta became a member of a temperance society. Because there were so many Reinikkalas, about 1901 the name was changed to Ojala. The size of the farm was considerable, 65 hectares, but much of the area consisted of forest. There were eight children at home.

At that time a number of young Finns were being conscripted into the Russian Army. The matter was often discussed at home, and when Konsta reached the age of 22 he decided that rather than being “shanghaied” into the Russian forces he would go to sea. He travelled to the Port of Hanko taking a ship to England. Although he did not understand English he made his way across the country to Cardiff, where on July 25th, 1902, he signed on the sailing ship *Marechal Suchel* as an A.B. seaman. He remained with this ship for two years sailing round the world. He left the ship in Hamburg and travelled home. After a few months on the farm Konsta decided to emigrate to America, as did the younger brother, Matti, aged 21 years. As the farm was so close to the Russian border, the conscription bogey was sufficient incentive. The two lads travelled via Helsinki to Hanko and bought tickets to New York. On arrival the brothers went up the country looking for work, but failed to find anything. They decided that Konsta, an able seaman, would return to New York to get on a sailing ship. As sailors were scarce they were soon on the high seas again. The brothers called at Rio de Janeiro and Valparaiso, eventually arriving in Australia. First they thought about settling there, but decided to go on to New Zealand. The conditions on the ship became so bad that they were determined to leave it at the first opportunity.

At Port Chalmers, in the South Island, the brothers went quietly ashore



A former seaman and later builder Konsta Ojala from Tauranga pictured during the depression of the 1930's. Konsta Ojala and the family were active in the Salvation Army. SI, Turku.

and disappeared up the hill towards the road leading north. They travelled up the coast for several days taking care not to be seen until they knew their ship had sailed again. They arrived in South Canterbury just as the potato harvest was commencing so they had no trouble in getting work. Strong able-bodied seamen were very welcome in the strenuous work of digging. However, the sailor longs for the sea, and they decided to look for another ship. The best job offered was on a coastal vessel. The brothers served together for some time until Matti decided to have another look at Australia and possibly settle there. Finally he, however, returned to Finland, got married and had six children. Konsta decided to stay in New Zealand.

Now on his own Konsta worked on coastal ships until 1907, when he settled in Auckland as a wharf labourer. He became friends with Samuel Granros. Konsta and Samuel worked together building a number of boats. They had a launch of their own. Remembering his mother's teachings Konsta attended the Auckland Central Mission. Both men became

converted to true Christian life. However, the Mission closed soon after, and Sam suggested taking a look at the Salvation Army. The Finns began attending and were made to feel at home. It was not long before Kon Ojala entered the life of the Corps and began learning a band instrument. He was given the largest, the BBG brass, which he practiced assiduously and was admitted as a full member of the Newton Band in 1910. Three times every week he carried the instrument of 12 1/2 kg from his lodgings to the hall and back. His friend Samuel also played in the Band. Konsta Ojala, a carpenter in Auckland, was naturalized in 1911.

There was a young lady singing in the Songsters who caught Kon's eye, Flora Whitheford. Her parents were English and so-called "Albertland Pioneers", who had bought their piece of land already in England. After a period of courtship Konsta and Flora were married at Ponsonby at the residence of Mrs. Rose, a friend of the bride. Their first home was at 21, Islington Street, where their first son Owen Lindsay was born. After a year or two the family had to move, and they lived for a while at One Tree Hill and Penrose. Konsta worked for the Auckland Harbour Board as a pile driver. The second son, Eric Mervyn, was born at Penrose in 1916. The family moved to Manurewa into an old house at the bottom of Mahia Road. Later a new house was built on the hill at the top of Mahia Road. At this time Grandpa and Grandma Witheford came to live with the family. Grandpa was a retired tinker, and Grandma was a specialist in the use of home-cure remedies. By this time Kon had started up his first wood and coal business in Manurewa using an old model T Ford as a delivery truck. He was doing well.

Then a Swede by the name Nordström met with the Ojala family and told Konsta of some bush sections coming up for sale near Tauranga. It was suggested that the two men could purchase a section and set up a sawmill selling the timber in the rapidly expanding town of Tauranga. It was agreed that the Ojala house in Mahia should be sold and the money used as a deposit. Mill fittings were also bought and stored at a house in Wiri to be shifted to Tauranga. In Wiri a new baby, Alan Victor, arrived.

After many difficulties they arrived in Tauranga and to the track that led out on to the Kaimai road, finally arriving at their destination. No one had lived in the little house for some time. It had an earth floor and was in disrepair. Konsta repaired the house to a liveable state. The mosquitoes were a plague, particularly for the baby. Konsta started felling trees on the

block and worked hard. The whole family tried to help clean the scrub. For a family in the forest, especially with a baby, a cow was a necessity.

During all this time Nordström was conspicuous by his absence while Kon cleared nearly five hectares of solid bush in three months. There was no income and the sawmill seemed an impossible dream. The final blow became when Nordström disappeared with all the capital and assets, including the Ford truck.

Who was this Mr. Nordström?

AMINOFF in his book of Swedes in New Zealand has many Nordströms. They were seamen or miners, except certain Carl Otto Nordström, born in Gothenburg in 1889 and arrived in New Zealand in 1914. He was a carpenter by trade and lived in Waihi and Whakatane.

The only way to get to Tauranga was by horse and gig. Konsta realized that to provide for his family he would have to get a paying job. However, there was no work in the district, so he decided to go to Tauranga to work as a carpenter making the trip to the farm only on weekends. Soon, however, the inevitable became clear. It would be necessary to walk off the farm and start again from "scratch". Konsta found a house to rent at Sulphur Point, and soon the family were together in Tauranga. For Owen it was a new experience after being in the bush without schooling for several months. At Tauranga the family started to attend the Methodist Church again. This continued till the next year 1922 when Captain and Mrs. Charles Neeve were transferred from Rotorua to the Tauranga Salvation Army. Konsta was asked to play in the Brass Band. After a year the family moved from Sulphur Point into town, which was beneficial for all concerned. In 1923 there was enough money saved to buy a quarter acre section in Edgecumbe Road to erect a building. Konsta rented an empty section next door as a cow paddock and the eldest son Owen was taught – much against his will – to milk a cow. The cows were allowed to graze on the streets for 30 shillings.

In Edgecumbe Road the fourth son Gilbert Konsta was born. Konsta and Flora felt that it would be advisable to bring up the family on a farm. After saving up they bought a 37 hectares farm at Waimapu by the road to Oropi. The house was old, but a new one was built over the old by Konsta and his son Owen. The nearest school was in Greerton, some five kilometres away, and walking was the order of the day until a horse and a gig was secured so that Owen was able to drive the others. By this time



Owen Ojala, son of Konsta Ojala, Palmerston North 1991. Owen is a Salvation Army Brigadier. SI, Turku.



Dr. Eric Ojala, son of Konsta Ojala was born in Auckland in 1916. D. Phil., University of Oxford and D. Sc. honoris causa, Massey University. He spent 20 years (1956–76) in various senior posts of the Food and Agricultural Organisation (FAO) of the United Nations, including Assistant Director General in Rome. Before his retirement in 1984 Dr. Ojala was Director of the Centre for Agricultural Policy Studies at the Massey University. SI, Turku.

Konsta was working for the Tauranga Harbour Board as a pile driver, his experience on the Auckland wharves standing him in good stead. Every day he had to travel the 11 kilometres to work. Then he bought a Model T Ford which transported the family for many years. After four boys Kon and Flora longed for a baby daughter, and it was a great joy when Doreen Grace came to complete the family. The boys grew up and left for schools, colleges and universities. Owen Ojala became the Salvation Army Brigadier and Dr. Eric M. Ojala became a distinguished agricultural scientist and Assistant Director General of the FAO in Rome 1970–76.

Konsta Ojala passed away in 1939.⁸

Arvo Storm came from Turku. He was the only child in his family. He studied in high school until at the age of 15 he joined onto the four mast sailing ship *Pampa* first going to Hamburg and then to high seas. In 1912 Arvo sailed round Cape Horn in so terrible a storm that the crew had to walk on the side of the ship. When he saw New Zealand for the first time in 1914 he thought this might be his future homeland. When the ship was in Dunedin Arvo deserted with a Finnish cook *Alekski Virtanen*. He could not speak English but he went to the Seamen's Mission where he was advised to go to Milton. He had only five shillings money and two sets of underwear. Avoiding police he duly made it to Milton and found work at the Patterson farm for a year. Then he returned to Dunedin, got a job in a window factory and had a room at the YMCA. He studied English by comparing the English, Swedish and Finnish Bibles. All of his life Arvo Storm was a religious man. In 1915 he wanted to join the Army to go to the First World War claiming to be 18, but he was rejected because of his age. Soon Arvo got an acute appendix inflammation and was advised by a doctor to go to Nelson to his friends to recover. Arvo spent one year in Nelson and then joined the New Zealand Army.

He was transported to England where he was found to be still too weak for active service. He worked in the Army Office until 1918 when he returned to New Zealand. In Wellington he was further employed by the Army until he got work at the Public Trust, chosen from 500–600 men. Arvo Storm was naturalized in 1919. He worked for one year in the Public Trust in Auckland. Then, in 1920, he decided to visit Finland. On board the ship to America Arvo met his wife Betty, and they got married in 1925. At first the young couple lived in Mt. Albert. Later on they bought a house in Orakei. They were married for 46 years until Betty died in 1971. They had a

son, Graham Storm, one of the best potters in New Zealand. Graham also worked as a University teacher. He did not speak any Finnish. After his return to New Zealand Arvo got work as an inspector at the Standard Insurance Co. Ltd where he worked until 1965. After that he had a part time job in a bank. Arvo was a sporty and strong man. He was called "Russian Lion". The reason for this may have been that he was born in St. Petersburg in 1897 from Finnish parents who later returned to Finland. Arvo Storm was very pleased with his life in New Zealand and never missed Finland much. He was very active and, for example, taught in Sunday School. After the death of his wife he remarried. Arvo Storm passed away in 1978.⁹

Another long time resident of Auckland was *Bertil Löfqvist*, born in Porvoo in 1902. During the Finnish Civil War in 1918 he fought against the Reds. He was only 16 years old at the time. After the war he did not want to return to school, so he left for sea. Löfqvist deserted his ship in Sydney and arrived in New Zealand on March 27th, 1928. His real intention when coming to New Zealand was to obtain work with the Education Department but he could not do so on account of being alien. Bertil had to start working with the Public Works Department, in road and railway construction. When he was naturalized in Wairoa in 1934 it was stated that he spoke 10 languages, of which English fluently. During the Second



Bertil Löfqvist (1902–1993) in front of his house in Auckland with his son John. SI, Turku.

World War he was in the New Zealand army, in Napier's coast guard. Löfqvist was allowed, very exceptionally, to wear his own uniform, the medals given by the Finnish Government to him for his services in the Civil War. After the war Bertil was employed by the Government, he was a translator in the Internal Affairs Department in Wellington. He moved to Auckland in 1950 and worked in the Education and the Statistics Departments. He continued his translation work, translating into English some Finnish stories by Zacharias Topelius. Löfqvist became a prominent member of the Finnish community in Auckland. He was very musical, he sang and even composed. Löfqvist was married and had three children. Bertil Löfqvist died in 1993.¹⁰

Peter Groos, born in Viipuri in 1879, was a tailor, who in 1913 owned a piece of land in Bayswater and had rented a site and a building in Queen Street for his business. At that time there were 15 assistants working for Groos, so he must have been quite successful with his tailoring business.¹¹

Besides Jenny Polttila there were other Finnish women in Auckland. *Alice Ingeborg Wik* was one of them. She had been born at Munsala in 1914 and had come from Australia to New Zealand with her family. The family had settled down on a farm at Kariotahi, Waiuku. After her parents died Alice moved to Auckland in 1934, where she first was a probationary nurse at Auckland Hospital. After that she got a job as a dental nurse with a Mr. Graham in Bowen Street. Alice was nationalized in 1937. Her brother, *Birger Wilhelm*, took care of the farm in Waiuku for a while, but he died in 1934.¹²

Of Finnish girls in Auckland we can also mention *Alli Kaskisto*, born at Rauma in 1911. She had come to New Zealand in 1931. At first she worked as a hospital attendant in Auckland. Alli wanted to study to become a trained nurse, but at that time her English was not good enough. After two years in hospital she got a job as a housekeeper with a dentist. Later on she married *Lauri Niskanen*, a Finn who had earlier been a miner in Australia, Fiji and New Guinea. After marriage they moved to Fiji for two years. After that they returned to Auckland where Lauri was a tunnelling labourer for Public Works Department. They had two daughters: Henna Eeva, b. 1946, and Helen Alli, b. 1951. Lauri Niskanen died in 1962. Mrs. Niskanen lived in Auckland until her death in 1995.¹³

Oscar Hill (former Tobiasson), brother of Aino Thomson in Gisborne, arrived in New Zealand in 1913 and changed his name at the same time. Perhaps the name Tobiasson was too difficult for English speaking people.



Alli Kaskisto, born in Rauma in 1911, came to New Zealand in 1931. She later married a Finn, Lauri Niskanen. Alli Niskanen died in 1995 in Auckland. SI, Turku.

Oscar first worked on a farm in Bitsen Bay near Christchurch before moving to Dargaville. After a short while he returned to the Finnish colony in Little River but decided he did not want to settle there either. Next stop was Gisborne and its environments where Oscar worked at mills and timber-cutting. He spent seven years there, until he permanently settled down in Auckland in 1922. At first he worked at the harbour, but then began constructing houses in and around the city, e.g. with the Ginter Brothers Company. He married a New Zealander, Florence Pascoe, who had two sons from a previous marriage. Oscar and Florence had one daughter. During the First World War Hill was a member of E.P.S.-organization and was an auxiliary fireman. When applying for naturalization in 1947 he mentioned that his economic situation was good; he owned a house and had a reasonable sum of money in the bank. Oscar died in 1966 in New Lynn.¹⁴

As former seamen many Finns were attracted to the free lifestyle of gum digging in northern New Zealand. *Johan Henry Hapala* was born in Oulu in 1859. He arrived in New Zealand in 1892 in the American Barque *Nellie Brett* like Johan Henry Aspen. Aspen was the English translation of Haapala. He went gum digging at Ta Rapuna (sic) and remained there until 1897 when he moved to Awhitu, where he worked until 1906. From

1906 to 1910 Hapala lived at Onehunga, Auckland, employed by the Railways Department. Then he moved to Papa Pura (sic) again for gum digging for one year and then in the same pursuit to Overhead for the years 1910–13. Once in December, 1913, Hapala was running to catch a train at the Auckland Railway Station when he lost his footing and struck his head on the pavement, and as a result he sustained major leg injuries and was crippled. He was in hospital until September 14th, 1914. Hapala was a widower, having married Annie Träsk, a widow of another Finn, at Awhitu in 1909. His wife's first husband *Erik Johannes Träsk* had been born in 1870 at Munsala, Finland, or at least in Swedish Ostrobothnia, and had arrived in New Zealand about 1893–94. In 1901 Träsk had married Annie MacClaverty Speer, born in Ireland in 1874. They had two daughters, Eunice (1905–1979) and Martha (1901–1962). Erik Johannes Träsk died in 1906 in Auckland. Johan Henry Hapala and Annie Träsk had a son Frederick Hapala (1909–1976). After the accident – his wife had died in 1910 – Johan Henry Hapala spent the rest of his life in the Knox Home for Incurables in Auckland and died in 1931.¹⁵

Waiuku, south of Auckland, had become a sort of centre for Finnish immigrant farmers. There lived e.g. *Anders Wilhelm Holmberg*, who had been born at Munsala in 1898. He had arrived in New Zealand in 1921 with his sister and her husband. Anders Wilhelm owned a house and seven cows on Glenbrook Road. During the Second World War he was a member of the Waiuku Home Guard and because of that he was relieved in 1944 from the Aliens Emergency Regulations. He married a Finnish girl, *Signe Maria Holm*, who had been born in 1907 in Salt Lake City, USA, while her family had been staying there for a while. Anders Wilhelm and Signe had two children: Eric, b. 1941, and Anne Greta, b. 1942. According to the parish register of Munsala, Anders Wilhelm Holmberg was the foster child of Anders Wilhelm Eriksson, living in Christchurch. Anders Wilhelm Eriksson was a brother of Jacob Leander Eriksson, a farmer in Waiuku. Anders Wilhelm Holmberg died in 1968.¹⁶

Signe Maria's father, *Matt Alarik Holm*, was born at Munsala in 1881. He moved to the United States, Salt Lake City, where he was married in 1903 to *Anna Beata Antus*, born at Vöyri, Finland, in 1878. Their two eldest daughters were born in Salt Lake City: Helen Anne in 1905 and Signe Maria in 1907. Sometime between the years 1907 and 1909 the family must have returned to Munsala, because their sons Karl Sigfrid (1909) and

Johannes Sigurd (1910) were born there. The first time Matt Alarik came to New Zealand was in 1913. Then he was working in Pigeon Bay, e.g. for Mr. Hay. In 1919 he returned to Finland and the youngest son Erik Emanuel was born in 1920. The whole family moved then to New Zealand in 1932, the oldest son Karl had already arrived a few years earlier. At the end of 1932 family was living in Wanganui, but by the next spring, when they were naturalized, they were living in Te Awamutu. In 1943 Matt Alarik and Anna Beata moved to a farm in Ohura. Matt died in 1946, Anna Beata in 1966. The farm was then in the care of son Johannes until the year 1960, when he moved to Pukekohe. Johannes wanted to find his roots and visited Finland in 1969. There he met *Margareta Backlund* from Vaasa, and they got married later. The couple lived on a farm in Pukekawa until 1984, when Johannes sold the place, and the Holms lived in Pukekohe. Johannes Holm died in 1993.¹⁷



Margareta and Johannes Holm. Johannes Holm was born at Munsala and arrived in New Zealand in 1932. He was a farmer at Te Awamutu. In 1969 Johannes Holm visited Finland and met Margareta, who arrived in New Zealand in 1972. SI, Turku.

Matt Alarik Holm had two brothers in New Zealand: Eric Johan, who lived with his three sons in Taranaki area and Anders Wilhelm, born in 1870. A love of travelling and moving to new places must have been in the blood of the Holm family men, while the father of Matt Alarik, Erik Johan Holm (1843–1916) also spent some time in Pigeon Bay. He had already lived in America in 1870's and in South Africa in 1895–98. However, his journeys ended in Munsala, where he died.¹⁸

Peter Newton's book *Big Country of the South* tells about the Holm brothers:

"Don Burke recalls that at one time a gang of Russian Finns came their bushwhacking and fencing; two of them Matt and Jack "Holmes", could speak a little English and they were put in charge. Two blocks on the property are still known as "Matt's" and "Jack's" paddocks."¹⁹

Jacob Leander Erikson has already been mentioned. With his wife *Brita Lovisa* (née Fagernäs) and his family he arrived in New Zealand in 1921, although he himself had been in New Zealand earlier. Jacob Leander came for the first time in 1912 and first went to see his relatives in Christchurch. He did not stay there for long and went up north with his brothers Anders Wilhelm and Otto for bushfelling. All three brothers returned to Finland in 1917 because of the war. The family history relates that the brothers had an uncle in San Francisco whom they visited on the way. Anders Wilhelm and Jacob Leander both returned to New Zealand in 1921. On their journey out they had to stay in London for two months, because there was a harbourstrike going on. The family stayed in Auckland while Anders Wilhelm and Jacob Leander went to Christchurch seeking work. Anders Wilhelm decided to stay there, but Jacob Leander considered the journey from Auckland to Christchurch too long for his children and returned to the North.

Jacob Leander Erikson had five children, all of whom, except the youngest, were born in Finland: Jakob Gunnar, b. 1909; Elvi Lovisa, b. 1910; Dagmar Lise, b. 1912; Eric Sven, b. 1918 and Oscar Ole, b. 1923. The family moved to Waiuku, as they knew a Finnish farmer there, *Robert Sundell*. At that time Robert Sundell was the only Finn in that area. Jacob Leander soon got a job in railway construction but later, in 1923 or 1924, they bought Robert Sundell's farm, Sundell having moved to Australia. The farm was so small that Jacob Leander had to go on working on the railways.



"Miss Ruthfield" was the name of the second airplane built by electrician Jacob Gunnar Eriksson (standing in the middle), a son of Jacob Leander, in the depression years of the early 1930's. Photo Rex Eriksson.

Jacob Leander's eldest son, Jakob Gunnar, was an electrician and built three aeroplanes during the depression in the 1930's as a hobby. The story goes that at least one of them could even fly! He married Molly Fisher Duthie and they had three sons. Son Rex (b. 1942) visited Munsala in 1965 while he was studying the Swedish language in Sweden. Jakob Gunnar died in Waiuku in 1969. Sister Elvi Lovisa married David Holden and stayed in the Waiuku area.²⁰

So many of the Finns in Waiuku were related to each other, sometimes in complicated ways. This made it easier for Finnish immigrants to move to the new country knowing that relatives and a Finnish or Swedish speaking community could be found there.

Some Finns also lived in Raglan County. *Anton Herman Fohrstrom* was born in Inkoo in 1868. He arrived in New Zealand in 1888. The family history relates that Anton first appeared on the scene at a dance in Cambridge where he met Florence Jane Bell. Florence was engaged to be married but was attracted to the tall Finn and broke off her engagement.

Engineer Rex Eriksson, grandson of Jacob Leander Eriksson, at his workshop in Waiuku 1991. Rex Eriksson visited the village of Vexala in Munsala as a young student in 1965. When he walked along the village road he heard some old women talk to each other: "Britas pojkes pojke har kommit hem." (Brita's grandson has come home). SI, Turku.



This happened in 1911 or 1912. Anton had been mining gold at Waikino. For some reason he took the name of Harry Anderson, maybe he had even arrived in New Zealand under this name. Anton Fohrström and Florence Bell were married at Kaipaki, Cambridge, on April 9th, 1913. Their marriage certificate gives Anton's age as 42 – two years younger than his real age. Florence was 23. Anton worked at the sawmill in Kaipaki. They had two children: Herman Oswald, born in 1914, and Florence Alma, born in 1915. Anton contracted TB from working in the gold mine and he died on July 19th, 1922, at Cambridge. Florence also contracted TB when nursing him, and she died on January 28th, 1926. They are both buried at Pukerimu cemetery in Cambridge.²¹

Another Finn in Raglan area was *Johannes Jern*, born in Vaasa in 1862. He had left for sea in 1883 on a ship named the *Carl Gustaf I*. He got ashore from this ship in that same year in America. The next information concerning Johannes Jern is from 1892, when he got married with Herminia Augusta Sochtig in Australia. The couple seem to have come to New Zealand sometime after that, as in 1894 they had a child in Long Gully.

However, in 1903 Johannes married again, this time an Australian, Sarah Ellen Tidyman, in Ohinewai. Three sons were born: George, David, born in 1904, and Albert Johannes, born in 1907. David married Iola Ellen Freer, and they had two children: Ellen Joyce and Sydney Francis. Albert Johannes married Kathleen Rogers, and they had three children: Noeline Patricia, Albert Arthur Greame and Glenise Margaret.

The family lived in their small cottage in Ngaruawahia, on the Waikato River. Johannes's main occupation was to sew the tops of Chaff sacks. He also had a bit of land which he farmed. Johannes was naturalized in 1911, when he was living in Swanson. He died in Auckland in 1913.²²

Rakel Ruohonen, who had been born in 1912 at Perniö, Finland, came to New Zealand in 1939. Her fiancé, Mr. Hancock, had also been born in Finland but was a British citizen. Hancock graduated from Helsinki



Rakel Hancock (née Ruohonen), born at Perniö in 1912, in front of her house in Auckland in 1988. SI, Turku.

University and was an agronomist. He decided to move to New Zealand and Rakel followed him. The Second World War was just beginning, and it was difficult for Rakel to get permission to enter the country. At first she got only a month's visa and during that time she had to marry a New Zealander or an Englishman. Rakel and Hancock's wedding took place in Auckland on the same day as she arrived in New Zealand.

The couple first moved to Maxwelltown to a sheepfarm, from where they soon moved to Australia. Despite their best efforts they failed to find work in Sydney. After that they hitchhiked to Gympie, where they got a job on a farm. They stayed in Gympie only for three months and returned to Sydney. There the employment situation was as bad as ever, and the Hancocks used their last money to buy a first class ticket to New Zealand.

In New Zealand they moved to Te Kuiti, where Mr. Hancock was doing farm work. The eldest son was born there. After that they moved to Ruakura, where he got a job on the state's research farm as a technician. However, after some time he went to Tonga as an agricultural adviser. Rakel and their son stayed in Ruakura, where a daughter was born. Altogether they had four children. After a year Mr. Hancock returned from Tonga and worked as a research officer in Ruakura. Later he was employed by the World Bank and left New Zealand. The rest of the family stayed in Ruakura until they moved to Hamilton. Rakel Hancock moved to Auckland in 1985.²³

Oscar William Porola lived in Arapuni, County of Matamata. He had been born at Kokemäki in 1879. In 1912 Oscar had left his wife and family and moved to Canada, where he had been naturalized. His wife died in Finland in 1923. Porola arrived in New Zealand in 1925 on the s/s *Aorangi*. He spent the first couple of months in Morrinsville working on different farms. After that he settled in Arapuni where he was working in a company owned by Sir W. G. Armstrong Whitworth until 1927. Then he was injured so badly that he could not work for a year. After that Porola worked for the Public Works Department until 1932 when he was fired because of the depression. Porola was making his living doing gardening and shoerepairing until he was hired again by the Public Works Department.²⁴

The prominent Finns in the Bay of Plenty area were the *Sundell* and *Hermansson* families living in Opotiki. Many of the early Finns in New Zealand came from the small parish of Munsala in Swedish-speaking

Ostrobothnia. The "History of Munsala" relates that the first Munsala resident in New Zealand was *Erik Johan Sundell*, who sailed around the world and jumped off his ship in New Zealand. He worked on a farm until he bought a grass seed farm of his own. After 6–7 years he returned to Munsala. However, Erik Sundell soon returned to New Zealand with three brothers and a friend. This took place sometime in the 1870's.

According to the family history Erik Sundell left his ship at Lyttelton and worked on Mr. Hay's farm at Pigeon Bay. As the news of the uncle's experiences spread to Munsala, a couple of his brothers and other Finns left for New Zealand. On Banks Peninsula they were working on sheep stations, some did share milking on Hay's land, supplying milk to the Pigeon Bay cheese factory. Some bought land of their own. As much land was being cleared in the North Island there was a huge demand for grass seed. A particular grass "cocksfoot" grew well on Banks Peninsula. Hand reaping of the seed heads gave seasonal employment for many workers. Probably at Erik Sundell's invitation a relative and Anders Erikson's brother, *Edward Gabrielson Sundell*, and *Jacob Gabrielson Sundell* took passports in 1888 to New Zealand together with six others from the same Munsala parish. From the passenger list at Gothenburg, Sweden, on September 6th, 1888, it appears that the whole group consisted of 13 persons – including three women. The destination was Lyttelton, except for two it was Auckland. The oldest was Jacob Sundell, 34 years, and the youngest Edward Sundell, only 16 years – as well as another boy. According to Hilda Sundell, the wife of Edward Sundell, interviewed at the age of 93 in 1972 at Opotiki, the men from Munsala worked on sheep stations. There were also women among them. Most of them went back to Finland. A man called Erikson stayed as he had been sea sick and did not want to go on board any more.

After some years in New Zealand Edward Sundell returned to Finland. Later he went to America and from there to the gold mines in Johannesburg, South Africa, at the turn of the century. Here Edward Sundell had a serious accident in a mine when he was caught between the moving lift and the side of the shaft. His hips were twisted and he remained disabled for the rest of his life. According to the daughter Elvira Sundell his disability became more noticeable as he grew older, after all the hard work of chopping bush in New Zealand. In spite of this injury he became strong enough to be selected in a Finnish tug-of-war team in South

Edward Sundell was born at Munsala in 1872. Even as a young man he was in New Zealand. Then he returned to Finland and went to South Africa at the turn of the century. In Johannesburg he married Hilda Hermanson from Kokkola. In 1912 they came to Finland as the husband wanted to see the Olympic Games in Stockholm. In 1917 the family emigrated to New Zealand. SI, Turku.



Africa. In 1905 in Johannesburg Edward Sundell married *Hilda Sofia Hermanson* from Kokkola. Hilda's brother *Gustav Hermanson* was a good friend of Edward Sundell. Hilda was a waitress in a nice café in Johannesburg. She had two brothers and a sister in South Africa. In 1912 Edward Sundell and Gustav Hermanson wanted to see the Stockholm Olympics so the family returned via Sweden to Finland.

The Sundells first lived in Helsinki, but Edward Sundell had "the spirit of an emigrant", and consequently in October, 1917, Edward and Hilda Sundell left for New Zealand via San Francisco with the two children, Elvira and Hugo. Until 1906 Edward Sundell had used the name Erikson. He had a brother in Christchurch, Andrew Erikson with eight children, all boys. Four of them went to the First World War, two to Gallipoli.

The Sundells first went to see the brother at Little River. At Banks



Edward Sundell's farm at Takaputahi was called "Vexala". There he built this little house from Rimu tree boards. His daughter Elvira Sundell recalls: "After my father felled the first block of bush (about 1921–22) with the help of his nephew Anders Sundell from Vexala, they felled a large Rimu tree, pitsawed it into boards and built this little house (one big living room and a fainsezad (sic) bedroom for 3 beds). Upstairs – the ladds outside – was room for 2 or 3 beds. The block of land felled that year by dad and Andrew became called Andy's paddock, Andy's field. The nephew, he had the help of Jakob Erikson from Vexala. That block became known as Jakob's paddock. I am not sure what part Andrew and Jacob respectly played in the building of the house. This farm was called 'Vexala' ". SI, Turku.

Peninsula they worked on grass seed farms. After grass cutting the men worked in the North Island, logging around the Gisborne area. Soon the Sundell family settled in Napier. Edward Sundell was a carpenter, and Mrs. Sundell worked in a hospital where she was regarded as a German. They could not get their money out from Finland for five years. When it could be done, it was only 1/8 of the original value. Edward Sundell wanted to settle on land. Being a naturalized British citizen – most likely in South Africa – Sundell was able to apply for Crown Land. In the early years of the century the Government had bought 8,000 hectares from the Maori at Takaputahi. After surveying and the cutting of access roads, the land was cut into blocks for ballot at 30 shillings per acre. In 1920 Sundell was lucky to draw a winning lot to nearly 400 hectares at Takaputahi 35 km from Opotiki. At this time Mrs. Sundell was working in a cap factory in

Before his departure for New Zealand in 1921 Gustav Alexander Hermanson was a Billiard Room owner in Viipuri, pictured here in 1921. Hermanson had been in the Johannesburg goldmines in South Africa earlier and had obviously made some money there. SI, Turku.



Napier. Edward started to work on the farm, which was called "Vexala" after the home village in Finland. Building a house and clearing the bush was hard work. The land was not too good. In the beginning there were 500 sheep, but when an adjoining block was bought it raised the number of sheep to 1,000. Mrs. Sundell and the two children lived in Napier until about 1928.

In 1921 Mr. *Gustav Hermanson*, his wife Regina Sofia and son Harry (born in 1917) arrived from Viipuri, Finland. Gustav was Mrs. Sundell's brother. They were to become co-owners of the farm. Gustav had previously spent some time in South Africa. He owned a billiard saloon in Viipuri. The Hermansons settled in Opotiki where Harry went to school, and Mrs. Hermanson used to take care of people's homes while they were away, e.g. in England. After Hermanson's arrival all the seven people lived

occasionally in the "lighthouse" as the modest, hill-top building was called. The Sundells and Hermansons mixed well with local people including the Maori. The Finns spoke English with a "Scandy accent" but the wives had stronger accents. It is related that Mrs. Sundell was not home sick. She did, however, prefer South Africa's bright sunshine to the rain of New Zealand. Edward Sundell and Gustav Hermanson occasionally employed relatives and other Finns, e.g. Bill Holmberg, who later settled in Waiuku. The farm was a joint venture, and when another block was bought there were 760 hectares for sheep. When Gustav A. Hermanson was naturalized in 1927 he was employed as a farm hand for Edward Sundell at Toatoa. Later the Hermansons bought land of their own. However in 1932 Gustav Hermanson died at the age of 58 of TB, probably caused by the years spent in South African mines.

His son Harry continued farming with his mother. He had 4,000 wintering-over sheep and 800 cattle. The Sundells had 2,000 sheep and 400



Harry Hermanson, who was 4 years old when he arrived in New Zealand in 1921, was married to May McGhee of partly Maori origin. Pictured in 1991. SI, Turku.

cattle on 800 hectares. Harry was land-hungry and gradually bought more land. In 1943 he bought a large farm at Waiaua 14 km from Opotiki. On his retirement in 1985 he had 3,340 hectares. In addition Harry was a log and bush contractor having a couple of men working for him. Harry Hermanson was a member of the Opotiki County Council 1950 to 1965, the East Coast Pest Board 1963 to 1986 and on the selection committee of the National Party East Cape Electorate until 1991. He belonged to the Presbyterian Church. Harry Hermanson married May McGhee, a half-Irish, half-Maori blooded New Zealander, a nurse by profession. Their son Phillip Hermanson owns Vexala Lands Ltd while Vexala Forest Ltd has family and other shareholders. Their daughter Ruth Hermanson is a quarter-Maori, quarter-Irish and half-Finnish Swede. Ruth Hermanson was Miss Geyserland in 1970 and a finalist in Miss New Zealand beauty contest. When Harry's mother Regina Hermanson died in 1985, Harry and



Miss Ruth Hermanson was chosen as Miss Geyserland in 1970. SI, Turku.



Elvira Sundell (b. 1906), daughter of Edward Sundell, lives at Waiotahi Beach near Opotiki. SI, Turku.

May moved to her house in Opotiki and sold their farm in Waiaua to their son Phillip. Another son, Alan, was a carpenter and lived at Ohope Beach (1992).

Hugo, from the Sundell family, born in South Africa in 1907, did not like farming and became an auto fitter. He left for India and died in Bombay in 1939 when a car exploded. Edward Sundell died in 1955. Daughter Elvira Sundell, born in South Africa in 1906, continued farming until the 1970's when she settled with her mother Hilda Sofia Sundell in Opotiki. The mother died in 1976, and Elvira started to travel extensively making e.g. visits to Finland to meet relatives. Elvira Sundell lives at Waiotahi Beach near Opotiki.²⁵

There is information about two Finns living in Waitomo County, namely *Anders Wilhelm Rutas* and *August Sundvik*.

Rutas had been born at Vexala 1891 and come to New Zealand on the ship *Marama* in 1913. After working for two years at Mr. Hay's farm at Pigeon Bay he moved to Taringamotu and Gisborne. In 1936 Rutas settled

in Waimiha where he was employed at the Boon Brothers' mill. Rutas was a single man – he was also known by the name of Andrew Wilson.²⁶

August Sundvik was born in Vaasa in 1877. He arrived in Wellington on the s/s *Austral* in 1896. After doing some bushfelling for various farmers he went to the Te Kuiti area. Next year he was employed by the Surveying Office, for which he worked until 1914 when he began to till the soil of his own farm. Sundvik was married to Elsie Maude Bernard at Hawera. They had five children: Edith Margaret, b. 1920, Arthur Neil, b. 1923, Ola Jessie, b. 1925, Eric Bernard, b. 1927, and Frank Wilson, b. 1930. August Sundvik died in 1937.²⁷

2. Hawkes Bay Province

The "Finnish centre" of Hawkes Bay was Gisborne. *Otto Walfrid Rock* (formerly Kallio) settled here. He had arrived in 1909 in Wellington from



Fred Rock (1922–92) from Gisborne was a blond second generation Finn in New Zealand. Fred Rock worked for the New Zealand Post Office. SI, Turku.

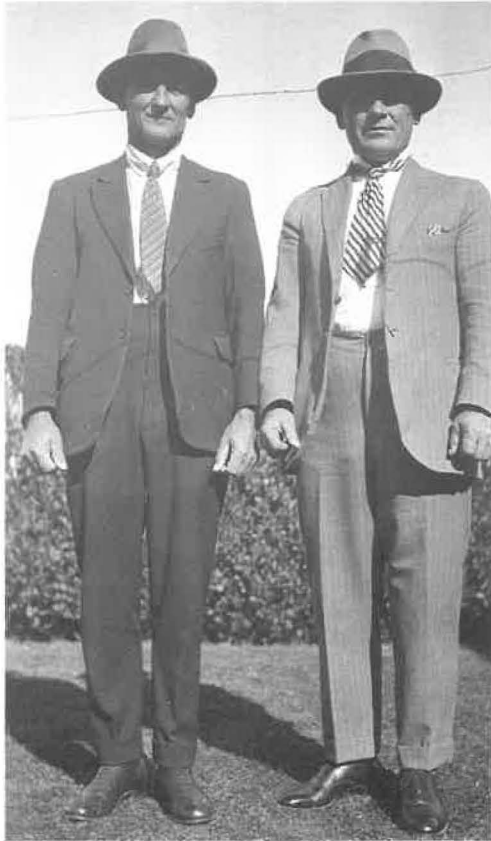
where he had moved to Mr. Hay's farm at Pigeon Bay and then to another farm in Little River. After a short while there he returned to the North Island and worked at different farms until settling in Dargaville for two years. There he worked from 1913 to 1915 for a Finnish farmer, *James Hemming Carppe*, at Awakino Point. He also worked in railway construction but finally moved to the Gisborne area to do bushfelling and various kinds of farmwork. He bought a farm of his own in Matakana but later moved to Gisborne, where he worked for the Brick & Pipe Company. Otto Rock died in 1950.

While in Dargaville Otto Rock had married *Adina Ida Koskinen* in 1912. She had been born in Finland in 1889. Otto and Adina had two children: Mirjam, b. 1912, and Frederick, b. 1922. Frederick's daughter Karen has reclaimed the old family name of Kallio.

Adina Koskinen had come to New Zealand with her brothers Edwin and Einar. They had changed their name to *Thomson*. Senni, a sister of Adina, moved to New Zealand and married a Finn named *Joonas Tilliacus*, born in Viipuri in 1881.²⁸ A daughter, Kerttuli, was born – she also married a Finn, *Harry Nylund*. Harry had been born in 1916 in Tammissaari and had lived from 1917 to 1919 with his family in San Francisco. After the Civil War in Finland had ended the family had returned home.

When Harry was fourteen, he left for sea, first to become a coast guard. In 1938 Harry and his younger brother Åke sailed in a barque *Killoran* to New Zealand. Harry had beriberi and had to stay in New Zealand, where he met Kerttuli Tilliacus and they married. Harry first worked on several farms until he got a job on the s/s *Kaitanga*. During the Second World War Harry worked on a Norwegian tanker. After the marriage the Nylunds moved to Napier, where Harry worked at the harbour. Later on they moved to Gisborne, where Harry Nylund died in 1990.²⁹

Otto Rock's brother, *Frans Mikael*, born in 1881, arrived in New Zealand in 1911. His journey was long and difficult. First he walked from Taivalkoski to Imatra, and then travelled by train to Viipuri to get a passport. From Viipuri the journey continued to Hanko from where the ship *Arcturus* sailed to Copenhagen. From Copenhagen Frans Mikael journeyed via Hamburg to London and got on board the ship *Tangarira*. After stopping in Tenerife, Cape Town, Tasmania and Wellington the ship finally reached Auckland harbour. Frans Mikael went straight to his brother, who was then working for Mr. Carppe. In Finland Frans had



Frans Rock from Australia visited his brother Otto Rock in Gisborne, New Zealand in 1929. SI, Turku.

worked on papermachines but in New Zealand he had to work in forestry and in road and railway construction. He often worked with his brother, one reason probably being his rather poor English. However, Frans did not settle permanently in New Zealand but moved to Queensland, Australia, in 1916, where his family from Finland joined him. Frans Mikael died in Atherton, Queensland in 1934.³⁰

John Edwin Koskinen/Thomson was born in 1891 in Viipuri. He arrived in Wellington on the *Araiwa* in 1909. His sister, Adina Ida, had evidently arrived a year before her aunt, who was Sofia Henrickson, the wife of Eric Suderlund in Little River. Edwin first worked as a milker on the dairy



The Wedding Photo of Edwin and Aino Thomson, Gisborne 1917. SI, Turku.

farms in Pigeon Bay and German Bay. After that he worked for a year in forestry and on construction projects in North Island until returning to Little River. In 1914 he finally arrived in the Gisborne area and worked on farms around the city for four years. Then he bought a farm of his own in Warkworth, but after a year he moved back to Gisborne and finally ended up in a local freezing works grading hides.

Edwin married a Finnish girl *Aino Karoliina Tobiasson* in 1917. Aino had been born at Ruokolahti in 1891. They had known each other since childhood having gone to the same school. Aino got to New Zealand almost by accident. A girl living in the same village was hired as a maid to a farm in New Zealand. However, in the end the girl was too afraid to leave, so Aino went on her behalf, because a ticket had already been paid. Aino worked on several farms in the South Island until she moved to Gisborne where she met Edwin again. The Thomsons had a daughter, Mary, and two adopted sons. In 1927 they sold their house and travelled to Finland with a firm decision to stay there. The dream was shattered,



Aino and Edwin Thomson in front of their house in Gisborne in 1974. SI, Turku.

however, as the beginning of the economic depression and a cold winter awaited them. The Thomsons moved back to Gisborne, where Edwin continued his work in freezing works until he retired in 1952. He died in 1976. One of their sons, Ray Thomson, is living in Opotiki.³¹

Eino Kinnunen "Antesson", born in Viipuri in 1898, also went to Gisborne with his wife *Anna-Elina Mansikka* of Imatra. His sister had married Aino Thomson's brother in Finland and, while visiting Finland, the Thomsons persuaded them to move to New Zealand in 1928. The Kinnunen family changed their name to Anderson as there were so many problems with the Finnish name. The family first lived with the Thomsons, but then Eino got a job as a blacksmith at the mill in Motuhora near Matawai. When the mill was closed in 1934 the family returned to Gisborne, where Eino did some temporary jobs until 1937 when he was offered a job at Henderson's mill in Kaimai. The family settled there for nine years, as Eino secured a permanent job as a blacksmith at the mill.



Elina Anderson's 75th anniversary in Rotorua. SI, Turku.

There were four children in the family: daughters Elvi and Ella and Gisborne-born boys Eric and Al Edwin. The boys had to start their schooling, and the family moved back to Gisborne. When Eino died shortly after, in 1946, the mother and her sons moved to Rotorua where Elvi lived. Anna-Elina died there in 1974. The youngest son Edwin Anderson visited Finland in 1963 and met his cousin Taimi Mansikka: as a result of that meeting they married. They have two sons: Thomas and Mark. On July 15th, 1995, the latter married in Finland a girl from Lappeenranta. Edwin's family is now living in Ngongotaha. Elvi died in Rotorua in 1968. She had two children, Margaret and Leslye. Ella has one son, Terry, and Eric has three sons: Ross, Neil and Keith.³²

Elias Kytölä was born at Alavus in 1885. He was a sailor at the Baltic Sea, sailing between England and Germany. Later he was a postman at Uusikaarlepyy until 1916, when he left for New Zealand. The family did not hear anything from the father for seven years. Then Elias asked them



Before his departure for New Zealand in 1916, Elias Kytölä was a postman in Uusikaarlepyy. The family arrived later, in 1927. SI, Turku.

to come to New Zealand. The family consisted of mother Senja, born in 1888, daughter Aili Tellervo, born in 1910, son Kauko Oswald, born in 1913 and the most recent newcomer, Sonja Margareta, born in 1926. Her real father was a man named Häggblom from Pietarsaari.

The family left Finland in 1926 on the *Ionic* via England and Panama Canal for Auckland. The journey took over five weeks and cost 39 pounds, which Elias paid. In Gisborne the family first lived in Mary Street until they moved to Motuhora. After that they moved to Stanley Road and further to Riverside Road. At first Elias did factory work but from 1932 he sold lumber using a horse and a cart. During the last years before his retirement he did haymaking and worked for the County Council as a

roadman. After his death in 1949 the widow moved to Birrell Street. In 1928 the eldest daughter Aili got married to an Australian, Nathaniel White, whom she had met on the boat on the way to New Zealand. The couple moved to Melbourne in 1937, and for some time they also lived on Nauru Island. Aili divorced and got married again in 1955, this time to George Masters. The son, Kauko Oswald, sold fruit and worked for a while for Nathaniel White. He married Lynda May Williams in 1935. The youngest daughter, Sonja, married George HowChow of Chinese descent in 1948, and they are living in Gisborne.³³

The journey of the two *Henriksson* brothers from Loviisa, *Karl Magnus*, born in 1867, and *Johan Richard*, born in 1870, also took them to Gisborne. The elder, Karl Magnus, was a sailor, who was discharged in Rochefort in 1891. He arrived in Gisborne in 1892. In 1903 he married a local girl, Amelia Holford, and they had two daughters, Maud and Hilda. Hilda lived with her parents and never married. Maud's daughter, Joy Milmine, has been eager to find her Finnish roots. The family of Karl Magnus owned a fish shop and a fishing boat. Karl Magnus was naturalized in 1905.³⁴

The younger brother, Johan Richard, worked in 1890's as an assistant and clerk in several companies in Helsinki, until he decided to leave Finland. In 1901 he left via London for New Zealand on board the *s/s Austral*. However, there is no information about him in the naturalization records. Perhaps he was never naturalized and he might have left the country.³⁵

In the Cook County there also lived a man called *Anders (Andrew) Neilson*, born at Lohtaja in 1863. He arrived in Wellington on the *s/s Kaikoura* in 1891. He did all kinds of farm work in different parts of the North Island for nearly 40 years! Finally in 1928 he settled in Willowflat, near Gisborne and began to make his living by fishing. Neilson had got married in 1888 in Finland, but his wife did not want to come to New Zealand because of the rough sea journey. Neilson, however, sent money regularly to his wife until she died in 1912. He also had two children, of whom one son moved later to America. Andrew Neilson had applied for naturalization for the first time in 1914 but with the war going on, the application had been turned down. He applied again in 1919, but the application was rejected because he was considered to be German-minded. Finally he was naturalized in 1932.³⁶

Frank Evert Carlson lived in Wairoa. He had been born at Närpiö in 1884. He had left Finland in 1907 when he had emigrated to America. From there

he came to New Zealand in 1925 with his father. His first job was in Wairoa hospital as a doorman. After that he worked for three years on Mr. Hodgson's Kiwi Station as a farm labourer. Later he worked for the Public Works Department. Frank was single and took care of his sick father, Carl Mickelsson. Frank had thought of returning to America and so had kept his American citizenship. However, in 1931 he applied for naturalization in New Zealand. In the police report Frank E. Carlson was described as a hard-working man, but at the same time also a hard-drinking man. He had even been convicted and fined twice for the latter.³⁷

Napier was the hometown of *Uno T. Gideon Widerström*, who was born in Vaasa in 1856. At an early age he had left for sea and had sailed under many different flags, e.g. in English and in American ships. He arrived in New Zealand in 1883. Uno also spent a lot of time in Newcastle, Australia, from where he cargoed coal to New Zealand. He was the captain of the ships *Mary Wadley* and *Pendle Hill*. He got married in 1890 in Napier to Winifred Eya Tannion. Her father was an Irish soldier, who had come to



Captain Uno T. G. Widerström, born in 1856 in Vaasa, sailed in the Australian and New Zealand waters until he settled in Napier after marrying Winnifred Tannion. SI, Turku.

New Zealand with his regiment during the Maori-wars. The newspapers in Napier and Newcastle wrote about the marriage:

"The schooner *Pendle Hill*, which left here on the 11th of last month with a cargo of coal for Napier, New Zealand, returned to Newcastle yesterday in ballast ... During her stay in Napier Captain Widerstrom took unto himself a wife. The day after the event the happy couple embarked in the *Pendle Hill*, and spent the honeymoon on the voyage to Newcastle. The bride, on the first night at sea, was very seasick, but soon after got her sea legs, owing to the tender care of the gallant skipper. The many friends of Captain Widerstrom at this port, we are sure, will join with us in wishing him and Mrs. Widerstrom every happiness and prosperity in the voyage of life they have just launched on."³⁸

In 1893 Uno left the sea, sold his share of the *Pendle Hill* and set up his well-known ship chandlery business in Port Ahuriri, Napier. He also took part in local politics and was a member of the Napier City Council from 1904 to 1910. Widerström was also a Free Mason and an Oddfellow.



Uno Widerström had a shipchandler business at Port Ahuriri, the seaport of Napier. SI, Turku.

His brother Bruno was a sculptor living in Sydney until his death in 1915. The third brother Hugo had emigrated to America. Uno Widerström died in 1937. According to his memorial, he left behind the following children: Mr. Sydney Widerström in Napier, Mrs. O. Weston in Auckland, Mr. F. W. Widerström in Whakatu, Mrs. I. Husheer in Napier and Mrs. Helena Henderson in Greenmeadows.³⁹

3. Wellington Province

In the southern parts of the North Island the biggest cluster of Finns could be found in Wellington and in its surroundings, but there were also Finns in other parts of that province. In Wanganui lived *Otto Alexander Molander*, born in Mikkeli in 1877. He had arrived in New Zealand in 1913 and had found his first job in a cheese factory in Rahotu. After a short while he got a job at sea, first on the *Maori*, then on the *Canopus*. After one and a half years he joined the New Zealand Army and left with his military unit to France where he was wounded twice. After returning to New Zealand he was released in 1919, and he got a job on the *Mapourika*. Finally he decided to stay ashore and he set up in fish trade in Ohakune. In 1932 he bought himself a farm in Karioi, but by 1934 he moved to Wanganui and became a labourer. Molander was married but divorced later. There were three children in the family, the youngest of them was studying in 1938 in the Technical School of Napier. Molander was a member of the Labourers Union and the Returned Soldiers Association.⁴⁰

In Wanganui County lived also *Charles Peterson*, born in Finland in 1863. Before his arrival in New Zealand in 1907, he had been in Australia for three years and got naturalized there. For the first ten years in New Zealand Peterson was employed as a seaman by the Anchor Line. After that he moved to Fordell and began farming. Peterson was naturalized in 1936.⁴¹

John Gronstrom, born at Rauma in 1860, came to Wellington in 1884 and first worked in Porirua for nearly eight years. From there he moved to Dannevirke, Eketahuna and Taumarunui, before settling in Taihape in 1922. There he first worked as a millhand, but later when getting old, he began to do gardening and was from time to time unemployed. Gronstrom was naturalized in 1932 and he died in 1942.⁴²

Eketahuna, which is situated on the eastern slopes of the Tararua Range, also attracted some Finns to settle in there. *Johannes Styris*, who had been born at Malax in 1876, had arrived in New Zealand about 1897. His parents and the rest of the children had emigrated to America in 1899 or 1900, according to the parish register.

Information from the year 1907 reveals that at the time Johannes was a wagoner in Eketahuna. He was married to Agatha Mary McMillan. A son, John, was born in 1906. John later became a fireman in Greymouth, married there in 1929 and had three children: Bernard Francis, Raymond John and Maureen. Johannes Styris died in 1957 in Wanganui.⁴³

Johannes Styris had a cousin in Eketahuna. *Johannes Roy* or R \ddot{o} ij was born at Malax in 1863. To avoid serving in the Russian Army he left for South Africa in 1884 and then for New Zealand. As a seaman he arrived in



A bullock team used to haul logs to John Roy's Kakariki mill. Standing in the middle is probably Isak Roy, John Roy's brother. SI, Turku, original Don Roy, Wellington.

Wellington or Petone and began working at various mills etc. He even had a sawmill of his own at Kakariki near Eketahuna for some time.

Johannes applied for naturalization in 1893. At that time he was a farmer in Eketahuna. Johannes married a New Zealand -born woman, Mary Sanders, in 1903. They had four children: Cecil John, Edwin Keith, Ina and Freda. The family lived on their farm on Short Road, Mangatainoka and they were quite well-known in the area, maybe partly because father Johannes made excellent berry wine. Mother Mary is said to have been a gentle and sweet little lady. Johannes died in 1948. He did not keep contact with Finland, but his grandson Don Roy spent a year in Finland in the beginning of the 1960's and has named his sons Karl-Erik and Leif. The daughter of Johannes, Ina, was still living in Mangatainoka in 1994 in the old family house.



The Roy family at Pahiatua about 1922. From left Cecil, John Roy, Ina, Mary Elizabeth, Edwin Keith and Elizabeth. SI, Turku. (Don Roy).

The brother of Johannes, *Isak Roy*, born at Malax in 1879, came to New Zealand possibly after spending some time in America. Isak lived with his brother for a while but they had a disagreement and never had contact with one another again. Isak moved to Masterton and finished his working days as a handyman in a Government camp building roads in South Westland. In 1941 Isak died of TB in Hokitika.⁴⁴

In Palmerston North lived *Otto Westerholm*. He had been born in Turku in 1851 and had arrived to New Zealand in 1874. In Palmerston North he settled in 1880 and married there a 18-year-old Swedish girl, Gerda Blixt, on November 5th, 1881. They had six children: Severina Elizabeth (b. 1881), Oscar Nicolai (b. 1886), Clara Victoria (1887–1888), Sydney Cornelius (b. 1888), Herbert Alexander (b. 1890) and Norman Bernard Otto (b. 1894). Otto Westerholm was naturalized on October 31st, 1890, and at that time was registered as a labourer. According to Elizabeth he had a knitting mill. Later he worked as a yardman for Palmerston North Sash, Door & Co. At the age of 47 he died of a heart disease in 1899 and was buried at Terrace End Cemetery. His son Oscar became a cabinet maker living in Palmerston North and Wellington. Sydney travelled overseas and was never heard from again. Herbert was an architect in Napier but later he moved to Australia. The youngest son Norman was killed in the First World War.⁴⁵

John (in Finland Johan) *Coldstream*, born on November 9th, 1847, came to New Zealand, according to his death certificate, in 1872. He had been at sea as early as at the age of 9 or 12, working as a cabin boy. On March 27th, 1874, he married Ida Williamson of Norwegian origin at Christchurch. They had twelve children, of whom six died. By late 1885 the family was in Palmerston North. John was naturalized as a carpenter of Palmerston North on September 14th, 1893. The couple separated in 1897 or 1898, and finally, at the age of 65, John died after falling from a bridge. His death certificate indicates sudden heart problems.⁴⁶

Alexander Aaltonen, born in 1880, came to New Zealand in 1913 on the s/s *Manuka*. He worked on many different farms all around the country. He also did some bushfelling and railway construction. His life as a wanderer came to an end when he settled in Petone in 1918 and began to work in the local woollen mills. Next year he married a local maiden, Lizzie Maidment, and they had three children: Roy, Leo and Mabel. When Alexander applied for naturalization the report of the local police proves



A former seaman Alexander Aaltonen and his son Roy making a door for the sauna at 49 Beach St, Petone in the 1930's. Aaltonen was born at Ruokolahti in 1890 and arrived in New Zealand in 1913. According to another source he came from Turku. SI, Turku.

that he was known as a sober and honourable man. Aaltonen did not keep contact with his old homeland, because he did not have any near relatives left there after his sister had moved to Canada. Alexander did not belong to any parish, and above all he liked to spend time in his boat fishing. He had some Finnish friends in New Zealand: George Wass in Petone, Albin Sikanen and Arthur Ruohonen in Auckland.⁴⁷

George Wilhelm Wass was born at Rauma in 1891, and he arrived in New Zealand as a sailor in 1916. He settled in Petone and married Dorothea Minnie Brown from London. They had ten children: Jack, Doris Mary (McGruer), Fred William, Olga Winifred (Buckley), George Albert, Freda Alma Joyce (died in 1929), Leonard William (died in 1930), Ronald Leonard William, Rita Alma Joyce (Eastwood) and Frank Gustaf. Their oldest son Jack was killed in the Second World War, while serving in the merchant navy. Frank Gustaf Wass, the youngest brother, lives in Adelaide, Australia. All the other children except for Ronald Wass live in



George Wilhelm Wass (1891–1962) was one of those few who returned to Finland. SI, Turku.

the North Island. Their father George Wass was first employed with the Wellington Fire Brigade. After that he had several jobs; he worked for New Zealand Railways, on Kaiwarra Yards and as a labourer at a meat factory. He nationalized in 1924. While spending his holidays back at Rauma, Finland, in the early 1950's, he became too ill to return to his family in New Zealand. George Wass died in Turku in 1962.⁴⁸

In Wellington city lived quite a number of Finns, most often seamen or former seamen who had stayed ashore to work, for example at the harbour.

Charles Merilä was born at Uusikaupunki in 1876. He was a sailor even before his arrival in New Zealand. He was discharged from the s/s *Corinthion* at Lyttelton in 1915. After that he went to Wellington and first worked as a sales assistant and later as a builder. In 1916 he enlisted voluntarily in the New Zealand Army, but was rejected because of his weak state of health. A few months later he succeeded in getting into active service and spent a year and 212 days in the Army. He was released when wounded. After that he worked as a night guard in the Military Pay Office.

Merilä lived with Mrs. Allbergh, whose Norwegian husband had left his family. However, Merilä had already got married in 1908 in Joseph City, USA, and he had a son and a daughter. Merilä did not keep in touch with his family after his arrival in New Zealand. He was naturalized in 1920.⁴⁹

Another Finn living in Wellington, who was in the Army, was *Gristof Pederson*. He was born in Vaasa in 1873 and worked as a sailor before coming to New Zealand on the *Altic Glen* in 1916. After being discharged he joined the New Zealand Army in Featherstone. However, he was not able to take part in active service because of his weak state of health. In 1918 he was released, after which he worked for the Public Works Department in Wellington County. At the end of 1923 he was hired to the ship *Turakina*, which sailed to London. He returned to New Zealand with the *Dorset*. After that he was permanently employed on the s/s *Breeze*. Pederson married Welshborn Minnie Bailey in 1917 in the Featherstone Methodist Church. He was naturalized in 1926 and died in 1931.⁵⁰

Kustaa Wilhelm Kanerva left the Lypyr village of Kustavi to become a sailor. Born in 1896, Kanerva arrived in 1920 in Melbourne on the barque



The Kanerva brothers, Kustaa and Sulo. In 1925 Kustaa Kanerva won the first prize in a rowing race for all rowing clubs in New Zealand. SI, Turku.

Cerradalen. For a year he sailed on Australian coastal ships until 1921, when he came to New Zealand. He was still working as a sailor when he applied for naturalization in Auckland in 1925. He worked for both the Union Steamship Company and Holm & Company as a mate and as a first mate until he was promoted to the rank of Captain.

Kanerva spent a few years among the Finns on Stewart Island before he got married and settled in Wellington. He spent some time at the end of the 1930's in Auckland while studying for an overseas Master's Certificate. Kustaa Wilhelm had also a brother called Sulo in New Zealand. Sulo worked in the forests. He was one of the first Finnish pioneers of the paper industry in New Zealand. This will be discussed below. Kustaa Wilhelm was lost at sea when his ship sank during the Second World War. The sinking was probably caused by a Japanese mine.⁵¹

Iisakki Apola, born in 1894 at Lappi, Finland Proper, also found his way to Wellington. He had already seen quite a lot of the world when had left for America at the age of 18. There he had wandered around 23 states during a period of 17 years, working as an iron ore miner and as a stone cutter, until in January 1931 he left New York to travel via Norway and Sweden to Finland. Finland was not very tempting any more, and Iisakki wondered how he could ever have lived in such a country. So he quickly travelled via Germany to England taking the next ship to Auckland. That was in December 1930.

Iisakki's first four years in New Zealand were spent wandering from one farm to another, working in the forests and at the mills. For example, he was working on the farm of Konsta Ojala in Waimapu. Finally, in 1935, Iisakki got a job as a stone cutter and settled in Wellington. He wanted to move to Australia and made inquiries about opportunities there, but the depression was felt in Australia too, and Iisakki was then satisfied to apply for naturalization in New Zealand in 1937. Apola was in contact with other Finns in New Zealand, visiting those in Auckland. However, soon after naturalization he moved to Brisbane, Australia, and got a job there as a stone cutter.⁵²

Matias Wilhelm Janson (Jonson in New Zealand) was born on December 8th, 1860, on Finström Island in Åland, as the youngest child of Gustava Bränström. Åland is a large group of islands between the Finnish mainland and Sweden. In 1869 when Matias was eight years old his mother died, and he was brought up by his half-sister Rosa who was eight



On December 5th, 1900, Matias Jonson, 40, married Jessie Adams, 23, in Wellington. The bestman was the Missioner to seamen. SI, Turku.

years older. After confirmation in 1877 Matias moved from Finström to Hammarland and then went to sea. It is possible that he signed on some foreign vessel, because there is no record of him in Åland registers. He next turns up in New Zealand in 1887. According to the family history Matias was shipwrecked on the Napier coast in 1887, possibly on the *Northcumberland*, which was shipwrecked in 1887 outside Hastings. For a long time the family thought that Matias was a Norwegian until his naturalization papers revealed that he came from Åland. When Matias Jonson was naturalized in 1894 he was a seaman living in Wellington and had resided in the colony for six years.

In 1900 when Matias was 40 he married Jessie Emily Adams, 23 years. Matias and Jessie went to work on the main Trunk Railway Line at Ohakune, living in the camps. New Zealand's rugged bush hills made



1900. Life in the New Zealand Bush. A Scene on the Route of the North Island Main Trunk Railway at the Hapūwhenua Viaduct, near Ohakune

The home of the main trunk railway workers. A navvies settlement at Ohakune on the North Island main trunk route in the early years of the century. Matias and Jessie Jonson with four daughters lived in such a camp for years. Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.

transport difficult for early European settlers. In 1865 the construction of a railway was started from Auckland, reaching Te Awamutu by 1880. The construction work began south of Te Awamutu and north of Marton. Most of the workers were immigrants from England, not familiar with pick and spade. The main trunk line meant tents, dense bush, rain, fog and mud – like any railway camp. No attempts were made to observe any sanitary precautions. The average wages were eight shillings in August 1908. The Jonsons' first child was born in 1902 and soon after another one. When Jessie was born at Ohakune in 1910, the main trunk line was completed, and Matias continued to work for the Railways at Ohakune.

Sometime after 1910 Matias and Jessie and their children went again to Wellington. Matias worked on the wharves as a "seagull" – a casual non-union labourer. When there was no work on the wharf he did gardening

Mrs. Joan Rosier-Jones, a grand-daughter of Matias Wilhelm Jonson from Åland, is a well-known New Zealand author. One of her novels, the *Voyagers*, tells the story of Matias Wilhelm Jonson and his family. SI, Turku.



for various people. When the family lived at 89, Northland Road, he had an allotment next door where he grew the family vegetables. Matias was well-liked throughout the neighbourhood. Because of his foreign accent the Police visited him during the First World War. For the same reason he had difficulties in getting work. The only times he was heard to speak his own language was when he was angry. Then Matias would go, so the story goes, into the wash-house and swear in Finnish. For a period of time he worked as a grave-digger. This was during the Influenza Epidemic after the First World War. In this capacity he was working in tram tunnels in a series of jobs for the City Council. Later Matias worked as a night watchman on the Northland tram tunnel which was being built at that stage. Matias was still working there when he suddenly died on March 10th, 1924, in Wellington of acute appendicitis at the age of 63.⁵³

In her novel the *Voyagers*, published in 1987, Matias Wilhelm Jonson's grand-daughter Joan Rosier-Jones tells in an epic style the story of Matias Wilhelm from a family perspective and as a part of the history of New Zealand.

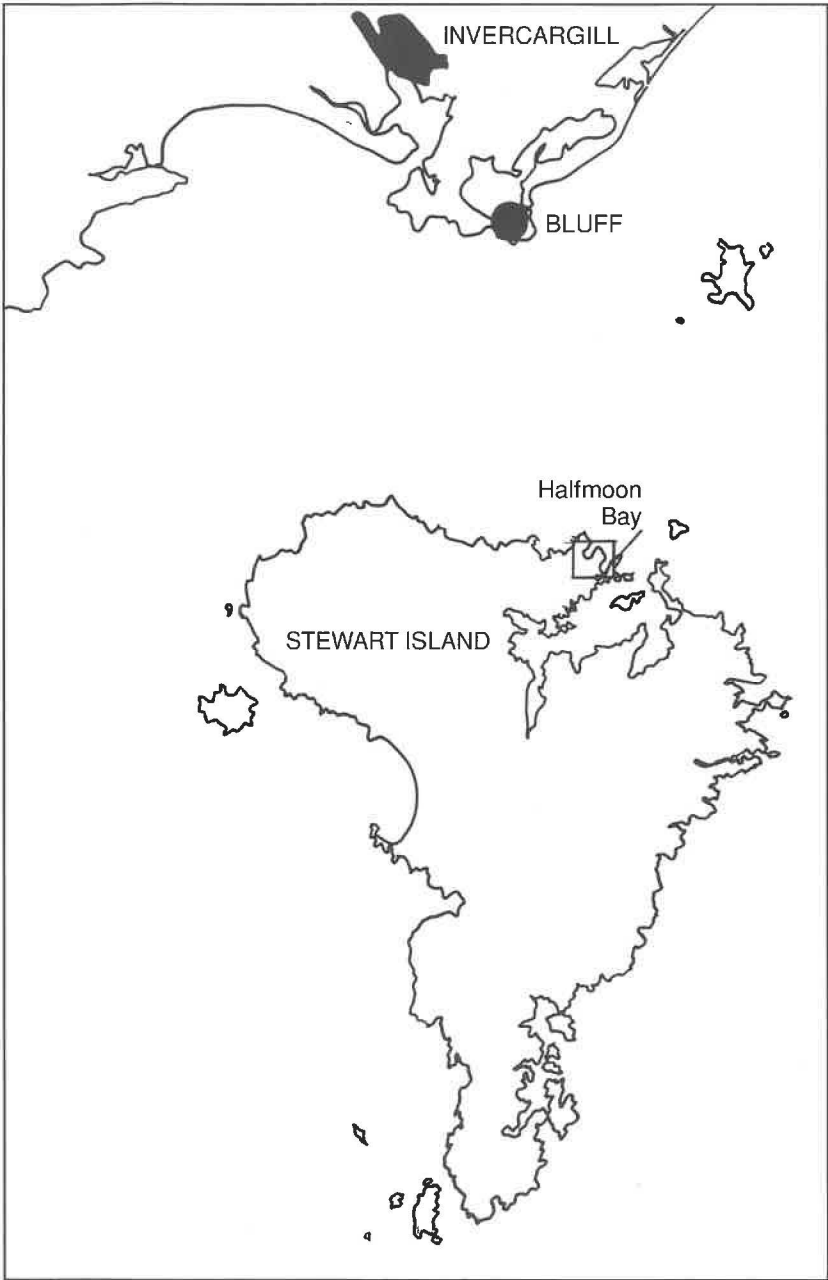
In March, 1995, the descendants of Matias Wilhelm Janson had a family gathering and a commemoration on his grave in the Karori Cemetery in Wellington.⁵⁴

Chapter VII: Fishermen on Stewart Island

The most southern settlement of Finnish immigrants was on Stewart Island – also known by its original Maori name *Rakiura* – “the island of the glowing sky”. Stewart Island is separated from the mainland by 32 km of salt water. It has an area of 1,680 square kilometres, it is covered by native vegetation and a haven for native birdlife. The temperature on the whole is mild, and the general climate unpredictable apart from predictably frequent rain and strong winds.



Halfmoon Bay, Stewart Island. Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.



The most southern island of New Zealand was discovered but not explored by Captain James Cook in 1770. It is believed that the first European to set foot on the Island was Captain Oliphant of the sealer *Endeavour* in 1803. The coasts were explored by the ship *Pegasus* in 1809. The island was found uninhabited, and containing excellent harbours with streams of purest water running into them. However, Rakiura was clearly claimed by specific families from *Kai Tahu* tribe, as was most of the South Island. Excavations have revealed that parts of Stewart Island were occupied already in the thirteenth century by moa-hunting people of Polynesian origin. Sealers started to visit the island, which was named after W. Stewart, First Officer of the *Pegasus*. By 1825 a permanent settlement was established. Over the years some Maori also made the island their home. The nomadic European settlers took Maori wives and by the end of the 19th century full-blooded Maori were outnumbered by the half-castes.¹ The main Maori settlement was on Ruapuke Island. Stewart Island was a scene of annual migrations of the southern tribes, mainly *Kai Tahu* tribes, to seek supplies of mutton birds (*titi* in Maori). In 1844 the Reverend J. Wöhlers settled on Ruapuke Island travelling to Stewart Island on missionary activities. In 1864 negotiations were conducted with the Maori to cede the islands to the Crown for 6,000 pounds. Commercial fishing on Stewart Island started in 1862 when the first cargoes were sent to the mainland, especially to Dunedin. The discovery of an extensive oyster bed at Port Adventure about 1864 gave rise to the Oyster Fish Act of 1866 to encourage oyster fishing.² In the early 1860's the first saw mills were opened. The island entered into its modern era of development. The first post offices were opened in 1872 and five years later a regular weekly mail service started. The major centre was the township of Halfmoon Bay. This bay became the main residential base for fishing and timber industries. The inhabitants were pelagic people, living almost as much at sea as on shore. The whole island had a population of no more than a couple of hundred. In 1894 Stewart Island was proclaimed a county and its development continued fairly rapidly.

Among the early inhabitants of Stewart Island there were some Finnish settlers. Olga SANSOM refers in her book *The Stewart Islanders*, published in 1970, to two early Finns on the island as follows:

"When I remember ... most of the early families – Charlie Smolander too (a Dutchman who lived alone) and Abraham Wäst, a Russian Finn and many others – I must say they lived zestfully. Laughter – how often I've heard it – laughter and singing along with the rhythmic creak of oars in the rowlocks; fun and laughter in the kitchens and round the big open fires at night; whistling on the bush tracks – we were never bored in our day either."³

The Naturalization Records reveal the following Finns made their home on Stewart Island.

	Born		Arriv.	Occupation	Nat.
SMOLANDER, Charl.	1852	Myrskylä	1872	Fisherman	1904
WÄST, Abraham,	1845	Bergo	1876	Fisherman	1896
MATTSSON, Freder.	1867	Wasa	1890	Fisherman	1906
TOLOSEN, Lance	1888	Iisalmi	1910	Fisherm.& Lab.	1925

Aliens Register of 1917 reveals that there was also:

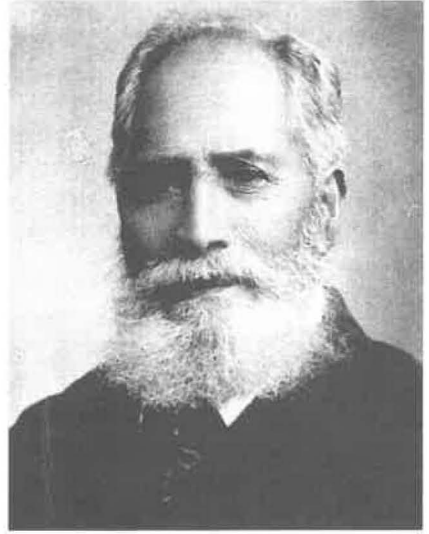
SCOTT, Walter	1873	–	1892	Engine Driver	–
---------------	------	---	------	---------------	---

The best-known of the Finns on Stewart Island was *Abraham Wäst*. He was born in 1845 on the island of Bergö, Maalahti, near Vaasa in western Finland. Here the Swedish-speaking inhabitants have always been fishermen and seamen. According to the family history Abraham left home at a young age, in 1862 according to the local Church Register. Family tradition relates that he was a seaman and was shipwrecked to the Isle of Java, which he soon left because of an epidemic of yellow fever. In 1876, or perhaps earlier, he ended up in New Zealand and deserted his ship by swimming ashore to Tiwai Point at Bluff Harbour on the southern tip of the South Island – *Waipounamu* by the Maori name – together with six other seamen. Four of the deserters continued to Australia. The family history relates that when Abraham swam ashore to Tiwai Point there was a Maori settlement, and possibly he stayed there for a while. It is also possible that he sailed on coastal waters before settling down. In the old family Bible, printed in 1883, there stands in the owner's handwriting "Abraham Wäst, Lyttelton". It is not known when he moved permanently to Stewart Island.

In the early 1890's Abraham married Jane Elizabeth Maraetaia, daughter of a prominent Maori "Mohi Maraetaia Hamero" (1830–1910)



Abraham Wäst (1845–1923), a Finnish fisherman on Stewart Island. SI, Turku.



"Moses Mohi" Maraetaia (1830–1910), Abraham Wäst's father-in-law. SI, Turku.

whom the Europeans called Ringaringa Moses. According to Mr. Paul Bennet (Abraham's grandson in Dunedin), the name 'Moses' (or 'Mohi', the native interpretation) was given by the German missionary J. F. H. Wohlers, and the name 'Maretai' came from his father. Mohi Maraetaia was a respected Maori Elder, *Kaumatuā*, on Stewart Island when Abraham first came there. According to the Maori family history *Whakapapa* he descended directly from a famous Kai Tahu ancestor, Maru-Kaitatea, who lived in the middle of the 17th century. Mohi Maraetaia was an excellent boatman and loved the sea. At the time of marriage Abraham was 47 and his wife 31 years old. They had four children: Helena, b. 1894, Henrietta, b. 1897, and sons Karl Johan, b. 1898, and Thomas William, b. 1900. At the age of 11 the girls were sent to a boarding school in the North Island. The boys became fishermen. In 1924 a Norwegian whaling fleet used Stewart Island as a shelter because it was such a good anchorage place. The whale chasers were brought there from Antarctica during the winter while the factory ship went home to Norway. Abraham Wäst's sons Thomas and Karl Johan



Three children of the Wäst family attended the Halfmoon Bay school in 1907. John, Tom and Lena Wäst can be found in the picture. Sansom, Olga, One Hundred Years of Schooling at Stewart Island 1874–1974, Invercargill 1974, p. 30.

went to Antarctica – at least in 1927–28 – with the Norwegian whaling fleet. The whaling base at Price's Bay was abandoned in 1932 after several years activity.⁴ Karl Johan was drowned in a storm in Foveaux Strait in 1930. Thomas was a fisherman at Halfmoon Bay until his death in 1975. He married twice and left a large number of children, all fishermen – or married to fishermen.

Abraham Wäst is remembered as "a Finnish sailing ship sailor of great experience, who had visited many out of way places and was most interesting as a talker and was a very capable fisherman."⁵ Abraham was a Master Mariner; he had a Certificate for a vessel of six tons issued in 1911. For years Abraham fished on the cutter *Lena* with a Frenchman Louis Robert and *Charlie Smolander*. The latter, according to SANSOM, was "a Dutchman from Amsterdam who has also fished in Iceland". In fact Smolander was a Finn, born at Myrskylä in 1851 and arrived in New Zealand in 1872. Charlie was never married, yet he loved children. He had a cat, Snorri, but "the way he said it was Porri". The cat lived so long that



One of the first Finns in Stewart Island was Charles Smolander, pictured with his cat "Pörri". SI, Turku.

her teeth were gone, so Charlie patiently chewed her meat before she could get a feed. Charlie's nose had been broken in his sea-cavorting youth, and this affected his speech, recalls Olga SANSOM, "Polander's little girl".⁶ Charlie Smolander died in 1928.

Abraham Wäst's daughter Henrietta Tozer (died 1993) remembered that Abraham used to fish with Charlie Smolander. They were both decent men and did not drink.⁷ Abraham Wäst was apparently a religious man, and he – as well as Charlie Smolander – was an active member of the Oban (Halfmoon Bay) Presbyterian Church. Their names are among the founders of the Church on a memorial board hanging on the wall of this beautiful church.

In addition to fishing, Abraham Wäst and his family were involved in mutton-bird catching. Because of his marriage to a Kai Tahu woman Abraham had the right to mutton-birds. The season began on the first of April and lasted until the bird migrated in May. Late in March the

descendants of the original Maori owners of the Island, with their wives or husbands, made the annual trip to the mutton-bird islands. The birds were captured from their burrows and after being killed, plucked, cleaned, split and salted, were packed in kelp bags for preservation.⁸ Even nowadays some families use kelp bags – but more generally tins.

Abraham Wäst and his family lived in a most beautiful place on the left side of the inlet to Halfmoon Bay. On the Stewart Island map this place is still known as "Wast Point". Abraham is one of the few Finns to get a name on the map of New Zealand. In Stewart Island there is also Abraham's Bay, but there is no evidence of any connection to Abraham Wäst. There is also Abraham's Bosom in Port Adventure – an excellent anchorage and landing place.

In 1904 the Wästs moved to Ringa Ringa, to the land of his father-in-law. A reason may have been that a road was built through Wast Point. Abraham Wäst died in 1923 at the age of 77. He was buried next to his father-in-law Moses Maraetaia on the top of Ringa Ringa Moses Point.



The burial place of Abraham Wäst and the Maori-chief "Moses Mohi" Maraetaia on the top of Ringa Ringa Moses Point. SI, Turku.



George H. Wäst with his children, Abraham and Helena at Invercargill in 1992. SI, Turku.

Ringa Ringa means hand, or thumb, because the point is shaped like an out-trust thumb. According to Henrietta Tozer, the daughter of Abraham Wäst, his final resting place was the wish of her mother Jane Maraetaia. George H. Wäst, a grandson of Abraham, considers that it was a big honour for a Finnish sailor to be buried next to the Maori chief.⁹ Moses Point is a most lovely place for Abraham to rest, the gentle hill against the sky and a good view over the blue sea. From the top of Moses Point Abraham Wäst and his father-in-law may watch the rosy glow of sunset hovering about the hills and shimmering on the shining waters they both loved so much.

At the foot of the hill there is the grave of the Rev. J. F. H. Wohlers, who for 41 years, since 1844 had devoted his life to the spiritual and educational welfare of the Maori and settlers of Stewart Island and of the island of Ruapuke in Foveaux Strait.¹⁰

Mrs. Abraham Wäst, née Jane Maraetaia – known as Jinny Moses – is recorded as having been a most social person who loved throwing parties.

However, she did not like alcohol. Once her son Karl Johan and one of his friends went home with some drink and told Jane not to touch it as it was for medicinal purposes. One day Jane, not feeling very well, decided to have a drink and thought it was lovely and polished it off. When Karl Johan came home and saw her he nearly died. She kept on telling him the stuff made her feel so good. Needless to say that was the end of the drink.¹¹ Jane also liked to sit in her chair in periods of relaxation and would say wearily: "Jinny is nailed to the chair, and the chair is nailed to the floor."¹²

Jane Maraetaia has left for posterity a Maori *Whakapapa*, a collection of genealogies and family histories. She was obviously well educated and literate in both Maori and English – probably because of the educational work of missionaries in the first school at Stewart Island. In this family history Jane Maraetaia records that she had married a *Pakeha* Abraham Wäst and gives the names of the children as follows: Helena, Hineuta, Carl Johan, Thomas William Rehua. She has also recorded that Thomas married a *Pakeha* – as well as the names of six children. Information about the other children is given as well. The *Whakapapa* also records the family rights to the lands and waters – obviously an important legal issue for the future generations. It appears also that Jinny was a sheepfarmer. In January 1890 she bought 100 sheep – the whole flock being 256 sheep.¹³ While Abraham was fishing Mrs. Wäst obviously took care of the land. Jane Elizabeth Wäst died in 1937 at the age of 72 years.

In addition to Abraham Wäst and Charlie Smolander there is not much personal information found about the other Finns on Stewart Island. The Aliens Register of 1917 gives also a Finn, *Walter Scott*, an engine driver, who had arrived in 1894. Probably Scott was not his original Finnish name. *Frederick Mattson* originated from the same area in Finland as Wäst and had arrived in 1890 being a fisherman. Of the later arrivals from Finland there was *Lance Tolson* – originally Taavetti Tolonen from Iisalmi, central Finland – who had arrived in 1910. He was an occasional fisherman but mainly a sawyer in a local mill. Before his arrival in New Zealand Lance had transported ice to England. Later he transported guano to Australia and New Zealand. He even spent some time in Australia at Adelaide. After coming to Bluff on the barque *Perfect*, he stayed on installing a hydraulic pipeline for a goldmine at Long Beach in Southland. After a while he met Ellen Robertson, a member of an early Stewart Island family, and they married.¹⁴ Olga SANSOM remembered the Tolson family as follows:



The Wedding Photo of Lance and Nell Tolson, Stewart Island. SI, Turku.

"Nell Robertson married Lance Tolson from Finland, a Scandinavian seaman who had seen life in many countries from the age of thirteen and had experienced the strenuous work on an ice ship. These were the ships that carried ice from the Arctic to England in the days when fresh ice was delivered daily to the homes of those who could afford it. Handling the ice and loading it was gruelling work. During the winter he worked at logging camps when the northern ports were frozen over. Lance and Nell made their home at Horse Shoe Bay. 'Good Luck Bay' was Nell's name for it, she loved it. Tolson River, a tributary of the Freshwater River, and Lances Hut, a popular camping site, honour their name ...

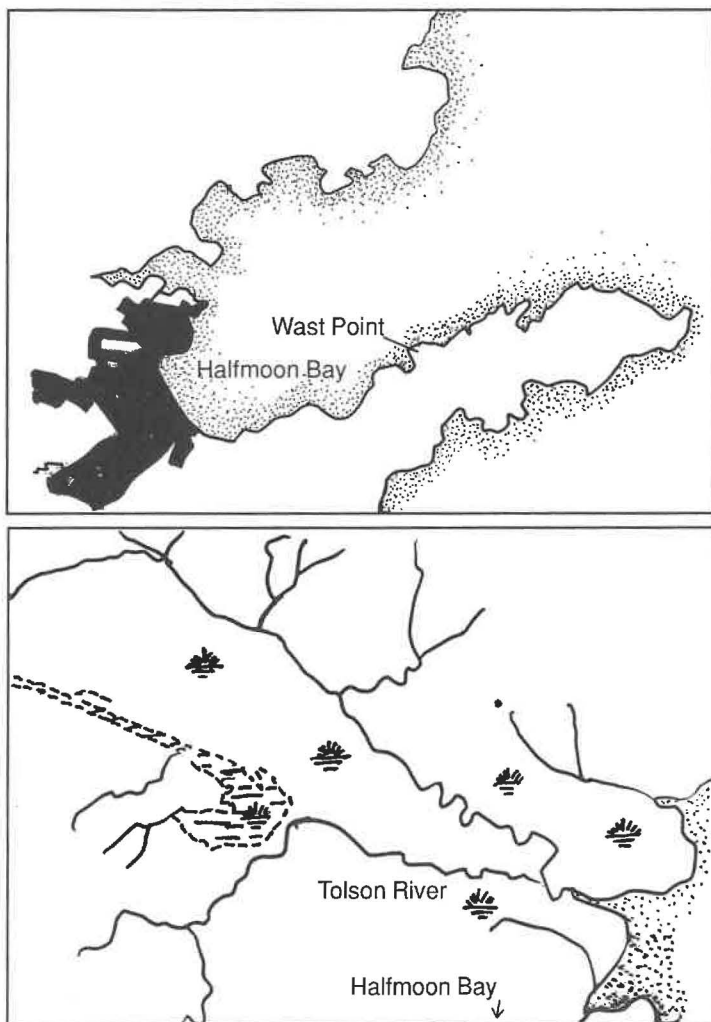
Lances Hut was a two-roomed cottage with a nice big kitchen, further back from the river. Lance Tolson arrived there on one occasion to find that a bullock had got in and the door was shut on it. It had chewed all the paper off the wall but was rescued alive."¹⁵



The children of Lance Tolson: John, Catherine and Bruce. SI, Turku.

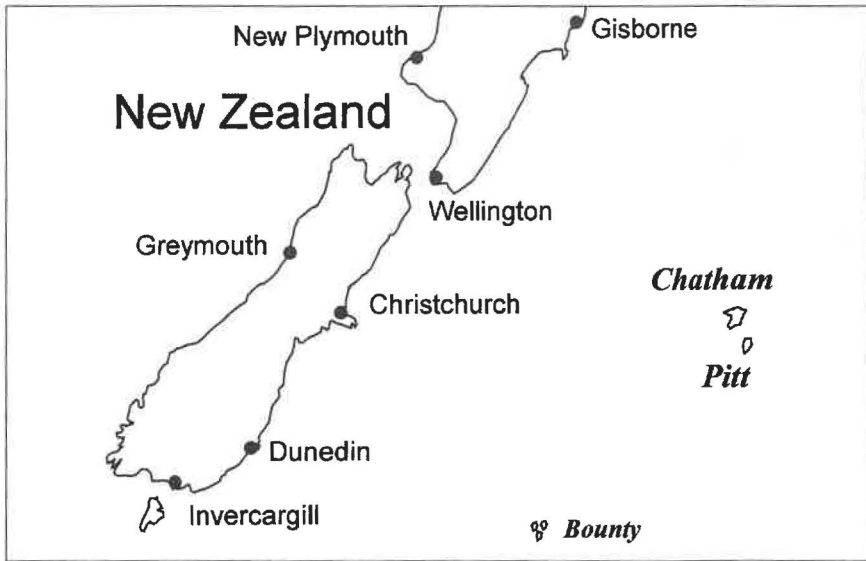
The Tolsons lived at Horse Shoe Bay, where Gertrude DEMPSEY relates to having met "Mrs. Tolson who had lived all her life in Horse-Shoe Bay. She is a well-read, witty and interesting old lady and has many a tale to tell of earlier days."¹⁶ According to the naturalization of Lance Jahfett Tolonen, the family had three children: John, born in 1916, Bruce Lancelof, born in 1920, and Catherine, born in 1922. The surname of the children was Tolson.¹⁷ Lance had a small holding and later he contracted road work and served for several years on the local county council. He was their foreman of works for many years. Later he returned to the fishing business assisted by his sons John and Bruce. Lance Tolson spent some time on the mainland working for the Ministry of Works, but returned later to Stewart Island to manage a bushfarm, which his son John had taken over from one of his uncles. Lance Tolson also set up a small boat building business making row boats. During the war both sons joined the army, as well as Catherine, who operated radar at coast defence. After the war Lance Tolson spent his last working years as a carpenter in Bluff Harbour. Lance Tolson died in 1961. After his retirement from the army Bruce Tolson moved to Stewart Island, the other son John lived in Maitauro.¹⁸

Assuming that no more than half of the Finnish settlers got naturalized, there may have been other Finns – in addition to those who stayed only for a while – in Stewart Island, the furthest place on the earth to go from Finland.



Abraham Wäst and Lance Tolson have left their names on the map of Stewart Island.

Chapter VIII: Gabriel Johanson, a Shipwrecked Settler, Chatham Island



The most outlying of New Zealand's islands to remain inhabited, the Chatham group, lies about 865 kilometres east of Lyttelton. Pitt Island, which also goes by the name *Rangiauria* lies southeast of the main Chatham Island. The Chathams were the last refuge of the Moriori. European history began when Lieutenant Broughton of the brig *Chatham* landed there in 1791 naming the island after the Earl of Chatham. In 1835 came the Maori invasion, and the timid, peaceful Moriori were no match for the Maori. Some of the Moriori escaped to Pitt Island where they lived in the deepest recesses of the bush. The Maori never occupied Pitt Island. The Chatham Maori were regarded as fierce man-eaters, and the few whalers who had settled amongst them had the reputation of being ruffians.¹

In 1867 the population of the Chathams consisted of 118 Europeans, 339 Maori and 113 Moriori. On Pitt Island there were 17 persons. In addition it is recorded that the "Foreign Inhabitants", i.e. whalers, included Laplanders, Russian, North and South American Indians, Negroes, Chinese, Filipinos, Aboriginal Australians, Melanesian, Kanakas and other Pacific Islanders.² The "Laplanders" and the "Russian" could well have been Finnish highseas sailors who preferred to live in the Pacific.

There was also a Finn documented as settling on the Chatham Isles. In 1885 a barque, the *Plejaden* from Hamburg, was travelling from Levuka to Falmouth, England, with a load of copra. During the journey the vessel sprang a leak, which made the master, Captain A. Claasen, decide to set a course for the Chathams, intending to beach the vessel and repair the damage. Unfortunately it struck hidden rocks off Matarakau and was wrecked. *Gabriel Johanson* was one of the sailors from the ship who decided to stay on the Chathams, where he finally married and settled. It is further recorded that "Descendants live on Chathams today (1984)"³

Gabriel Johanson was born in 1864 in Vaasa (according to some sources Nystad and Turku), and left for sea as a young boy. After the shipwreck in 1886 he obviously moved to Pitt Island, which is regarded as one of New Zealand's most isolated inhabited islands. Unlike the main Chatham Island, which has a fairly regular shipping service, Pitt Island was visited only a few times each year when the ship called for cargoes of sheep, wool and sometimes cattle. The inhabitants (about a dozen persons even today) are cut off from the rest of civilization.⁴ According to the Marriage Records the wedding of Gabriel Johanson and Rose Campbell, born in 1862 in Auckland, took place on the main Chatham Island on July 3th, 1888. Gabriel was a 24-year-old farmer and Rosa Campbell a 25-year-old domestic servant. The names of Gabriel's parents were also recorded: Farmer Johan Erickson and his wife Johanna.⁵ The Johansons had seven children⁶:

1. Alfred Gabriel	(1889–1948)	ch: Oscar, Patricia
2. Mary (mar. McDonald) 1940	(1890– ?)	1 child
3. Grace	(? –1940)	
4. Eliza	(1893–1953)	no children
5. Edgar John	(1894–1912)	
6. Frank Reuben	(1897–1972)	4 children
7. Rose Marie (mar. Finlay)	(1906–1963)	7 "

Gabriel and Rose Johanson and the eldest son Alfred on the Chatham Islands. SI, Turku.



Many descendants of Gabriel Johanson are still living on the Chathams. Oscar Johnson, a grandson of Gabriel with his wife Marion and a granddaughter Natasha. Oscar and Marion have seven children. Picture Ritva Smith 1992.



Gabriel Johanson was naturalized in 1907 at the age of 43. Then he was a sheepfarmer on Pitt Island. According to the memorandum Gabriel Johanson was "an honourable man and could be recommended for naturalization". His eldest daughter was the post mistress at Pitt Island.⁷ The Aliens Register of 1917 does not include the Chatham Islands. Later Gabriel Johanson moved to the North Island of New Zealand. According to information from a descendant, Gabriel moved to a small dairy farm in Rangiora near Christchurch about 1920. He died at Masterton in 1950.⁸

Chapter IX: The "Pamir" – A Prize of War 1941–49

1. *A Rose of White Sailing Ships*

The s/s *Pamir* was one of the very few survivors of the sailing ship era to see the Second World War. She was built in Hamburg in 1905 for the Chilean nitrate trade, and was a typical Cape Horner of her time. The four-masted barque was 101 metres long and had a gross tonnage of 2,799. The height of the masts was 51 metres and the ship could set 31 sails – nearly an acre of canvas. The *Pamir* was built at the end of the sailing ship era and represented a peak of their perfection. The rigging was the best of her time. The *Pamir* sailed from Hamburg on her maiden voyage to Chile at the end of 1905. Year after year the ship carried nitrate round Cape Horn. When the First World War broke out the *Pamir* was put into a neutral port at Teneriffe where she remained for nearly five and a half years. At the Treaty of Versailles Germany had to surrender the greater part of her mercantile marine, and the *Pamir* was given to Italy. But in 1924 the ship was returned to her former ownership in Hamburg. She was given a thorough overhaul and refit and was put back into the Chilean trade, where she remained until 1931.¹

In November, 1931, it was reported that she had been sold to Captain Gustaf Erikson from Mariehamn, Finland, for 4,000 pounds. This Baltic shipowner had seen the possibilities of big square-rigged vessels being bought at a "scrap metal" price and cheaply run. After the First World War Captain Erikson had begun to buy the best of the large sailing vessels as they came onto the market, and by the 1930's he had acquired a fleet of 14 big ships. The Erikson ships found employment mainly in the Australian grain trade and on most outward passages they had to sail with ballast. The ships carried no insurance and the overhead costs were low. Also manning was no problem as there were always more stout lads than could be taken. The master, three mates and 24 hands made up the crew of the

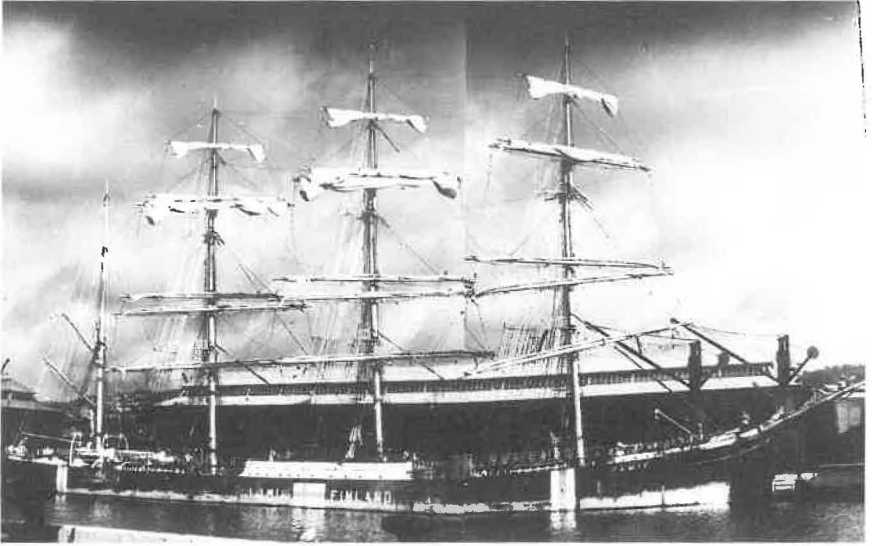
Pamir – and many other ships.² The *Pamir* entered the Australian grain trade in 1932 by sailing from Hamburg to Port Lincoln in 87 days. On the following passage timber was taken from Kotka, Finland, to South Africa. The first visit of the *Pamir* to New Zealand took place on January 1938 when she brought guano from the Seychelles to Auckland.

On November 30th, 1939, the Soviet Union attacked Finland and blockaded Finnish territorial waters. At that time the *Pamir* was lying idle at Gothenburg, Sweden. On March 14th, 1940, the day after Finland concluded an armistice with the Soviet Union, the *Pamir* sailed from Gothenburg in ballast for Argentina. However, there was no cargo available, and the ship sailed to the Seychelles to load guano for New Zealand, arriving in New Plymouth on December 16th, 1940. Here seven seamen deserted the ship, and the gap was filled by young New Zealanders. On February 20th, 1941, the *Pamir* sailed again for the Seychelles to load 4,400 tons of guano, this time for Wellington, where the ship arrived on July 29th, 1941.

2. The Seizure

In June, 1941, the war had again broken out between Finland and the Soviet Union when Germany invaded Russia. The *Pamir*, faraway in New Zealand, became a victim of the misery of war. On August 2nd, 1941, the British Government issued a notification that Finland was to be regarded as a territory under enemy occupation. The Finnish ships in the United Kingdom were seized and the New Zealand Government was cabled to do the same. Consequently, on August 3rd, 1941, the *Pamir*, berthed at the wharf at Wellington, was seized as a prize of war by the New Zealand Collector of Customs.³

Another ship of Erikson, the *Lawhill*, was seized in South Africa on August 21st, 1941. This happened several months before the South African Government declared war to Finland. For that reason the legality of the seizure was questioned even in the South African Parliament. The *Lawhill* sailed under the South African flag during the war, later it was sold to Mozambique for 8,000 pounds. The money was returned to Finland years after the war.⁴



The s/s Pamir in the harbour of Wellington during the Second World War. Churchouse, Jack, The Pamir under the New Zealand Ensign, Wellington 1978, p. 9.

The *Pamir* was the first ship ever taken as a prize in New Zealand. This event was of historical interest and international legal issues were raised. The Supreme Court of New Zealand had jurisdiction in the matter of a seizure. A friendly agreement was entered into with Captain Björkfelt, and an armed guard was placed on board, as the Navy feared the possibility of sabotage. The thirteen Finnish and seven Danish members as well as the Swedish member of the crew were taken to the Central Police Station. As they were not considered enemies they were lodged in hotels and boarding houses around Wellington. The seven New Zealanders and one Seychelles Islander remained on board. A special sitting of the Aliens Authority was held in Wellington on the 7th and 8th of August, 1941, to examine and classify, under the Aliens Emergency Regulations 1940, the Captain, the officers and the alien members of the crew of the *Pamir*.⁵ The Tribunal consisted of Colonel C. H. Weston, Mr. J. H. Collins, and Mr. J. H. Salmon. The Tribunal found the following information related to the Finns:

"The Captain and the Officers

VERNER BJORKFELT, Captain, born Brando Island, Finland, in 1900, married, one child, strong stocky physique. 'He disclaims any German ancestry and says he cannot speak German. He has a fair knowledge of English.'

ARNE WALTER JANSEN, First Officer, born Nago, Finland, married, one child, strong, even powerful physique. '... very little knowledge of the German language ... a fair knowledge of English.'

KARL AKE LIEWENDAHL, Second Officer, born in Finland in 1912, married, slight build, '... quite a good knowledge of English'.

KARL NYSTROM, Third Officer, recently promoted from the crew, apparently does not possess any mate's ticket. Nystrom was born in



When the Pamir sailed under the New Zealand flag in 1942–48 some original Finnish crew members were recruited. Right Karl Nyström and left possibly Åke Liewenthal in the Neptunus party when the ship crossed the Equator. Wellington Maritime Museum.

Finland in 1920 and is of medium to strong build. 'He describes himself as a communist and therefore with strong Russian sympathies ... He has practically no knowledge of English.'

The Crew

HALGER NORDBERG, A.B., born in Finland of Finnish parentage in 1918, single, medium build, young and active, knowledge of English poor.

ALDEN JOHANSON, A.B., born in Finland of Finnish parentage in 1921, single, medium build, young and active, knowledge of English slight.

HALGAR (or HELGAR) RUNDBERG, Cook, born in Finland of Finnish parentage in 1920, single, good physique, fair knowledge of English.

LARS OSWALD DALSTROM, Sailmaker, born in Finland of Finnish parentage in 1908, single, good physique, fair knowledge of English.

KARL AUGUST PAUL ERICSSON, A.B., born in Finland of Finnish parentage, single, medium build, young and active, knowledge of English good.

HARRY JAKATA (= Jäkälä) , Mess-boy, born in Finland of Finnish parentage in 1922, single, slight physique, knowledge of English poor.

JOHANNES WALTER JOHANSON, Steward, born in Finland of apparently Finnish parentage in 1903, single, stout, heavily built, knowledge of English fair.

HOLGER STENLUND, Ship's carpenter, born in Finland of Finnish parentage in 1920, single, medium physique, young and active, knowledge of English moderate.

THORBJURN WERNER EMANUEL JANSON, Donkeyman, born in Finland of Finnish parentage in 1921, single, medium build, young and active, knowledge of English slight."

In addition there is similar information of the seven Danish members and one Swedish crew member of the *Pamir*. From the report it further appears

that no suspicions were entertained by the Authorities as regards the Second and Third Officers or any members of the crew in respect of any pro-German sympathies. The Tribunal emphasized that the term "pro-British" does not convey the meaning of "pro-Allies". Finland had been invaded by Russia, and "The desire of all Finns is to see their country free." The attitude of the Finns was regarded as pro-British. Some of the young Finns appeared to be frankly pleased to be in New Zealand and desired to remain there, and all expressed the intention to fight for New Zealand in the case of an attack. But at the same time the Tribunal – it was pointed out – could not lose sight of the fact that Finland had cast her lot with Nazi Germany and had joined the Axis powers. These Finns must, therefore, be regarded in the same light as enemy aliens. The Finns were classified as B, and it was considered desirable that work should be found for these young Finns in New Zealand. It was considered "undesirable that these youthful aliens should be permitted to roam about in idleness and by their association and their foreign tongue possibly to give rise to uneasiness in the mind of public." The Danish crew members and a Swedish one were thought to deserve more sympathetic treatment. The Danes were recommended to be put to useful work and they were also classified grade B. The Swede, Svend Johanson, a national of a neutral country – who also had given evidence against the Captain and the First Officer of their pro-German sympathies – was graded D. It was also recorded that two Finns and a Dane were suffering from a venereal disease.

The second Officer Liewendahl and the third Officer Nystrom were classified B as the crew members. Both the officers had given evidence testifying of the pro-German attitudes of the Captain and the First Officer. Liewendahl especially made a favourable impression.

He was asked: "Would you be prepared to fight for New Zealand?" "Well, not fighting against Finland."

"I appreciate that. But if the Germans, the Italians, or the Japanese come to New Zealand?"

"That is a different thing ... I think I could make up my mind about that", answered the 28 years old Officer.

His intention was to remain in New Zealand and bring his wife and daughter – whom he had not seen – out to New Zealand.

Also Karl Nystrom wanted to stay in New Zealand. He did not like the food on the ship.

Captain Verner Björkfelt and First Officer Arne Jansen were found to have expressed pro-German sympathies, though the evidence against the Chief Officer was stronger and more direct than that against the Captain. When listening to the radio they were said to have placed more faith in the veracity of the news from Berlin than London. When the German warship *Bismarck* had been lost they would by their manner or by words have indicated that they had been displeased. The Tribunal came to the conclusion that the two men should be classified B and that they should be separated, and that Chief Officer Jansen should be sent away to reside in some country town or district remote from seaports and suitable work should be found for him.

As a conclusion a statement by Mr. Anderson may be quoted:

“We have to consider the honour and integrity of the men who command ships at sea. They are carrying out their job without bothering about politics at all. They are just caught in the fate of the war.”

3. The Crew in New Zealand

After the hearing the crew members received their salaries. The agent of Gustaf Erikson in London sent 1,000 pounds and cabled that the Finnish accounts were frozen in the United Kingdom. The New Zealand Government made sufficient money available to pay the outstanding wages.⁶ The crew members started to work in Wellington. Karl Nyström and Aldur Johanson worked in a wool store at the harbour, Halgar Rundberg was a cook in a café, Halger Nordberg and Johannes Johanson in building work in Hutt Valley. Captain Björkfelt was unemployed for a while residing in a hotel, but by the end of the year he found work in a wool store.

On August 22nd, 1941, the Prime Minister's Office sent a letter to the Attorney-General advising that "the crew of the barque 'Pamir', with the exception of the Master and the First Officer, should be re-employed on ships".⁷ According to the Tribunal's recommendation the Minister of Justice on September 26th, 1941, ordered the First Officer Arne Jansen to take up residence in some country town or district remote from seaports.⁸ At that time, as appears from a letter to the Department of Justice on

October 6th, 1941, Arne Jansen was working as a carpenter in Petone, near Wellington. He was considered "a good carpenter and one of the best Mr. Laurie Arcus has ever employed".⁹

The situation changed after England – and the Commonwealth countries following its example – declared war against Finland on December 6th, 1941. The Under-Secretary of the Department of Justice wrote on December 18th, 1941, to the Minister:

"Reading the evidence through leaves little doubt that the Chief Officer is pro-German, and I suggest that whatever is done with the rest of the crew, the Chief Officer be interned immediately."¹⁰

At that time Jansen – as ordered inland – was working at Waipukurau, 70 kilometres south of Napier, on a large Sanatorium building. It was further stated:

"If this boat had arrived here after we were at war with Finland, it is clear that this Alien would have been interned at once ... This Alien stated very definitely that he looked upon Russia as the national enemy of Finland, and that if he were in Finland, he would fight against Russia, even if that meant fighting with Germany. He considered this would be fighting for his own country and not for Germany."¹¹

The point Jansen made, that Finland was fighting a separate war against the Soviet Union, was impossible for the New Zealand Authorities to understand in the current world situation. The Aliens Authority had the opinion that

"this Alien must desire an Axis victory ... He has no stake or interest whatever in this country ... He may have very little opportunity to commit sabotage where he is ... he is potentially dangerous ..."

And the Aliens Authority re-classified Arne Jansen into class "A".¹²

Early in 1942 Jansen was still working building the Waipawa Hospital. In a letter on March 20th, 1942, in answer to the Department of Justice, the Managing Secretary of the Waipawa Hospital Board wrote that the observation of the Board's Clerk of Works was that Jansen was most conscientious, and as far as he can see, in every way an honest and loyal citizen of his adopted country.¹³

The Under-Secretary answered on March 26th, 1942, and referring to the statement concerning Jansen's loyalty to his adopted country wrote:

"In actual fact he is an enemy alien stranded in New Zealand by an accident of war. New Zealand is not his adopted country and he is not a citizen of it. In such circumstances one can hardly say he is loyal to it ..."

"I should be grateful if you would continue to maintain an unobtrusive eye on this man and report to me if he leaves the job, or if you observe any untoward incident that might have bearing from a public safety point of view."¹⁴

In a memorandum on July 16th, 1942, to the Minister, the Department of Justice was still worried about Arne Walter Jansen as appears from the following:

"There is very strong evidence that this man is pro-Nazi. On the other hand he appears to be working well and has caused no trouble and there is no particular reason why he should not go to Pahiatua. The job for which he is to be engaged at Pahiatua is the construction of an aliens camp, a camp to which he himself may be destined to be interned if the war gets closer. It might be better if he were not employed on this job."¹⁵

But on the corner of the paper there is handwriting with initials – obviously of the Minister – and the text: "The change is approved. I don't see any harm in his working on this camp."

From a letter on September 10th, 1943, from the Under-Secretary to the Minister of Justice it appears that according to the Tribunals recommendation the Minister had ordered him to a remote country town. Jansen had found employment with a building contractor Swanson at Waipukurau, building military huts near Paraparaumu, then at Porirua and Rongotai. The Under-Secretary was concerned about the fact that Jansen was moved from one defence area to another. "This is not suitable employment for an alien who is suspected of having pro-German sympathies". It was recommended to the Minister to discontinue Jansen's present employment and to direct him into more suitable work.¹⁶

On September 29th the Under-Secretary informed Mr. W. Perry, the Minister in Charge of Aliens, that Jansen's employer Mr. Swanson had called his office and told that

"Jansen has been with him since he commenced work in New Zealand two years ago ... Jansen is the best workman he has, and he is particularly anxious not to lose him. He is starting on a contract building an American Army Store at Naenae, Lower Hutt, and wishes to employ Jansen there."¹⁷

The Under-Secretary submitted the matter to the Minister. Probably a permission was not granted, and later Jansen worked for H. E. Townshend of Palmerston North. This conclusion is made from a letter of the Commissioner Police in 1945, informing that Jansen had applied to take employment at Upper Hutt.

"I am not prepared to recommend that Jansen be granted permission to take up residence at Upper Hutt. The distance from Upper Hutt to Wellington is only twenty miles ... raising the risk that he may be able to leave the country by unlawful means."¹⁸

Arne Jansen obviously continued to work as a carpenter in Palmerston North and saw the war out there.

There is not much information about Captain Björkfelt in the records. It seems that he was not under as much control as his First Officer Jansen. Björkfelt was sent to a small town, Feilding, near Palmerston North, where he was employed by a local grain and produce merchant.¹⁹

There is some information of the crew members and they were reclassified a year after the arrival of the Pamir.

In August 1942 Thorbjorn Janson worked for an Engineering company in Wellington and had become engaged to be married to a New Zealand girl of Scandinavian extraction. He was prepared to defend this country – but not to fight against his fellow-countrymen. He was classified as B 3.²⁰

Karl Ericsson, who worked as a storeman, had not taken up with any New Zealand girl wishing instead to go back to Finland, appropriate classification B 2.²¹

Aldur Johanson had been in five different jobs and wished to go to sea again. The Captain of the Swedish ship *San Francisco* had told him that he could not and would not take him because Johanson would be interned. Johanson worked as a carrier or a porter for a laboratory earning £ 4.16.0 a week. "Although he says he does not like the Japanese, he would not assist us to defend New Zealand against them": classification B 2.²²

Karl Rundberg had been a cook at a restaurant and a hotel, then a

steward on the *Midland*. There he became friendly with a New Zealand girl, a housemaid there, and he married the girl on August 17th, 1942. Rundberg hoped to get work at the Carlton Hotel. It was his desire now to settle down and to remain in this country after the war if he could get a permit to do so. He was also willing to defend this country and could volunteer for an Alien Battalion of the Home Guard: classification B 3.²³

Sven Ola Joffs had injured his back at New Plymouth in December, 1940, and after leaving hospital there, had arrived in Wellington in August, 1941. He had been employed at the City Council Milk Department earning from 6–7 pounds a week. He wished to return to his people as soon as possible. The youth had surprised the officials by answering that as a Finn he preferred a German victory, and consequently he was classified B 2.²⁴

After discharging her cargo of guano the *Pamir* lay idle at Wellington harbour. In the war the Allies had lost a lot of their merchant shipping. Accordingly the New Zealand Government decided that the *Pamir* should be refitted and employed in the trans-Pacific trade under the management of the Union Steamship Company. Early in 1942 the old ship was repaired and rigged to be in a first-class condition. Captain C. V. Stanich from Auckland was appointed Master, and there were no difficulties in manning the ship. Hundreds of New Zealand boys applied to go for sea in the *Pamir*. Also several old crew members of the *Pamir* wished to sail again with the vessel, and many of them were retained. The former Second Officer Åke Liewendahl was made Third Officer, Holger Stenlund Carpenter, Lars Dahlström and Karl Nyström became Able Seamen – as well as a Dane Svend Andersen, who later settled in Wellington and became a prosperous building contractor.²⁵

Also Thorbjorn Janson would have sailed with the *Pamir* as a motorman had he not have suffered an injury to his finger on the very day of sailing.²⁶

On March 30th, 1942, the *Pamir* sailed from Wellington on her first voyage under the New Zealand flag, arriving in San Francisco about two months later to take on a cargo for Wellington. Until October 1948 the *Pamir* made 10 voyages to different parts of the world. Stenlund, Dahlström and Nyström made two voyages from March 1942 to June 1943. On the second trip to America, November 1942 – June 1943 Holger Nordberg and Aldur Johanson also went as crew. The Third Officer Åke Liewendahl sailed five trips, until March 1945.²⁷

After the war, in 1948, the *Pamir* sailed from Wellington for London with

a cargo of wool. This was her last voyage under the New Zealand flag. While in London, on March 3rd, 1948, she was visited by Her Royal Highness, Princess Elizabeth and the Duke of Edinburgh. On September 27th, 1948, Prime Minister P. Frazer announced that the New Zealand Government had decided to restore the *Pamir* to Finland. The ship was formally restored to Finnish ownership in a ceremony on board at Wellington on November 12th, 1948. The Minister of Marine, Hon. F. Hackett, said that under the command of five New Zealand masters many young New Zealanders had been made good seamen in the *Pamir*. The New Zealand merchant ensign was hauled down, and the blue-crossed flag of Finland was hoisted to the peak of the upper gaff. Then Mr. Ake Liewendahl declared the ship to be the property of the successors of the late Captain Gustaf Erikson.²⁸ At that time Captain Björkfelt had already returned to Finland.

A month later Captain Björkfelt arrived in Wellington by air via the United States and resumed command of the *Pamir*. He received orders to proceed to Port Victoria, South Australia, to load a cargo of barley for England. A crew of 29 hands was signed for the voyage, most of them young New Zealanders who had sailed previously in the *Pamir*. On a brilliant summer morning, February 1st, 1949, the *Pamir* weighed anchor and sailed down Wellington harbour for the last time.

4. Conclusion

The name of the *Pamir* is well-known both in Finland and New Zealand – as a matter of fact all over the world among people interested in maritime history. During and after the Second World War her fate was a part of the history of Finland and New Zealand. Apart from symbolic and aesthetic values she had many other functions. During the World War the *Pamir* was a major common denominator between New Zealand and Finland. During the war the Finnish crew members worked in various occupations in New Zealand. Some of them settled permanently in New Zealand after the war and married local girls. No more than half a dozen settled permanently in New Zealand. Of some of them some personal information was found as follows:²⁹



Karl Nyström, a member of the Pamir crew, Wellington 1991. SI, Turku.

Carl Rundberg, the Cook of the *Pamir* became a barman, lived in Taupo and in Lower Hutt. His cocktails: the "Carl's Dream", "Carl's Mistake", and "Death in the Afternoon", became famous.

Karl Nyström worked as a foreman in Wellington harbour. He was married from 1943 to 1965. Karl continued to work in the harbour until he retired in 1984.³⁰

Paul Nordberg lived in Plimmerton near Wellington and became a builder, he also got married in New Zealand.

*Harry Jäkälä (left)
married miss Joan
Patricia Elms in
St. John's church,
Melbourne,
on December 15th,
1950.*



Torbjorn Jansson was a waterside worker with Karl Nylund in Wellington until he returned to Åland Island in Finland.

Of the Officers, Captain Verner Björkfelt and the First Mate Arne Jansen, who had been the biggest problem for the New Zealand Aliens Authority, returned to Finland. The Second Officer Åke Liewendahl stayed in New Zealand, got married, but then, in 1964, he moved to Melbourne to become a navigation instructor there.

Harry Jäkälä, the youngest member of the crew, worked during the war as a lorry driver in Palmerston North. After seven years in New Zealand he moved to Australia where he worked as a seaman and a sugarcane cutter for four years. He married Joan Patricia Elms in Melbourne. In the autumn of 1952 the Jäkäläs settled in Mariehamn on Åland Island, where Harry worked as a postman for 32 years. Joan Patricia Jäkälä passed away in 1993, but Harry Jäkälä is still going strong.

The Finns from the Pamir became obedient citizens of their adopted country. Obviously they were happy with their life in New Zealand – as Karl Nyström, who has not visited Finland again, said in December, 1991, at the Workingmen's Club in Wellington with a glass of beer – "Couldn't be better!"

Chapter X: Attempts to Get Finnish Timber Workers in 1949–50

During and after the Second World War New Zealand was transferred from a colonial society to an independent one. This development was shaped by an awakening imagination and enterprise throughout the whole community. Thousands of servicemen returned from overseas with new ideas and an eagerness to resume the better life they had fought for. The demands of growth and expansion were pressuring every resource. The hydro-electric power developments continued at a fast pace, especially on the Waikato River. The National government of Sid Holland from 1949 to 1957 tried to give a greater emphasis to individual and private enterprise. The three traditional export categories of wool, meat, and dairy produce, were joined after the war by a fourth – forestry products. From the early 1950's the exotic forest planted before the Second World War provided not only trees for export, but also the material for pulp, newsprint and other paper products. Tasman Pulp and Paper and New Zealand Forest Products grew to be among the largest companies in New Zealand, supplying the local market and exporting extensively.¹ The Finns were a part of this industrial development.

In July, 1947, the New Zealand Government had reintroduced a policy of assisted, and in some cases free, passage for immigrants from the United Kingdom. The aim was to bring in persons of working age for essential productive and service industries. In 1950 the new National party government liberalized immigration policy. Provisions were also made to negotiate agreements to accept a number of single, non-British immigrants aged between 20–35 years. An agreement with the Netherlands Government included Dutch financial assistance. Arrangements were also made to accept immigrants from Austria, Denmark, the Federal Republic of Germany, and Switzerland.² The New Zealand employers also had interest in the Finnish labour force.

Mr. A. Carter, representing the Dominion Federated Sawmiller's Association, had attended a Forestry Conference in Helsinki in 1949.

Carter had met Mr. Onni Peltonen, Minister of Communications and Public Works in the Finnish Government, and outlined to him the class of labourer required in New Zealand for forestry work. According to Carter, there was a surplus of forest workers in Finland due to the loss of Karelia and displacement of some 500,000 persons from that area. The Finnish minister had assured that no obstacles would be placed in the way of Finnish forestry workers wanting to go to New Zealand. He had also indicated that such actions would be facilitated by his government. Carter suggested that New Zealand should send a representative to Finland with sufficient time to enable him to set up an office, advertise and personally interview applicants. Carter continued:

"Certain difficulties may arise due to the fact that Finland was officially an 'enemy country' during the war, but I am sure that the position of Finland is sufficiently understood to overcome any difficulties in this connection."

Carter's letter, dated on July 21st, 1949, was attached to a Memorandum on August 23rd, 1949, by A. R. Entrican, Director of Forestry, for the Director, Department of Labour and Employment, Immigration Division, Wellington. Entrican referred to the shortage of capable mill and bush workers in New Zealand and stated further:

"It is recognized that Finnish Forestry workers are among the most skilful in North Europe so that it was considered expedient that the three New Zealand representatives to the Third International Forestry Conference being held in Helsinki should ascertain the availability of Finnish workers and the attitude of the Finnish Government to any proposed scheme of emigration"

It appears that the New Zealand delegation visiting Helsinki in the summer of 1949 had consisted of Mr. T. C. Birch, State Forest Service, Mr. A. Carter, Dominion Fed. Sawmillers Association, and a Mr. Freedman, Timber Workers Union.³ The most active was Mr. Carter, representing employers' interests.

The New Zealand delegation to Finland obviously travelled via London as the High Commissioner cabled on August 18th, 1949, the following message to New Zealand:

"Suggest contact Sawmillers Federation for survey of man required. My opinion 300 would meet immediate requirements plus requirements of your

Department. Shipping not discussed with Finnish Government. Carter arrives New Zealand 3rd September."⁴

On August 23rd, 1949, the Employment Officer wrote to the Assistant Secretary of the Ministry of Labour about the immigration of Finnish forestry workers stating that the proposal will be submitted to the Government for consideration. He also pointed out that unless the Finnish Government is in a position to assist substantially in the matters of shipping a considerable difficulty will arise. There were still many hundreds of applicants in the United Kingdom and single displaced workers from Allied countries on the continent. The Dutch authorities had a proposal whereby they were prepared to land in Auckland – free of charge to New Zealand – 200 experienced single farm workers. The Employment Officer estimated that in six months his Department would be prepared to accept and accommodate 200 Finnish forestry workers.⁵

Nothing happened for a couple of months, until on October 10th, 1949, the Director of Employment stated that the proposal of Finnish timber workers had been referred to the Minister of Immigration. There was also a statement from the Controller of Customs:

"With reference to the attached memorandum from the Director of Employment, I have to advise that the few Finnish immigrants who have come to New Zealand have proved a good type of settlers, and I can see no objection to the acceptance in principle of the proposal that a substantial draft of Finnish timber workers should be selected for settlement here."

It was further advised that the entry to the Dominion could be allowed on the same basis as has been laid down for Dutch farm workers recently.⁶

However the Minister of Immigration directed that before any further action was taken enquiries should be made to ascertain whether the Finnish Government would be prepared to provide the necessary transport and to meet the expenses that would be involved in bringing in selected Finnish workers. Such an enquiry was suggested to be done through the Finnish Government's representative in the United Kingdom, and to advise the Minister of their attitude to the proposal concerning the cost of transport.⁷

The High Commissioner in London approached the Consul for Finland on the question. However, the Finnish Government was slow to answer.

Early in 1950 the Ministry of Labour in Wellington made enquiries to London and was informed that the Consul for Finland had been asked if his Government's answer could be expected. Wellington would be informed immediately.⁸ Obviously the Government of Finland had many bigger problems and was not keen to send Finns to New Zealand. Nothing happened.

While attending the International Labour Organization Conference on migration in Geneva in April–May, 1950, H. L. Bockett, Director of Employment and Leader of the New Zealand Delegation, gave (or sent) a letter, dated on June 29th, 1950, to Mr. N. A. Mannio, Secretary General, Ministry of Social Affairs for Finland, also participating in the conference. In the letter Bockett stated that for many years New Zealand had been seriously short of all types of workers, particularly experienced men for employment in the bush and sawmills. The New Zealand representatives to the Forestry Conference in Finland 12 months previously had been advised to recruit experienced workers from Finland. No reply had been received stating the views of the Finnish Government. If the Finnish Government would be sympathetic, Mr. Bockett would gladly visit Finland for 2–3 days to have discussions with the appropriate officials.⁹

In the answer a week later Niilo Mannio referred to their discussion in Geneva and to Bockett's letter and stated:

"The possibilities for emigration from Finland are extremely limited, but it must be admitted that there is some unemployment amongst the forest workers in the North of the country. I have not been able to get fixed the final point of view of our authorities concerning emigration of these people to New Zealand, but formally this people are free to emigrate. A mass emigration is however not allowed without permission."

Mannio further advised Bockett to decide himself upon his suggested voyage to Finland, especially as the Finnish authorities would not be able to make a decision before September.¹⁰

Consequently Bockett sent a telegram from London to Wellington stating that the Finnish Legation in London had said that the change of Finnish Government may account for the absence of an official response to the enquiry. Finnish Legation also expressed the view that the Finnish Government would not be particularly interested in emigration of forestry workers because of the fairly good employment situation at the time. In

the circumstances Bockett did not propose to visit Finland. The Minister of External Affairs from Wellington agreed that the visit to Finland was not justified.¹¹

Mr. Bockett missed a chance to see Finland and advised Mr. Mannio to advise Jack Brennan, the Chief Migration Officer, about his Government's attitude to the emigration of two or three hundred forestry workers as soon as the Finnish Government was able to come to a conclusion on the matter.

In New Zealand there was still an interest in Finnish labour force, as appears from an enquiry by the Director of Forestry asking to report of the progress in the matter of Finnish timber workers.¹² In his answer Bockett related his discussion with Mr. Mannio and came to the conclusion:

"My discussions with representatives of other European countries, which include Germany, Italy, Denmark, and Switzerland, indicated that there was no prospect of securing experienced timber workers from these countries. ... But it is expected that it will be possible to obtain some 1,200 single male workers per annum from Holland as a result of a migration agreement between the Netherlands and New Zealand Governments."¹³

Mr. Entrican, the Director of Forestry, thanked Mr. Bockett, the Director of Employment, for the information and advised that the Dutch forestry workers had proved to be most satisfactory.¹⁴

The conclusion came in October, 1950, when E. Sohlberg, the Councillor of the Finnish Legation in London, sent a letter to J. Brennan, the Chief Migration Officer at the New Zealand Government Office in London.¹⁵ In the letter Sohlberg informed that the question has now been examined by the appropriate Authorities in Finland and they have come to the conclusion that in view of the present situation in Finland with regard to the employment of such workers they cannot see their way to further their emigration abroad. The letter in the Archives of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs in Helsinki was signed on September 19th, 1950, by Kauno Kleemola, the Minister of Communications and Public Works.¹⁶ J. Brennan sent a copy of Sohlberg's letter to Mr. H. L. Bockett, the Director of Employment in the Department of Labour in Wellington. Finally when Mr. Bockett had informed the Director of Forestry on October 17th, 1950, the matter concerning the prospects of Finnish timber workers to New Zealand was closed.¹⁷ The next official government document of the

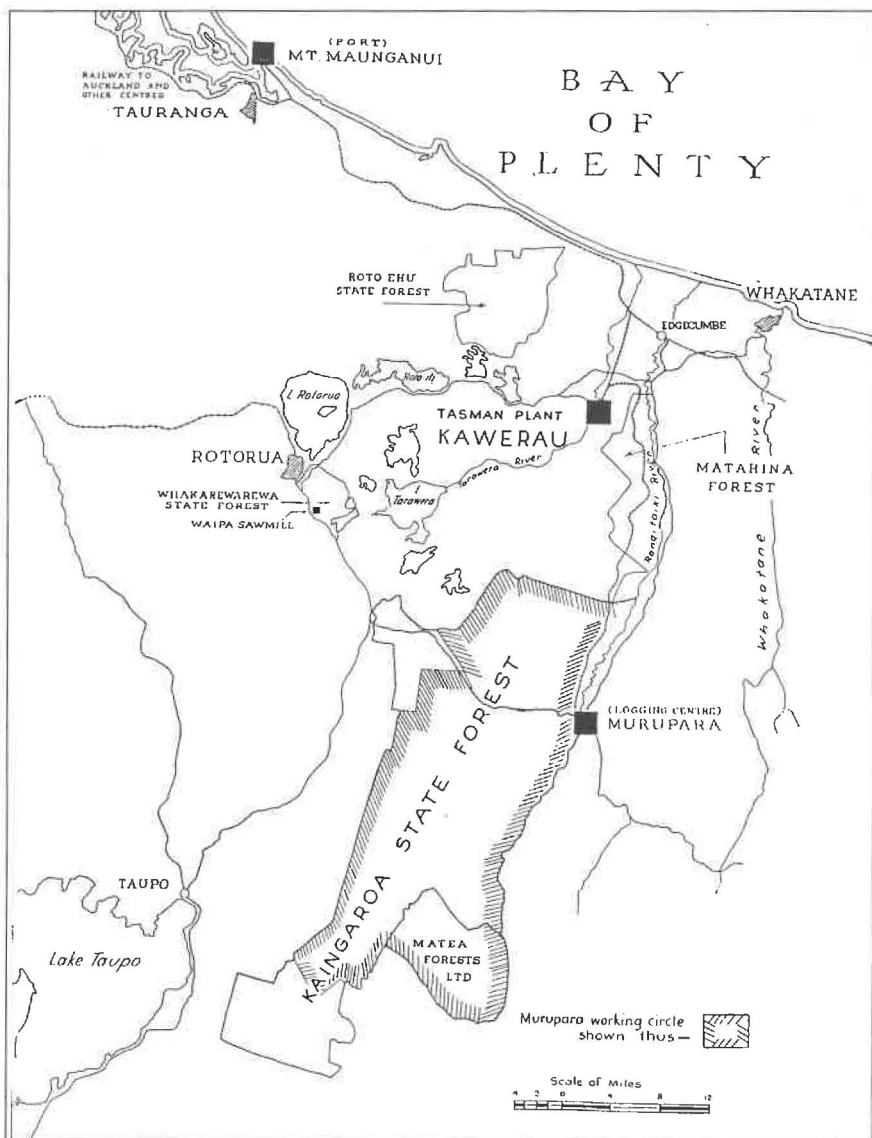
immigration from Finland dates from the year 1956. By this time quite a number of Finnish papermill workers had settled in New Zealand through the initiatives of private companies – the type of immigration strongly supported by the New Zealand Government.

The failure of the attempt to get Finnish timber workers to New Zealand was mainly due to the unrealistic assumption that the Finnish Government would probably be interested in paying the travel expenses – as the Netherlands did. The New Zealand Government was not, perhaps, aware enough of the Finnish mentality, or got an over-optimistic impression of the reports of the New Zealand Delegation to the Forestry Conference in Helsinki in the summer of 1949. It was the same situation as when the New Zealand Aliens Authorities had been investigating the crew of the *Pamir* of their assumed pro-German attitudes in 1941. The bureaucratic officials did not really conceive the point, which many crew members did, that Finland was having her own fight against Soviet Union. Finland just happened to be a cobelligerent with Germany.

The Netherlands provided a major source for New Zealand timber workers, and they received travel assistance from one or more sources. From 1950 onwards the New Zealand Assisted Passage Scheme was extended to include young Dutch, and in the peak year of 1952/53 2,108 males and 600 females arrived. In 1953 5,290 Dutch immigrants – assisted and unassisted – arrived.¹⁸ Soon the Dutch minority was the largest non-British group in New Zealand. In the Census of 1966 the number of persons born in the Netherlands exceeded 20,000. No doubt the situation after the war was different in the Netherlands compared to Finland. There was an extensive population pressure, with an outlet being emigration overseas, supported by the Dutch Government and various organizations.

An Epilogue

In 1947 and 1948 two hundred United Kingdom migrants were directed to New Zealand State Forests. Many went to Kaingaroa where logging operations had begun and a large sawmill was completed. Kaingaroa grew rapidly to the largest and busiest forest settlement in the land. Among the first workers were Pacific Islanders, especially from the Cook Islands. Less typical perhaps were the Canadians, recruited to Kaingaroa in the mid-



Locality map of Kawerau and Murupara, showing the location of the various forests, June 1955. Moore 1991, p. 29.

1950's.¹⁹ A few years ago, at a conference of the Nordic Association for Canadian Studies in Oslo, I met Mrs. Elinor Barr from Thunder Bay, Canada. She related that in the 1950's she had been in New Zealand in a logging town, and there were also quite a few Finns from Canada.

In September, 1954, an advertisement appeared in a Thunder Bay newspaper recruiting experienced loggers to go to New Zealand. In the same year it had been decided by the Government and the Tasman Company to form a private company, Kaingaroa Logging Company Limited, to handle the logging operations from Kaingaroa Forest to the railhead near Murupara, some 40 kilometres east of Rotorua, and further down to the saw – and papermills. Mr. Alan Symington, the Superintendent of that Company, interviewed the applicants and hired a total of 120 men from Nova Scotia to Saskatchewan in various locations. Mr. Symington promised good wages, a low cost of living, furnished houses, a subtropical climate, and transportation to Murupara. In return the loggers signed a contract to work for the Kaingaroa Logging Company for three years.

The Thunder Bay group left for New Zealand on December 31th, 1954. This group included half a dozen Canadian-Finns: Onni Kaukinen and Matti Koski, both heavy equipment operators, Sulo Silvesti, a truck driver, Veikko Pursiainen, a cutter/feller, and the Koski sisters, Laura and Taimi, with their non-Finnish husbands. Waino Poutanen and Bill Forsgren, cutter/fellers followed with their families in February, 1955. The main group boarded a ship in Vancouver, and in Suva, Fiji, a representative of the Kaingaroa Logging Company came aboard and informed them that the houses would not be furnished and the bus would stop at a store in Auckland, so the Canadians could buy furniture on a payroll deduction basis.

When the bus arrived at Murupara there was a new company town located beside an older village named Keranui. The two communities shared a few shops, butcher, grocer, greengrocer, baker, chemist etc. The families were let off at the newly-built houses and the single men went to their quarters. The next day the men were issued with 4½-pound Kelly axes, much heavier than those used in Canada, and went to work.

The Kaingaroa Forest is a huge tract covered with already mature larch and *pinus ponderosa* (according to Elinor Barr), which had been planted as a job-creation project during the 1930's depression. The trees were to be used

to make paper at the Kawerau mill – where Finnish papermill workers also had been recruited.

The first payday – recalls Elinor Barr – was unforgettable. Her husband and a friend could hardly believe their eyes. All the figures were much lower than Mr. Symington had said. Also she had already found that costs were quite a bit higher. The only promise he had kept was transportation to Murupara! As for the subtropical climate, the Canadians soon discovered that this too was false. In addition, neither the houses nor the heating systems were adequate for the winter weather experienced.

Disappointment was widespread. The men worked on a bonus system, that is, they earned a basic amount for taking out a set measurement of wood. They were paid extra – a bonus – for anything above that basic amount. They worked hard as most of them wanted to earn money for various reasons – to pay off their furniture, for example, and to return to Canada. Soon they were taking home such high bonuses that the Company raised the basic amount. The Kiwis in the bush were furious with the Canadians for ruining what they considered a good thing.

Two Finns, Onni Kaukinen and Matti Koski, paid the Company for their fare and returned to Canada after five months. Early in 1956 there was a court case in Rotorua when the Company sued a Canadian for breach of contract. The Canadian countersued on the basis of misrepresentation. The Canadian group helped to pay the lawyer because they considered it as a test case. Kaingaroa Logging Company lost the case and after that the Canadians were free to leave without paying their transportation to New Zealand. All but one or two of the 120 Canadians left the Company before their three year contracts were completed.¹⁹

As a further epilogue of the projects in the Kaingaroa State Forest, a Finnish family, Kajavala, lived for a while at the logging centre of Murupara in the 1960's. Toivo Kajavala was born in Pori in 1924, and after finishing a Forestry degree at the University of Helsinki, he left for the Californian redwood forests. He returned to Finland for a short while and then moved to Port Arthur in Canada. Toivo had always a desire to take up fruit farming, and so he and his wife, Kyllikki, moved to Brazil. Later on they moved to Paraguay and settled on a 120 hectares farm of citrus trees, near Villarica, the second largest town of Paraguay. But citrus farming was not easy, the biggest problem being pests. Also snakes, as well as the marauders, a dangerous unpredictable clan of people, were menaces to the

settlers. The best way to minimize the danger was to keep the farm clear of undergrowth. A bounty was also paid to local Indians for every snake they killed.

The Kajavala family moved to New Zealand late in 1961 or in 1962. In a meeting of the Kawerau Finnish Society on July 25th, 1961, there was a letter from Mr. Kajavala from Paraguay seeking contact with the Kawerau Finns. However, in subsequent minutes there is no reference to Mr. Kajavala. In the Tasman Logbook, June 1963, there is an article about the Kajavala family under the title: "Spent nine years on orchard in Paraguay". It appears also that

"Several months ago Toivo and Kyllikki left Paraguay to come to New Zealand, where Toivo has resumed his profession in forestry."²⁰

Of the later phases of the Kajavala family there is not much information available. Finnish immigrants in Kawerau know nothing about Mr. Kajavala. It seems that the family, or part of the family, stayed in New Zealand, because in 1975 New Zealand citizenship was granted to Jalo Tapio Kajavala, born in 1947 in Pori, Finland. This Jalo Tapio is probably the son of Toivo Kajavala.²¹

Chapter XI: Pioneers of the Pulp and Paper Industry

1. Armas Kivi – A Canadian Finn

Before the Second World War the main destinations of Finnish emigrants were the United States and Canada. Some of them later continued their journey to Australia and New Zealand. One of these was Armas Oma Veikko Kivimäki, shortened to Kivi. He was born in 1909 in Kauhajoki and left for Canada in 1926. Kivi worked as a pipe fitter at the Ocean Falls Paper Mill in northern Vancouver and became naturalized in 1935. Then in 1937 Kivi decided to go to New Zealand with the Ahola brothers. While in Auckland they heard that a paper mill was to be established at Whakatane. The Finns were employed to install the machinery, and Mr. Kivi worked there fitting groundwood and cardboard machinery. After the mill went into production Kivi was transferred to the maintenance staff where he again – according to a Work Certificate – proved to be a very satisfactory worker. Kivi was recommended as a very steady and conscientious man when he left the factory to take another position. Armas Kivi went to Melbourne, where he was employed by Australian Paper Mills between June 1938 and February 1939. However, he preferred New Zealand to Australia and returned and worked for the N.Z. Forest Products Ltd. at Penrose Paper Mill as Superintendent. In 1940 Kivi married Bertha Hughes, born in Dannevirke in 1917, being partly of Norwegian origin. They had three children: Linda, b. 1944, Bruce, b. 1946, and Esther, b. 1950. In 1960 the company sent Kivi to Scandinavia to select machinery, and he was able to visit his mother at Kauhajoki. In 1973 he accepted a two-year contract with Madeira Sintetica of Recife, Brazil, to install a new wallboard plant. He and his wife were able to realize a dream to travel up the Amazon. Armas Kivi died in 1975. His son, Bruce Kivi, is an Air New Zealand Captain and has recently – after visiting Finland – found his Finnish identity. An interesting feature is that Linda Kivimäki-Price has



Arthur (Armas) and Berta Kivi with their children Linda, Bruce and Esther in Auckland in the 1950's. SI, Turku.

taken back the old Finnish family name, and her daughter Heidi Price, a Civil Engineer, moved to Finland and works for the Helsinki City Council.¹

2. Sulo Kanerva

Another pioneer was Sulo, known as "Gus" Kanerva. He was born in Kustavi in 1904 and arrived in New Zealand in 1935, where he had a brother, Captain K.W. Kanerva sailing in New Zealand coastal waters. During his first years in New Zealand Gus lived with his brother. The



Sulo "Gus" Kanerva, his wife Aili and daughter Tuula in their home yard in Auckland about 1966. SI, Turku.

death of Kustaa Kanerva during the Second World War caused Gus great sorrow. Although he felt being left alone, he did not want to return to Finland. Gus worked for an electricity plant and as a surveyor. In 1945 Gus Kanerva joined the New Zealand Forest Products and became a foreman of the hardboard press section of the "Pinex" mill at Penrose, having a reputation as a man who lives for hardboard. In his quiet, competent way Gus Kanerva – it is recorded – thought up several improvements for the drier and hardboard press units. For example, he designed windows for the hardboard drier, enabling boards to be kept under observation as they moved through the oven. Another improvement was the separation device which corrected any tendency for the boards to buckle during drying. Gus Kanerva married Aili Halonen in 1955, and they had one daughter Tuula.

Aili Halonen had been born in Viipuri in 1914. She had worked as a children's nurse in London until 1952, when she and four other Finnish girls had left London for New Zealand in a steamship. Aili had spent two years in Wellington working at Home Aid Service. Later on she had moved to Auckland, where she met Sulo "Gus" Kanerva. The Kanerva family lived in Auckland, where their house was frequently visited by Finnish guests. Gus Kanerva died in 1968, and in 1974 Mrs. Kanerva and her daughter moved to Finland. Aili Kanerva was happy to be back in Finland.

Tuula had received her University Entrance Certificate in New Zealand and after moving to Finland she studied at Helsinki School of Economics. Now Tuula is working as an accounting manager. She lives in Espoo with her husband Matti Skytén and their children Emmi, Kustaa and Oiva. Aili Kanerva died in 1987. Tuula and her family spend their holidays at the Kanervas' house in Kustavi.²

3. *Jerm Thorwald Christiansen*

After the Penrose factories in Auckland the next contribution of Finns to the New Zealand forest industry took place at Tokoroa located 350 metres above sea level in the region between Waikato River and Mamaku. The great volcanic plateau of the North Island was New Zealand's latest major frontier for settlement and industrial expansion. Maori history records that a great fighting chief Tokoroa was slain during the siege of Pohaturua, the name being a tribute to the old chief's memory. By the early 1870's farming and grazing settlement started in the region. The first sawmill started to operate in 1903 logging native trees. Perpetual Forest Ltd commenced planting pine forests around Tokoroa in 1924-35 on land considered useless for farming. These plantings laid the foundation for the establishment of New Zealand Forest Products Ltd's timber, pulp and paper mills at Kinleith, eight kilometres south of Tokoroa, a township of 1,100 people in 1948.³

The plans for the first pulp and paper mill factory at Tokoroa were started during the Second World War. The decision commenced in 1947, to create and operate a bleach plant for the processing of the chemical pulp constituent of the newsprint furnish, related to the advantages of sulphate over sulphite pulp from plantation-grown *Pinus Radiata*.⁴ After many financial and other problems, the plans for the mill were to be ordered from a papermill in Karlstad, Sweden. However Karlstad indicated that they could not begin working on drawings for at least two years. Instead they offered to send an expert to supervise the preparation of detailed drawings, assist with the purchase of equipment and see the mill through its initial stages. The expert they produced was Jerm Thorwald Christiansen, whose technical contribution to Forest Products' pulp and paper mills was to be very large. Civil Engineer Jerm Thorwald



Finnish Civil Engineer Jerm Christiansen, Superintendent of the Kinleith paper mills at Tokoroa, was a pioneer of the New Zealand pulp and paper industry. March of Pine, Vol. 6, Nr. 3, 1957.

Christiansen was born in 1911 in Kymi. His grandparents had moved from Norway to Finland in 1880.⁵

HEALY, when writing the history of the Company (1982) gave the following description of Jerm Christiansen:

"A big, withdrawn, nervous man who used to walk around the mill in a suit and battered trilby hat, he had been something of a child prodigy. He capped his promise as brilliant schoolboy by obtaining masters degrees in engineering and chemistry at the Technical University of Helsinki. He was gifted with a phenomenal memory. By the exceptionally early age of twenty-three, he was assistant manager of United Paper Mills (1934–37) and then general manager of the Kemi Kraft Mill in Finland. He is generally credited with being very advanced in his knowledge of pulp mill machinery and establishment but rather less knowledgeable on the paper side. His upper class background, shyness, and sometimes dictatorial manner help to explain the difficulties in personal relationships he experienced in Forest Products. Those who worked closely with him greatly admired his intelligence, capacity and drive. He was a giant of a man with a tremendous ability to assimilate information, to think clearly, and to hack through nonsense ... He was very punctilious in detailed design. He made mistakes but if you don't make mistakes you don't make anything."⁶

Soon after his arrival in New Zealand in March 1948 Christiansen, General Superintendent, began to work with Hugh Kilgour, Superintendent Engineer, on estimates for the pulp mill. A 10,000-ton pulp mill was regarded as quite uneconomic, so the capacity was raised to 25,000 tons. The two engineers held numerous discussions with David Henry, Managing Director, on machinery requirements etc. Many of the technical staff working on the drawings at the Penrose head office, Auckland, including Pulp and Paper Mill Superintendent Jerm Christiansen, moved to Kinleith early in 1952. The pulp mill capacity was raised to 45,000 tons, and this called for a very substantial increase in manpower for the mill and logging. As a result of newspaper advertisements in Norway, Sweden, Finland, England, Canada and Australia, several hundred men applied for key operator positions in the new pulp and paper mill at Kinleith. Mackney and Christiansen went to Britain and Scandinavia to interview likely applicants.⁷ From Finland the first nine tradesmen arrived in June 1953, to be followed later by many others.

On Tuesday, July 28th, 1953, at 3.45 p.m. the Kinleith pulp mill blew its first cook, produced by an old Valmet Kamyra machine, bought by Christiansen from Finland, and driven by a recently arrived Finnish operator, Pauli Lajunen.⁸ There was an atmosphere of drama and delight amidst busy machinery manufactured in a dozen different countries and manned by an international collection of operatives from many of those same countries. John Turner, a Canadian, opened the blow valve, took the first handful of pulp made in New Zealand, and presented it to Jerm Christiansen.⁹ The Company Journal *March of Pine* enthused:

“What has been happening at Kinleith may well prove as important in the long run to New Zealand’s economy as the first shipment of refrigerated beef from Dunedin in 1882.”

And it was further recorded that three of the busiest men acting as midwives for the birth of New Zealand’s first chemical pulp were Mr. Christiansen, Mr. John Turner and Mr. Stacey. They had only a few relaxing moments for days (and nights) until all was running smoothly.¹⁰

Like the pulp mill, the paper mill came on stream at the appointed time on November 14th, 1953. The grand opening of the Kinleith paper mill took place on February 20th, 1954, by Prime Minister Sidney Holland and

was attended by 6,500 people. David Henry, the Managing Director of the New Zealand Forest Products, was knighted soon after the official opening.¹¹

Mr. Jerm Christiansen, the Pulp Mill Superintendent, acted as a contact for the Finnish Government and was appointed Honorary Vice-Consul for Finland in 1950. In 1963 he received the Order of Lion of Finland, Knight First Class, for his services. As a superintendent Christiansen would do a tour of the mills religiously every morning from about 8.50 until 10 a.m. to ensure that everything was running to his satisfaction. Others adopted a similar procedure to keep personal contact with their large staff in the mills. By 1955 the labour force had grown to 500. In 1956 Christiansen was sent to Japan to study the operation of continuous pulp digesters.

When Jerm Christiansen made another of his overseas trips on company business, his assistant, Jim Currie, took charge of Kinleith operations. In June 1963, two months before Sir David died, J. T. Currie was put in charge of Kinleith with the title of General Director of Kinleith operations. Christiansen, formerly General Superintendent of the mills and previously above Currie, was left simply as New Projects' Director. Although his pride would not allow him to show it, Christiansen felt the change of position very keenly.

By the end of 1964, Forest Products had four paper machines and a pulp mill capacity of 100,000 tons a year. Christiansen was involved in new projects, especially on the No 2 pulp mill with awesome quantities of wood chips and chemicals and began turning out its huge volume of pulp on January 28th, 1973. But two years before this outstanding work of engineering was completed, J. T. Christiansen, the New Projects' Leader, died of a heart attack at the wheel of his car within the Kinleith mill area on January 19th, 1970. His death meant the loss of one of the key figures in Forest Products' pioneering period as a pulp and paper producer and in the volume production of pulp and paper in New Zealand.¹² Mrs. Alla Christiansen remained in New Zealand and was killed in an aircraft accident in the Antarctic in 1979.

Chapter XII: From the Kymi Valley to the Volcanic Plateau – Tokoroa 1953

1. Arrival

A feature of the development of N.Z. Forest Products Ltd was the recruitment of technical experts from the United Kingdom, Scandinavia and North America.¹ Early in 1953 in some Finnish newspapers there was an advertisement seeking qualified papermill workers for a new pulp and paper mill in Tokoroa, New Zealand.² In the spring of 1953 Jerm Christiansen, General Superintendent, interviewed the applicants and made the selection. The men were selected because of their technical knowledge to take up positions in the Kinleith pulp and paper mills. The Company promised to pay the travel expenses and to provide accommodation. In return the applicants signed a four-year contract, after which time they could get a free journey back to Finland or they could continue their work. The first group consisted of four men from Sunila and four from Kotka. All were married, one was a widower with two children – altogether 28 persons:

The Tokoroa group of 1953³

Name	Age	From	Occupation on arrival	Occupation in NZ
HYVÖNEN,				
Toivo	42 years	Kotka	Kamyr Machine Operator	Kamyr Machine Operator
Aira	12 "			
Pekka	9 "			
KILJUNEN,				
Verner	35 years	Kotka	Flakt Dryer Operator	Flakt Dryer Operator
Anna-Liisa	42 "			

Name	Age	From	Occupation on arrival	Occupation in NZ
LAJUNEN,				
Paul Olof	36 years	Sunila	Machine Operator	Flakt Dryer
Hilja	35 "		Operator	
Kirsti	13			
Kyösti	11			
Kai	6			
(Jukka and Sirpa were born in Tokoroa)				
MYLLÄRINEN,				
Edward	44 years	Sunila	Milling-machine	Caustic Operator
Elin	42 "		Operator	
Terttu	10 "			
(Anna-Liisa, 27, and Leo, 26, arrived in 1955)				
PARKKALI,				
Matti	45 years	Sunila	Evaporator	Evaporator
Orvokki	38 "		Operator Operator	
Jussi	5 "			
REINIKKALA,				
Lauri	39 years	Kotka	Batch Digester	Batch Digester
Tyyne	40 "		Cook	Cook
Kalevi	12 "			
Liisa	6			
SÄDE,				
Eino	46 years	Sunila	Evaporator	Evaporator
Sylvi	42 "		Attendant	Attendant
Eila	17 "			
Erkki	7 "			
VARTIAINEN,				
Orvo	37 years	Kotka	Flakt Dryer	Flakt Dryer
Martta	37 "		Operator	Operator
Yrjö	14 "			
Rauno	1 "			
(Roy was born in Tokoroa)				

The journey from Helsinki to New Zealand began on May 5th, 1953, by ship to Stockholm, as it appears from a diary of Matti Parkkali.⁴ From Stockholm the journey continued by train to Gothenburg and further by ship to Tilbury, England, where the group embarked on the ocean liner

Otranto, bound for Australia. The Finns enjoyed being on a big ship with entertainment and many things to do, especially the swimming pool was popular. The biggest problem was their lack of English. From Naples the voyage continued to the Suez Channel. Port Said they found very interesting. On the Red Sea the weather became very hot, and the Finns found it difficult to sleep in a sauna-like heat. The voyage continued with interesting stops in Aden and Colombo. When the Equator was crossed the Neptunus festival was arranged to entertain the passengers. In honour of the crowning of Queen Elizabeth II a special party was arranged for the children and a ball for the adults. On June 1st, 1953, the ship arrived in Fremantle, Western Australia. The Finns continued to have difficulties with the language, but they managed somehow with the use of a dictionary. With a short stop in Adelaide and Melbourne, which was found to be a very busy city with shops full of many things, the Finns disembarked in Sydney on June 13th, 1953, after a voyage of over five weeks. The group stayed at a Sydney hotel for six days and they did not like the food. However, the city had many attractive places to see, especially the Zoo, museums, big shops etc. On June 19th, 1953, the Finns embarked on the *Monowai*, sailing for New Zealand. Mr. Heino from the Finnish Consulate in Sydney was most helpful. The ship was much smaller but more pleasant than the *Otranto*. Men and women were not separated, as had been the case on the big ocean liner.⁴

Parkkali's diary ends on June 22nd, 1953. On the following day, June 23rd, 1953, the *Monowai* berthed at Auckland harbour. Over the loudspeaker came the voice of Gus Kanerva, a fellow employee of N.Z. Forest Products Ltd, Penrose, saying in Finnish: "Welcome to New Zealand fellow Finns!"

Kalevi Reinikkala, aged 12 at that time, recalls the arrival:

"We stayed in Auckland long enough to purchase furniture from farmers. They were to have been delivered to Tokoroa same time as we arrived there. Not all came, but enough for us to settle in. First night was very cold."⁵

2. Settling down

The Finns stayed in Auckland long enough to purchase furniture which were delivered to Tokoroa. Then the journey continued to Tokoroa. Houses



Families from Finland to settle in New Zealand in 1953 before disembarking from the Manowai at Auckland. According to the Weekly News July 1, 1953, the men were all skilled in the use of paper-making machinery and had been brought out to work at New Zealand Forest Product's pulp and paper mills at Kinleith. SI, Turku.

were provided for the newcomers, but these were found to be quite poorly built. The first night in the new houses was cold. Mrs. Hilja Lajunen recalls grass growing through a hole in the floor.⁶ The *Journal of the Company*, the *March of Pine* wished the 61 British, Canadian, Finnish and Swedish families welcome with the traditional Maori Greeting: "Haeremai!" The following greeting was published in English, Finnish and Swedish:

Welcome to New Zealand

"We at N.Z. Forest Products Ltd. want you to feel at home here and to know that you are taking part in a great new industry in this part of the world. It is true that overseas you have much larger plants making pulp and paper, but then New Zealand is a smaller country and only within the last 14 years have we started to utilize more fully our exotic pine forests.

You older people may find some of our habits and most of our food strange. Some things about New Zealand you will like, others you will dislike. We know you will see in New Zealand a land of opportunity for you and your children. We want you to take part in our activities and to exchange your ideas with us, because we feel we have something to learn from one another.

There is a special welcome to your children, who, with our own children, are the New Zealanders of tomorrow."

The only picture was "A group of Finnish technicians who assist in the operation of the Kinleith Pulp Mill."

By the middle of 1953 all the units of the Kinleith Pulp mill were in operation. The men started working. It is recorded that none of the Finns could speak English, so the Finnish words for "open" and "close" were chalked up near valves and turncocks for a time. As Don Stacey, pulp mill manager put it: "They had to learn some English smartly and we had to learn some Finnish." It was not long before the worst of the language problems were overcome. Then, on July 28th, 1953, when the first pulp went through the washers the news could not be conveyed in English to



The first pulp machine in Tokoroa was a "Kamyr" machine made by Ahlström for the Karhula factory in Finland, and brought used to New Zealand. Pauli Lajunen (left) drove the first pulp on July 23, 1953, assisted by Verner Kiljunen (right). SI, Turku.

Mr. Christiansen ... it was conveyed to him by a beaming smile from a Finnish operator. That smile told him all he wanted to know!⁸

Forest Products Ltd was doing well. Two years after the arrival of the Finnish group, in 1955, the Company was reported to own over 70,000 hectares of *Radiata Pine* forests growing 3,000 tons daily. The staff was over 2,000, there were 700 Company houses and 55,000 shareholders in 51 countries.⁹ Other Finns, relatives and friends of the first eight families, started to arrive and found employment at the Kinleith mills. The New Zealand Immigration Authorities insisted that newcomers had to have jobs and accommodation before arrival.

The Kinleith factory was expanding rapidly. In addition to qualified paper workers there was a need for paper and pulp engineers. On December 1st, 1954, N.Z. Forest Products Ltd wrote to the Immigration Division on behalf of a Finnish Civil Engineer Kaarlo Juusela.

"Since September 1953 when this company first commenced producing Kraft Pulps at Kinleith, production has steadily increased and for the past five months has been at a level approaching the maximum capacity of the present installation. Administration and technical problems have increased as production has risen and it has been found necessary to appoint an assistant to the Pulp and Paper Superintendent, to help cope with these problems.

Finland is one of the few countries where trained executives holding necessary qualifications for a position such as this can be found. During a recent trip overseas the Managing Director, Sir David Henry and the Superintendent of the Pulp and Paper Mills, Mr. J. T. Christiansen interviewed applicants and appointed Mr. K. Juusela to the position."

D. O. Walker, Assistant Secretary of the Immigration Division in Wellington, wrote further:

"... treat this letter as a formal application for permission for this family to enter New Zealand."¹⁰

It was so easy to enter New Zealand in those days when there was a job vacancy waiting.

In December, 1954, Kaarle and Irja Juusela with their children Pekka and Eeva arrived in Tokoroa from a similar paper mill in Lohja, Finland, where Juusela had been the Engineer in Charge of Production. He joined the Forest Products' Kinleith Staff as an Assistant to Mr. J. T. Christiansen,



In the Kinleith Paper Mill, Tokoroa Finns were the pioneers of New Zealand paper industry. SI, Turku.

Pulp and Paper Superintendent, and was engaged in pulp mill extensions. Both Mr. and Mrs. Juusela were graduate chemists from the Finnish Institute of Technology, and at Lohja Mrs. Juusela was in charge of a technical control laboratory. They had two children, a son, Pekka, eight years, and a daughter, Eeva, four years. They quickly learned together with young compatriots and other foreign children, to speak and write English. According to the Company Journal in most cases the children soon mastered the language and became tutors to their parents but in this family Mr. Juusela spoke English fairly well.¹¹

The "new Kiwi" families from Finland were settling down more or less happily in Tokoroa. The men were busy with their work and the women made the homes and took care of the children. The social life consisted of visiting each other. The first Finnish baby to be born in Tokoroa arrived at the new temporary maternity hospital on November 11th, 1953, to Mr. and Mrs. Orvo Vartiainen. The baby was given the English name Roy Leonard.¹² During 1954 Tokoroa's population reached the 5,000 mark, mainly as a result of the Kinleith industries.¹³



Unto Räikkönen, who had arrived in New Zealand in 1951, moved from Gisborne to Tokoroa and had a sauna business in the early 1960's before he started to work for the paper mill. SI, Turku.

There was great excitement amongst the Tokoroa Finns when Matti Parkkali announced that he intended to build a sauna. According to the Finns, a sojourn in a sauna was the only way to get really clean. They believed that you had better sweat dirt and poison out through the pores of your skin than try to wash it away. The Parkkalis used the sauna twice a week.¹⁴ Soon other families followed the example. Later, in 1963, Unto Räikkönen, who had moved to Tokoroa from Gisborne, built the first public sauna in the town. Räikkönen's sauna could take 20–30 persons at a time, four nights were for men and two for women. In three years there were 10,000 visitors, but when Mr. Räikkönen started to work for N.Z. Forest Products Ltd it became difficult to maintain the sauna and after three years it was closed.¹⁵

In 1957 overseas workers' contracts generally expired. According to HEALY, who wrote the history of N.Z. Forest Products Ltd, some stayed on but others took their return ticket home. All the Canadians – except two – left Tokoroa. The men generally enjoyed the work, even though the wages were very low by Canadian standards, but the women hated the living conditions, which were primitive compared with what they had been used to. They were shocked at houses without central heating and

double-glazed windows.¹⁶ Of the eight Finnish families none left after the four years; one had been sent back to Finland after half a year due to a drinking habit.

Instead of leaving, more Finns were arriving in Tokoroa from Finland and elsewhere. The Company seems to have favoured Finnish employees. There is a letter from the Pulp Manager to a Finnish Operator asking him to tell his friends about the work and housing opportunities in Tokoroa, and the Manager continued:

"Currently we have a shortage of applicants for pulp mill positions and we are trying a scheme which worked very satisfactorily some 6 years ago. We are approaching some of the leading staff we have to ask if you know anyone who would be interested in working in the Pulp Mill, either now or in the future."¹⁷



When the men were working the wives had time to chat over the back fence in Tokoroa. Mrs. Orvokki Parkkali (left) and Mrs. Elin Myllärinen. SI, Turku.



Tokoroa Finns celebrating Mother's Day at the Lajunens in 1963. SI, Turku.

Consequently the number of Finns in Tokoroa increased. In the early 1960's there were about 50–60, the children included. The social activities had consisted mainly of family gatherings, picnics, occasional gatherings when a Finnish pastor came from Australia, or visits to a similar Finnish community in Kawerau. However, there was an obvious need for a more formal organization to take care of their common interests and activities.

3. The Tokoroa Finnish Club 1961–77

On August 8th, 1961, a meeting was held at the Lajunens with 15 participants. In addition there were three persons from Kawerau who had come to talk about the earlier launching of the Kawerau Finnish Club. Mrs.

Seija Saikkonen from Kawerau was elected to preside over the meeting, and she explained the rules of the Kawerau Club. The meeting then decided to found an independent Finnish Club in Tokoroa. Unto Räikkönen was elected the first Chairman and Elin Myllärinen Secretary. The membership fee was 10 shillings.

The aim of the Club was

- to maintain Finnish culture and habits,
- to promote the social activities of the members,
- to maintain contacts with the old home country and Finns in New Zealand and Australia.

These aims were to be achieved by arranging Finnish national festivals, by teaching the children old Finnish traditions and making them familiar with Finnish literature, and by trying to maintain their Finnish language, as well as by supporting sports, music and English study activities. The Club also planned to learn more about New Zealand, its way of life, history, etc. by inviting speakers to the meetings.

In the beginning the Club had many activities. For example, the men had a sauna competition with the Kawerau Finns, and the women had a sewing circle which made rugs for the Club's raffle. At Christmas 1961 a picnic was held at Lake Taupo, and the attendance was – according to the Minutes – 100 per cent. In 1962 Chairman Unto Räikkönen proposed that the Club should build a summer cottage for sale. Later it was found difficult to get a loan for the project, which never materialized. A general meeting was decided to be held once a month in the homes of the members. Sports was also important, especially volley ball. The club was a useful vehicle in arranging occasional visits of Finnish Lutheran pastors from Australia. The Lutheran Church of New Zealand was also in touch with the Club, which however, could not give any financial support, except from individual members.

In November 1964 Unto Räikkönen, a man of many ideas, wanted to leave the chair, and Pauli Lajunen, the Operator who blew the first chemical pulp in New Zealand, was elected chairman. Elin Myllärinen continued as an active secretary. Of the many activities of the Club might be mentioned a skiing tour to Ruapehu in August 1965. In the following year it was decided that £ 5 from the Club funds would be given to the members who were hospitalized for a longer period. In October 1966 Lauri

Reinikkala was elected chairman and Orvokki Parkkali secretary.

On June 20th, 1968, the Tokoroa Finns celebrated the 15th Anniversary of their arrival in New Zealand. Flowers were taken to the grave of Orvo Vartiainen, who had died suddenly in 1960. The memorial evening was spent at the Myllärinens with national songs and food, especially Karelian pies.

Then the number of members diminished due to deaths, not due to departures. In September, 1968, Mrs. Sylvi Säde died, and then in June, 1970, Mrs. Elin Myllärinen, one of the key persons of the Club. The activities diminished further, and at the annual meeting in November, 1970, the question was raised whether the Club should discontinue. A year later it was decided that activities would be curtailed at least as far as formal meetings were concerned. In August 1971 Anna-Liisa Kiljunen died. The activities diminished further during the ensuing years, and at the general meeting in 1977 only nine members attended. The final decision that the Club will neither be abolished nor continued, was made on May 2nd, 1977. However, the wish was expressed that the families would continue to invite people to their homes as before.¹⁸

Finally the role and importance of the Finnish association to the Tokoroa Finns should be interpreted. CHAPPLE, when analysing the Tokoroa community in 1976 came to the following conclusion:

“... the demands of modern industry, in drawing people hither and thither to life in our new towns and neighbours, place considerable stresses and strains upon mind and personality. There would seem to be a limit to the amount of social uprooting and transplanting a people can stand without their beginning to lose some of the characteristics of happily sociable and socially responsible beings.”¹⁹

The following conclusions may be drawn about the Tokoroa Finnish Club.

The Club was not started immediately after arrival but after the first years' adjustment to New Zealand society. First the Finns had to build their homes – and saunas. Another reason may have been that after the arrival many families had small children, and these took a lot of time from their mothers and fathers. As experienced in other Finnish immigrant communities, the founding of an ethnic society usually comes at the second stage of adjustment, when the immigrants have established themselves comfortably economically and have time and energy for social



Kyösti Lajunen from Tokoroa was in the Finnish Army in 1965–66 serving in the Coast Artillery in Kotka. SI, Turku.

and leisure activities. In Tokoroa the founding of the Kawerau Finnish Club earlier was an obvious impetus. Before the departure for New Zealand many Finns had obviously belonged to youth, sports, trade, or even political associations, and they had experience of how to run a society. In Tokoroa all the Finns, especially those who had arrived in 1953, belonged to the Club, as well as most of the latecomers. At the official meetings the largest number of participants numbered 20, but at picnics the number was much larger. Because of shift work some men were always at work, and could not attend the activities.

In the 1970's when the Club started to loose its strength, a reason was the death of many active members. When the economic situation in New Zealand became worse, after the oil crisis during the 1970's, there were not

so many new arrivals. However the main reason was the fact that the ethnic association had lost its real function. It was no more necessary or useful to the small Finnish community. A similar process has been found in other Finnish immigrant communities e.g. in Australia.²⁰ By the 1970's, 20 years or more after the arrival of the first families, the Finns had learnt English and could participate in local social and cultural activities, and their children were becoming *de facto* New Zealanders. The original immigrants were also getting old and sick. However, at one stage of their adjustment the Tokoroa Finnish Club was an important function to this small Finnish community faraway from their former homeland.

During the 1980's the Finns who had arrived in the 1950's to work at the Kinleith mills started to retire. More and more deaths took place and some returned to Finland to spend their last years there. In 1991 there were only half a dozen Finns working for N.Z. Forest Products Ltd.²¹ Some of them had arrived in Tokoroa as children, the rest were of second generation or relatives of the first immigrants. The second and especially the third generation are New Zealanders, and many of them do not have much knowledge of the Finnish language and culture. In the years to come there will be only memoirs, family traditions and histories of the Finnish contribution to the building of a modern industrial centre on the Tokoroa plateau as part of the development in New Zealand.

Chapter XIII: Kawerau – the Finnish Stronghold

1. *The Paper Mill and the Town*

The first plantings of *Radiata Pine* in New Zealand took place in Canterbury in 1859. Some planting of *Radiata Pine* had taken place on the Kaingaroa Plains in the early 1900's. After 1919 the plan was to cover the Kaingaroa area with pine trees, 160,000 hectares, becoming the largest manmade forest in the world. During the depression of the 1930's planting boomed as unemployed men were used for the work. In 1939 there were also plans to establish a pulp and paper mill. With the change to a National Government in 1949 the planning for the mill became more urgent because the early plantings at Kaingaroa matured. Early in 1951 the Government put out worldwide tenders, but by the end of the year only a proposition from the Fletcher Group was received. After the Government had accepted the tender, the Tasman Pulp and Paper Company Ltd – a joint venture with the Government – was formed, to become one of the largest companies in New Zealand. As mentioned earlier in the context of the 1949 trial to get Finnish workers, in 1954 the Government and the Tasman Company formed a private company, Kaingaroa Logging Company Ltd, to handle the clear-felling operation and large extractions from Kaingaroa Forest. Stock piling of logs in the forest and at the railhead began in January 1955. In April, 1955, the first log train ran down to the Kawerau mill.¹

The designated site for the planned paper mill was first Murupara, but in 1952 Kawerau was chosen as mill site. Kawerau is located on the southwest corner of the Whakatane Graben. On Kawerau's doorstep is Putauaki – or Mount Edgecumbe – a volcano. The major earthquakes of 1886 and 1987 indicate that Kawerau is situated in a geologically unstable district. The land was settled by Maori people soon after the arrival of the first canoes about 1350. Kawerau is the name of an old Maori *pa*. In the Maori language Kawerau means "carrying leaves". Before the pulp and

paper mill and town were established in 1953, the district was known as Onepu.²

The construction of the mill began in January 1953. Advertisements for staff were placed in newspapers around the country. Sandwell & Co. from Vancouver designed the Tasman Plant, Ed Barton being their field engineer. "He was here in the early days with a Finn working for the Canadian company, Peter Vakomies, who was brought over to start the chemical mill".³ Pekka Vakomies did at Kawerau much the same as Jerm Christiansen did in Tokoroa earlier. He planned the plant, bought machinery and together with Tasman pulp directors selected tradesmen from Finland. The role of the Finns is well recorded in the Kawerau history:

"For Tasman to successfully operate the new No. 1 Pulp Mill it became essential to bring overseas personnel. This was done and a contingent of Finnish experts in pulp and paper manufacture arrived in October 1954. They were pioneers in the start-up of the Tasman Mill, particularly the Pulp Mill area."⁴



The Tasman Paper Mill in Kawerau as seen from Tukoiro Hill in the 1960's.



The "frontier town" of Kawerau about 1955. The employees of the mill lived in temporary houses like these. SI, Turku.

The paper machine, one of the three largest in the world – 91,5 meters long – began production on October 29th, 1955. By the end of 1955 most newspapers in New Zealand were using the Tasman product.⁵

The building of the town also began in 1953. The new township was designed to consist of some 500 houses, as well as public buildings. Most of the housing was built for the employees of the Tasman Pulp and Paper Company. But in 1954 – when the Finns arrived – there was a lack of accommodation. Kawerau was a real "frontier town". By 1955 Tasman's recruitment of staff to run the mill was well underway, and people were accommodated in completed houses or at "Tasman House". By 1956 the construction of the houses for employees virtually ceased – to start again later when the company extended the mill. In 1958 789 houses were completed. By 1958 the population had increased to 3,500. The Tasman Company made it easier for their employees to obtain housing finance. The policy was to encourage workers to own their homes, and those wishing to build, could obtain a £ 2,000 interest free loan.⁶

2. From Finland to the Foot of Mount Edgecumbe

As N.Z. Forest Products Ltd had done in Tokoroa Tasman Pulp and Paper Ltd also had a nationwide newspaper advertisement in Finland in the winter 1954 searching for experts in the pulp and paper industry for the new mill in New Zealand. Interviews were conducted in Finland by Mr. M. L. Hobday, the first General Manager of the Tasman Company, Mr. Pekka Vakomies acting as a Consulting Engineer, and Mr. A. Hicks as Tasman's hiring agent in London. Out of 200 applicants 17 were selected to work for four year terms on the mill site being constructed in Kawerau. Those selected were pulp and paper industry tradesmen – maximum age specified 42 years – and they came mainly from towns with large mills.

The first group, 12 families, left Finland on October 11th, 1954, and flew from Helsinki to Glasgow on two chartered planes. Their salaries



Eighteen Finnish families sailed from Glasgow to New Zealand in the Captain Cook in the autumn of 1954. After disembarking in Wellington the group was pictured in Rotorua on Nov. 18, 1954. SI, Turku.

commenced on the day they stepped onto the plane. A guide and translator, Miss Leslie Rowlands, was to travel with the families to New Zealand, teaching English to the men, as a requirement of their contract. On October 12th, 1954, the *Captain Cook* sailed from Glasgow carrying 1,000 immigrants bound for New Zealand and Australia. The beginning of the journey was extremely difficult, as a stormy crossing of the Irish sea made many women and children terribly seasick. Compulsory English lessons took place every morning and afternoon whilst women looked after their children. The voyage via the Panama Canal and Curaçao lasted 5 1/2 weeks. The *Captain Cook* arrived in Wellington on November 18th, 1954, on a rainy and windy day. The 24 adults and 32 children were met at the port by Mr. Roy Stoneham, who brought fresh milk for the children who had been drinking warm orange-coloured water for weeks. The group boarded immediately an overnight train to Frankton. The trip is remembered for its hard uncomfortable seats, most difficult to sleep on. After Frankton the weary travellers boarded two buses for the last leg of the long journey. For some the narrow and winding Rotoma road was frightening as the trees and branches were scraping the buses. The sun was shining most beautifully when the buses emerged from the forest into the dry, flat and desert-like landscape of Kawerau. Some women started to cry. The families remember how strange it all seemed; the scrubby vegetation and sandy soil, and all around, heavy machinery and construction work. A lasting impression was the hot sand underfoot which sank as they walked on it. They learned that it was pumice and ash from volcanic eruptions. All the families boarded in Tasman House, the "Hotel", until their new homes were completed. A small party of wellwishers and local residents welcomed the Finns to their new home and were friendly and helpful.⁷

The Finnish families on board the Captain Cook were:

Name	Age	From	Occupation on arrival	Occupation in NZ
HÄNNINEN, Arvo Albin	45 years	Sunila	Causticizing Operator	Causticizing Operator
Lyyli	45 "			
Olli	19 "			
Maija	6 "			

Name	Age	From	Occupation on arrival	Occupation in NZ
JALAVA,				
Lauri	24 years	Pori	Sulphate Cook	Sulphate Cook
Marja-Terttu	24 "			
Ari	4 "			
Anita	3 "			
Pauli	under one year			
Pasi	under one year			
(Esa and Tomi were born in Kawerau)				
JÄRVINEN,				
Kalervo	29 years	Kotka	Sulphate Cook	Sulphate Cook
Kerttu	29 "			
Arja	6 "			
Jukka	3 "			
KARJALAINEN,				
Matti	47 years	Oulu	Supervisor,	Kiln Operator
Aune	28 "		Caustic Soda Dpt.	
KOKKO,				
Osmo	34 years	Kemi	Sulphate Cook	Sulphate Cook
Elsa	32 "			
Marja-Liisa	9 "			
Rauno	8 "			
(Anna Maria was born in Kawerau)				
KÄRKKÄINEN,				
Viljo	36 years	Sunila	Evaporator	Evaporator
Kerttu	34 "		Operator	Operator
Raimo	9 "			
Pauli	6 "			
MUSTONEN,				
Veikko	42 years	Sunila	Cellulose	Evaporator
Liisa	33 "		Factory Worker	Operator
Hannu	19 "			
Raili	13 "			
Jorma	6 "			
Jukka	2 "			
(Antero was born in Kawerau)				

Name	Age	From	Occupation on arrival	Occupation in NZ
MÄKELÄ,				
Eino	38 years	Valkea-	Evaporator	Evaporator
Helmi	40 "	koski	Attendant	Operator
Jorma	17 "			
Jouko	10 "			
Jukka	9 "			
Mirja	6 "			
Seppo	under one year			
NURKKA,				
Toivo	43 years	Sunila	Evaporator	Causticizing
Aili	39 "		Attendant	Operator
Kalevi	13 "			
Osmo	11 "			
Vesa	9 "			
Marjatta	7 "			
Matti	4 "			
(Henna was born in Kawerau)				
PAAVONPERÄ,				
Tauno	31 years	Oulu	Supervisor,	Causticizing
Irja	32 "		Caustic Soda Dpt.	Operator
Jorma	11 "			
Matti	9 "			
Pekka	under one year			
RAUTJOKI,				
Veikko	41 years	Sunila	Machinist	Drying Machine
Aino	43 "			Tender
Reijo	15 "			
Anna-Liisa	14 "			
Harri	5 "			
VIITAKANGAS,				
Kaarlo	32 years	Kemi	Pulp Mill	Kamyr Machine
Sanelma	34 "		Foreman	Tender, later
Raija	11 "			Pulp Mill
Rauli	6 "			Superintendent

In December 1954 and January 1955 arrived:

Name	Age	From	Occupation on arrival	Occupation in NZ
KAARTE,				
Esko	38 years	Kotka	Maintenance	B.Sc. (Paper)
Ida	35 "		Engineer	Shift Foreman
Eeva	9 "			
Riitta	5 "			
Maija	2 "			
KÄRKI,				
Jouko	42 years	Oulu	Shift Foreman	Paper Technician, Shift Foreman
Else-Maj	30 "			
Ritva	8 "			
Terho	6 "			
(Eeva was born in Kawerau)				
NURMIAHO,				
Olavi	44 years	Kotka	Superintendent,	B.Sc. (Paper)
Terttu Tuttu	33 "		Sulphate Mill	Superintendent
Eeva Liisa	9 "			
RÄNNÄLI,				
Matti	42 years	Sunila	Shift Foreman	Paper Technician, Shift Foreman
Kaarina	33 "			
Ulla	11 "			
Hannu	9 "			
Timo	3 "			
(Mikko was born in Kawerau)				
SAIKKONEN,				
Reino	33 years	Karhula	Superintendent	B.Sc. (Paper)
Seija	25 "			Superintendent
Anna-Kristiina	5 "			
Markku	3 „ ⁸			

3. *Settling Down in Kawerau*

After their arrival the Finns started to settle down to the temporary accommodation. "Tasman House", one of the few completed buildings, became the first home for the Finns, and they quickly turned it into a mini-Finland. Finnish was heard for the first time in Kawerau. Their clothes were not quite suited to the New Zealand summer. Some of the younger Finns even wore "funny" clothes brought from home. However these were quickly shed and walking barefeet and wearing shorts became the order of the day. During the first weekend friends from Tokoroa came to welcome the newcomers.

After a couple of weeks, as the houses were completed, families moved into them and soon they were scattered throughout the township. The homes began to take on a Finnish appearance when furniture, rugs, and handcrafts arrived from Finland or were bought in Kawerau. The children spent their time exploring their new home country quickly making friends with the resident Kiwis, Maori and Pakeha alike. Language was no big problem for the children, but the men spent half a day at work and the other half at English lessons. Miss Leslie Rowlands, an Australian who had accompanied the Finns from Finland, gave English lectures with a tape recorder to five Finnish supervisors.⁸ The men worked in a variety of jobs, until the mill construction was completed. From the middle of December, 1954, the women had their lessons in the evenings. At the first Christmas the Nurkka family and the others from Sunila and Kotka visited the Tokoroa Finns from the same home districts enjoying the traditional Finnish sauna bath.¹⁰

When the mill construction started in 1953 many workers had children of school age. The first two-roomed school at Kawerau was opened in February, 1954, with 40 pupils. The arrival of 28 Finnish children, late in 1954, posed special teaching problems, and Mrs. Potter conducted additional classes for them in English and the New Zealand way of life. After only a few weeks – as recorded – it was surprising how quickly they could make themselves understood. The children from the northern end of the town, including the Dutch and the Finns living along the Kawerau Straight, went to the North School. Mrs. Elsa Kokko and Mrs. Aune Karjalainen joined the Parents Teacher Association to promote the adjustment of the children into the community.¹¹



The Finnish children to Kawerau pictured in Rotorua on Nov. 18, 1954. The Jalava twins and Pekka Paavonperä missing. SI, Turku.

In the beginning the Finnish children were placed under one teacher, but soon they were scattered throughout the school. They soon showed their aptitude for arithmetic and handicrafts, the boys being keen young athletes. It was also noticed that the Finns did not congregate together in the playground. After a year it was reported that there are no "Finnish children" as a distinct group, and almost all understand practically everything that is said to them and receive no special attention.¹²

A major feature of the Finnish contingent was their high expertise in the pulp and paper industry. The group included three engineers, two technicians and 12 tradesmen. Another feature was the youth of the families; the oldest member being 47 years and the youngest two months – only a fortnight at the time of departure. When the Finns became friends with local Maori it was said by some Maori residents of Kawerau that the Finns were well off. "You guys had your trip paid for and you came by boat. We had to paddle over."¹³



In 1962 another large group of Finnish paper workers arrived in Kawerau. From left: Veikko and Helga Pakkanen, Heikki and Hilikka Lempiäinen, Eeva and Jorma Tuomi, Hannu and Inkeri Arponen and Risto Paljakka. SI, Turku.

The biggest difficulties for the Finns were the language and keeping warm in non-insulated houses. Being used to well heated homes, the Finns found the airy New Zealand houses with one small fireplace rather uncomfortable. The Finnish wives, most of all, were hit by a culture-shock. Kawerau's isolation and lack of transport took a lot of adjustment. As the years passed, however, only four families returned to Finland.¹⁴

In 1962–63 another large group of Finns arrived in Kawerau. The group included the following 11 families: Hannu and Inkeri Arponen, Heikki and Hilikka Lempiäinen, Kauko and Maija Mölsä, Veikko and Helka Pakkanen, Raimo and Anna-Liisa Siitonen, Pekka and Kirsti Tani, Veikko and Sirpa Tani, Jorma and Eeva Tuomi, Yrjö and Raili Torvelainen, Aarre and Raija Tammilehto and Erkki and Laila Tiirakari, the last family arriving from Australia. The group also included four single men: Kari Jääskeläinen,



Seija and Reino Saikkonen in their garden under a birchtree, Kawerau 1991. SI, Turku.

Jouko Paaajanen, Risto Paljakka and Matti Suurnäkki.¹⁵ Their arrival coincided with the start up of the new No 2 Paper Machine, which took place on December 15th. The official opening was not held until the 8th of May, 1963, with Sir Bernhard Ferguson, the Governor-General officiating. At that time the population of Kawerau had increased to 5,000.¹⁶

After a basic course in Technical English at the Pulp and Paper Mill, Mrs. Seija Saikkonen, who had lived in Kawerau for seven years, and had a fluent command of English, had the task of introducing the new employees to standard English.¹⁷ While almost all of the first group that arrived in 1954, remained in Kawerau, the majority of this group later left New Zealand. A reason may be that these young people came to New Zealand for experience and to further their career and training. This was especially the case with three Finnish paper mill experts, recruited by the

Tasman Company in 1964. Esko Yrjölä, M.Sc. (Paper), from Juankoski was appointed Production Manager, Antti Poutiainen, M.Sc. (Paper) from Voikkaa, and Raimo Turunen, M.Sc. (Paper) from Kajaani, were both employed as Assistant Superintendents. They had a 5-year and two 3-year contracts and they all returned to Finland.¹⁸

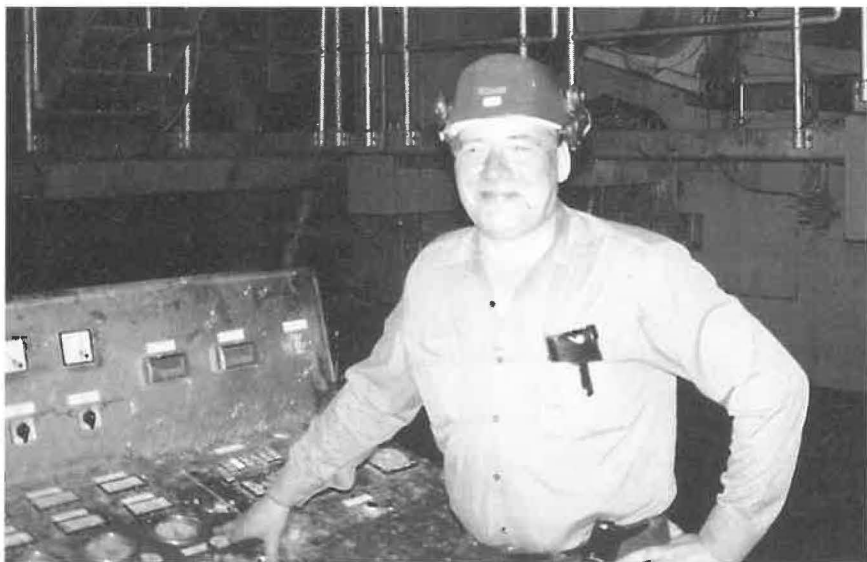
After the recruitment of the first Finnish paper mill experts in 1954, individual families or single people started to arrive in Kawerau. They were often relatives and friends of the first arrivals. Some Finns were quite keen to secure work and accommodation for their relatives. In 1958 Kaarlo Viitakangas, a Foreman, had asked for a letter of recommendation for his brother-in-law, Ahti Leinonen. The Manager of the Personnel Department wrote to the Department of Immigration, indicating that as the applicant was a single man there would be no difficulties in employing him in a basic grade position in this plant. The Manager continued:



Sanelma and Kaarlo Viitakangas in front of their home in Kawerau 1991. SI, Turku.

"I would like to add that Mr. and Mrs. Viitakangas are fine people who have settled down well. Mr. Viitakangas has adjusted himself rather better than any of our Finnish employees and partly as a consequence has received promotion to a responsible position in our Pulp Mill."¹⁹

Ahti Leinonen, Mrs. Viitakangas's brother, and Paavo and Toini Sandberg, Mrs. Sandberg being Mr Viitakangas's sister, arrived in 1959. Two years later, in January 1962, Mr. Vilho Viitakangas (Kaarlo's brother) with family and Birger and Raili Hahl (Mrs. Hahl being Kaarlo's sister) arrived. Some friends of the Viitakangas family arrived later.²⁰ For all of these, Kaarlo Viitakangas had to guarantee work and accommodation in the beginning. In 1963 Kaarlo Viitakangas was promoted to Pulp Mill Superintendent. In recognition of his work for good relations between New Zealand and Finland Kaarlo Viitakangas was awarded the Knight First Class of the Lion of Finland in 1980. In 1983 Kaarlo Viitakangas retired from the Tasman Pulp and Paper company after 28 years' service.²¹ Kaarlo Viitakangas passed away in 1992.



Superintendent Timo Viitakangas represents the second generation of Finns in Kawerau. SI, Turku.

In the 1960's the number of Finnish population in Kawerau was at its largest. In 1964 Tauno Paavonperä had counted 135 persons born in Finland.²², but there are estimates of 150 and over, especially as the Tasman Company was employing relatives and friends of the Finnish employees. If the children, born in New Zealand, are included, the ethnic strength of the Finns in Kawerau in the second half of the 1960's was 150–200 persons. This estimate varied a great deal, as especially the bachelors, were a more mobile group.

4. The Kawerau Sauna Club

In addition to their four years' contract, the Finns applying for the positions in New Zealand negotiated a special provision with Pekka Vakomies and other representatives of the Tasman Company in 1954. There was a "gentleman's agreement" that the Company would provide



Building the Finnish sauna in Kawerau in 1955. Notice women also involved in the work. SI, Turku.

the materials for the Finns to build a sauna. The Company advised the Finns to form the Sauna into a club, and on February 5th, 1955, the Kawerau Sauna Club was formed, with Esko Kaarte as Chairman and Seija Saikkonen as Secretary. All the 17 families and the three single men joined the Club. The membership fee was one pound a year. A site was obtained from the Borough on the Tarawera River bank, next to the Waterhouse Bridge. Building materials were obtained from the Company, and the work was started under the leadership of Esko Kaarte. The concrete base



Kawerau Finns in sauna in the 1960's. From left: Raimo Siitonen, Toivo Nurkka, a local policeman John McCluney and Kalervo Järvinen throwing water. SI, Turku.

of the building was cast on July 20th, 1955, and the first sauna bath in Kawerau was enjoyed on October 12th, 1955. The stone oven was made by "handy-men", until in 1962 a new oven was imported from Finland.²³

For the Kawerau Finns, the joint venture to build a sauna was their first leisure time activity after they had their homes set up. In a way it was the "first step" in their adjustment to the New Zealand community through a Finnish way of life. Anybody could join the Sauna Club, and it became so popular, that membership had to be restricted. About one half of the members were Finns and the other half of mixed nationalities. Mr. M. L. Hobday, General Manager of the Tasman Pulp and Paper Company and Mr. Leslie Peters, Building Supervisor, Ministry of Works, were invited as Honorary members. Perhaps in the heat of sauna it was easier for the Finns to communicate with New Zealanders, and this helped them to learn more English. There were separate hours for men and women, and families could book the sauna. A small fee was collected to maintain the Sauna. Timber for heating the sauna was waste pine wood from the factory. A Committee of five persons took care of the Sauna, which was kept clean by members and users.²⁴ For the younger Finns, the Sauna was also the centre of many sport activities, especially volleyball. The Kawerau Sauna Club is still in operation, and I had the pleasure to enjoy it in May, 1972, and at Christmas, 1991.

5. The Lutheran Church

One of the major institutions for an ethnic group in a foreign country is their familiar church from the old country. A prerequisite for a church or congregation is that the migrant group must be of a size big enough to support it. Before 1950 the number of Finns in New Zealand was too small and settlement too scattered for any ethnic church. Even in Kawerau the number of Finns was too small for a Finnish congregation, but in the local Lutheran Church they were to have a key role at one stage.

The small Lutheran Church in New Zealand has a long history. In 1843 a group of German settlers landed at Nelson, including four Lutheran missionaries. Among them was J. F. H. Wohlers, who later settled at Ruapuke and Stewart Islands. In the second half of the 19th century thousands of Lutheran immigrants from Germany and Scandinavia

arrived in New Zealand. Scandinavian churches were established at all the major settlements, especially in the Hawkes Bay, to maintain the Nordic traditions and language.²⁵

When the Kawerau paper mill was built in the early 1950's, the staff included many Lutheran Scandinavian engineers and technicians. Miss Irmgard Jantke, a German working as a telephone switchboard operator, invited the Lutheran pastor from Hamilton to visit Kawerau. The Rev. Clem Koch started to visit Kawerau once a month, and after he moved to Auckland, the Rev. Noel Schoultz continued the visits. About six months after the arrival of the Finnish group, Miss Jantke and Mrs. Frederiksen invited the Finns to the latter's home for a Divine Service to be held on June 12th, 1955. However, only a few of the Finns went, and those attending did not understand anything. Later Mrs. Nurmiaho and Mrs. Saikkonen read the text in Finnish and explained what was going on. The Finns preferred to have the church services at a school room rather than in private homes. The major obstacle, however, was their lack of knowledge of the English language.²⁶

Consequently, for the Finnish community, the visits of the Finnish Pastor from Australia were very important. In November, 1955 – about a year after the arrival of the Finns – the Rev. Heikki Castrén from the Finnish Seamen's Mission in Brisbane, paid a visit to New Zealand holding Divine Services in Auckland, Tokoroa and Kawerau. Castrén's visit and the little service conducted in a schoolroom was reported by the local paper as follows:

"Men, women and tow-headed children in their best clothes attended the service to sing the hymns of their homeland, to pray and to hear their young pastor preach in their native tongue. The service, which reminded them so much of home, brought tears to many eyes."

It was further noted that each month at Kawerau, a Lutheran pastor from Hamilton conducted services in the school.²⁷

During his second visit in 1957 the Rev. H. Castrén held the first confirmation classes, and on March 24th, 1957, Liisa and Reijo Rautjoki, Raili Mustonen and Kalevi Nurkka were confirmed. During his last visit to New Zealand on February 8th, 1959, Jorma and Matti Paavonperä, Marja-Liisa Kokko and Raija Viitakangas were confirmed. The Pastor also baptised two children: Anna-Maria Kokko and Antero Mustonen.

The Rev. Heikki Castrén, the Pastor of the Finnish Seamens' Mission in Australia, occasionally visited Finnish settlements in New Zealand. It is related that the pastor had to walk from one house to another as the Finns did not have cars in the very beginning. SI, Turku.



Castrén's follower, the Rev. Urpo Kokkonen, also made visits to New Zealand. During his visit to Kawerau in March, 1963, he had the third – and the last – confirmation classes for children: Arja Järvinen, Rauno Kokko, Ritva Kärki and Rauli Viitakangas. The pastor also baptised a little girl who had been born on a ship bringing a number of Finns to New Zealand. The service was also attended by Finns from Tokoroa, Rotorua and Opotiki. Urpo Kokkonen was the last pastor for the Finnish Seamen's Mission in Australia. By the time he left for Finland in 1967 – via New Zealand and Kawerau – several Finnish congregations had been established in Australia as thousands of new assisted immigrants had been arriving from Finland. The Finnish pastors, serving these congregations, made occasional visits to serve the Finns living in New Zealand. The visits of the Finnish pastors to the Finns in New Zealand were of great importance. In addition to the religious services in local churches or schoolrooms, meetings were held in private homes and news of Finnish settlers in Australia and New Zealand were exchanged – as well as news from Finland.²⁸



The Rev. Rodney Beh, "the Priest of Finns", is now the President of the Lutheran Church of New Zealand, Palmerston North 1991. SI, Turku.

In the early 1960's the number of Lutheran people in Kawerau increased, mainly due to the arrival of many Finns engaged to work on the big No 2 paper machine. The Lutheran church of New Zealand had plans to establish a local congregation in Kawerau. Even before that, attempts were made to get a Finnish-speaking pastor from America. Early in 1958 the Rev. G. Aho from the Missouri Synod of America visited Tokoroa and Kawerau Finns. He had been serving the Finns in northern Queensland for five years. He had religious meetings in Kawerau and started the Sunday school, attended by 35 children.²⁹ From 1958 Mrs. Aune Karjalainen continued the Finnish Sunday Schools with much success.³⁰

As the church services in Kawerau had to be held in schoolrooms, the Rev. L. G. Steicke, Pastor of the Bay of Plenty area in Whakatane, made an initiative to build a Lutheran church in Kawerau. As, among the



The Lutheran Church in Kawerau, Opening Day Oct. 17–18, 1964. SI, Turku.

Lutherans, the Finns were in the majority, the Rev. L. G. Steicke visited Finnish families to discuss the plan. The Finns were quite cautious – a reason being their weak knowledge of English. However, finally at a meeting on July 2nd, 1963, the Lutherans in Kawerau decided to build a church. A block of land was bought from the town for £ 825, and a loan of £ 3,300 was obtained from the New Zealand Lutheran Laymen's League. The Rev. Steicke, Aune Karjalainen, Kalervo Järvinen, Matti Rännäli and Walter Plaff were elected to the building committee. Three of the four lay members were Finns, indicating that they were the largest ethnic group in the enterprise. The Finns were also the key people when collecting funds for the church e.g. by cake stalls etc. Much of the work was also done by the members of the congregation in their spare time. Jorma Paavonperä made the altar and the pulpit, as well as other parts of the interior. The official opening of the Kawerau Lutheran church was held on October 17th, 1964.³¹ The beautiful church has served the Lutherans of Kawerau well. It was regarded especially as a church of Finns, and the role of the

Finns was well appreciated by the pastors serving the congregation in the years to come.³² Even today, in the 1990's the Finns – including the second generation – are the major group of the small congregation.

6. *The Kawerau Finnish Club 1961–84*

In an effort to maintain some of the old homeland traditions and customs, the sauna project was the first stage of an ethnic association. Quite soon, however, the Finns started to take part in community life more widely. They wanted to contribute to their new home country, as well as make their old home country better known within New Zealand. Under the name of "Finnish Community" the Finns organized Finland evenings, including sales of cookies and handicrafts, coffee with Finnish "pulla", a kind of sweet bread, becoming very popular. When the Kawerau primary school was in need of funds in 1955, the Finns held their first social event, which was a tremendous success. It was attended by about 500 people, and £ 160 was raised for the school. That was the beginning, and whenever fund-raising was needed the Finnish women set up their craft and cake stalls.³³ Later money was collected especially for the building of the Lutheran Church in Kawerau. There was, therefore, some kind of unofficial Finnish "society" before its formal establishment in 1961.

On March 3rd, 1961, Osmo and Elsa Kokko held a meeting at their home to discuss reviving the former unofficial Kawerau Finnish society and possibly to found a league to be a bond for Finns in New Zealand, which among other things could arrange trips to the old home country. The meeting was attended by 11 persons. The upcoming visit of the Rev. Urpo Kokkonen from Australia was also discussed. It was decided to inform other Finns in New Zealand about the Pastor's visit and ask Mr. Paavo Vennonen in Auckland and the *Suomi Society* in Helsinki how to found a league and to arrange group travel to Finland.³⁴ There were many practical things requesting the co-operation of the Finns. Another contributing factor was that many Finns had been active members of organizations in Finland, e.g. Mrs. Elsa Kokko had been a member of the City Council of Kemi.³⁵

The next meeting was held on June 5th, 1961, also at the Kokkos. The answers to the letters sent were read, and after discussion, it was decided



Mrs. Elsa Kokko making Christmas cookies in her home in Kawerau.

to change the former unofficial Suomi Society to an official one, the Kawerau Finnish Club. Mrs. Seija Saikkonen was elected Chairman and Mrs. Elsa Kokko Secretary. The women thus had key positions, the reasons probably being that they had more time than their working husbands, and they had a better command of the English language, especially Mrs. Saikkonen. The rules were accepted at the following meeting on June 21st, 1961. The aim of the Kawerau Finnish Club was to

- maintain Finnish culture and habits, especially for the future generations,
- to promote the social and other activities of the members,
- to help the Finns to adjust to New Zealand, and
- to keep contacts with the old home country and with the Finns in New Zealand and Australia.

To achieve these goals the Club was going to arrange Finnish national and religious festivals, especially to implant in the young the old festival traditions and to make them familiar with Finnish literature and to maintain their Finnish language. An aim was to make Finland, its ways and habits, cooking and handwork known in New Zealand. Another objective was to assist the present and future Finnish emigrants to become more familiar with the New Zealand way of life. The club was going to have monthly club-nights inviting guest speakers to explain these subjects to the members. Another interesting aim was to learn of the history of Finns in New Zealand by preserving it whenever possible. The Club was to be unpolitical and loyal to the country of residence. Only Finns were accepted to be members, the fee being 10 shillings for persons over 18 years. The meetings were to be held in private homes. It was also decided to start the following hobby circles: (1) English Language, (2) Music Club, (3) Sports Club, (4) Ball Club (pallo). Plans were made to have a baking exhibition and the Finnish Independence Day celebration.³⁶

The educational function of the Club was important. After the meeting on August 20th, 1961, Mr. H. W. Ion, Headmaster of Kawerau North School, gave a talk on the New Zealand educational system from kindergarten to University level. Some of the Finns had children approaching university age, and members present showed their interest by asking questions, especially with regard to bursaries and scholarships. On October 28th, 1961, Mr. D. J. Wilson gave a talk on the local administration in New Zealand and left some material for the Club. On April 15th, 1962, Mr. Delamere – a Maori spokesman – gave a talk on Maori history, art, music etc. It was noticed that the Maori language and Finnish had many similar words – with different meanings.

The Club nights were advertised in the *Kawerau Gazette*, which caused some discussion as some Finns were considered to be shy about meeting New Zealanders. In September, 1961, it was decided that each member could bring no more than two friends to the meeting.

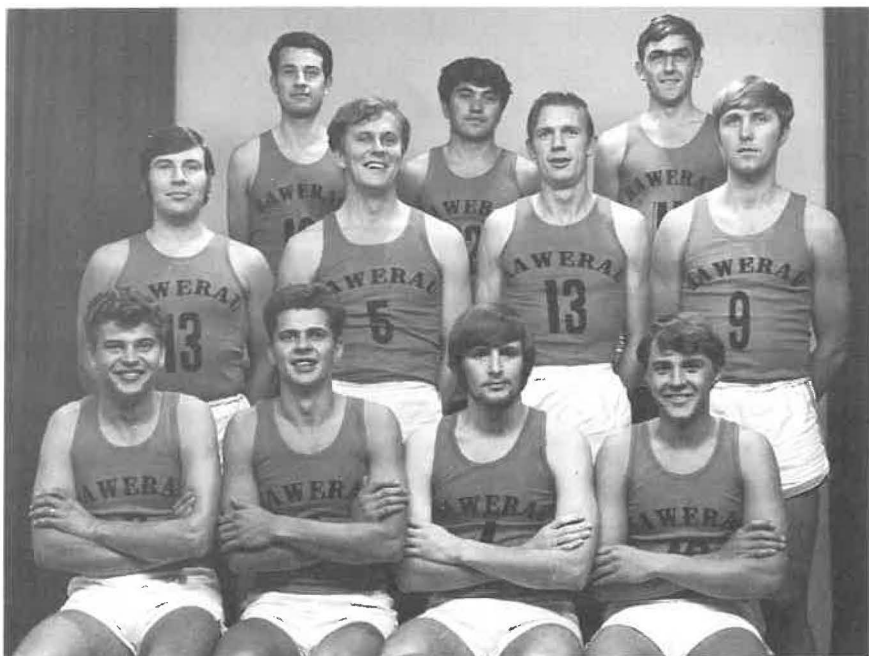
From the very beginning the hobby clubs were active. In two years there were nine groups altogether: English, Music, Ball Games, a Sewing Circle, a Play Circle, a Handicraft Circle for girls, a Chess Club for boys, a Committee to Arrange Festivals, and a Camping Circle. A Finnish baking demonstration and cake stall was held in the Concert Chambers on Saturday, October 7th, 1961. Everybody was welcomed by an



The Kawerau Finnish ladies' singing group entertaining at the Mary Shapley Rest Home. From left: Irja Paavonperä, Kirsti Tani, Kerttu Kärkkäinen, Aune Karjalainen, Toini Sandberg, Seija Saikkonen, Kyllikki Järvinen, Kaarina Rännäli and Elsa Kokko. The pianist is Thelma Wilson. SI, Turku.

advertisement in a local paper to see how "pulla", the well-known white Finnish bread, rye-bread, Karelian pies and traditional Christmas food were made. In September, 1961, Mr. T. N. Gibbs, Consul for Finland, visited the Club and promised a Finnish flag. Later in 1961 the Charge d'Affairs for Finland, Mr. Toivo Kala and Mrs. Kala also visited Kawerau.

In October 1961 the Club decided to collect waste paper for the Whakatane Old People's Home, and asked the Music Circle to visit and perform some songs. The residents of Mary Shapley Home enjoyed visits from the Kawerau Finnish Club. They were entertained with national folk songs by clubmembers dressed in national costumes. The visitors also brought an afternoon tea with Finnish doughnuts and cakes. The Finnish Independence Day Festival and a Christmas Party for children were



In the Kawerau representative basketball team in 1969 the majority of the players were Finns. Frontrow from left: Vesa Nurkka, Osmo Nurkka, Jouni Viitakangas, Matti Nurkka. Second row: Timo Viitakangas, Raimo Kärkkäinen, a Harry from Wellington and Heikki Sirkku. Back row: Harvey Mc Grail, "Teddy" Davies and Jim Charles. SI, Turku.

arranged. Ten Finns from Kawerau visited the Tokoroa Christmas celebration. Representatives of the Club also participated with the activities of the local Red Cross and Rotary organizations.

National celebrations, such as Finnish Independence Day, Christmas, New Year's Eve, Easter, Midsummer Eve, Mother's and Father's Days etc. were looked forward to by all, including Kawerau's New Zealand citizens. National costumes were worn and Finnish dances and songs were performed – and Finnish food served. A Finnish band played the music at the dances. In 1962 the Club also started to sponsor a basketball team because almost all the members were Finns. This team played successfully for years in local and national competitions.

Interest in the history of the Finns in New Zealand was evident when on July 25th, 1961, two old Finnish settlers, Mrs. Elina Anderson, Rotorua, and Mrs. Jenny Ruohonen, Auckland, were invited to be the first Honorary Members of the Club.

In April 1962 Osmo Kokko presented Kalervo Järvinen's idea, that the Club should launch a project to get a hall of its own. Mr. and Mrs. Kärki were in favour of the idea of renting a piece of land for that purpose. In November 1962 a special account for collecting money for the Hall was opened, funds were to be raised by dances, sales and lotteries, especially by the Sewing Circle. In March 1963 the Rules of the Hall Fund were accepted. In addition to a number of hobby circles in 1964 a Fishing Club and a Folk Dance Group were started. The Library was also growing quickly. The basketball team, the "Finns", was successful, and the "Finn Band" or the Viitakangas Band played at the dances. The Club Choir was practicing regularly. The emphasis of these activities was on the social and entertainment side, and in July 1964 it was decided to make every second meeting informal. At the end of 1964 it was also decided to commemorate the 10th anniversary of the arrival of the Finns to Kawerau. In March 1965 the Club funds were £ 416, almost all in the building account.

After the enthusiasm and boom of the first years, by 1965 there were signs of lack of interest, especially in finding active persons to take care of the Club. At the annual meeting in June 1965 a discussion to temporarily discontinue the activities took place. There is no report of the activities of the former hobby circles, but a new one, a Gymnastic Circle, was started. Also Christmas parcels to two poor families in Finland were to be sent. In 1965 the Club also tried to import sugar cubes, but was informed by Customs that it was not possible. Shortage of sugar cubes was a hardship experienced by Mr. and Mrs. Karjalainen soon after their arrival. People seemed to think that sugar cubes were used only for feeding horses. They made inquiries about it from many parts of the world and eventually began making their own.³⁷

In the second half of the 1960's the first club members died and were honoured by silence at meetings. In 1967 a discussion arose that persons married to Finns should also be accepted as members. In 1968 personal conflicts – quite common in any association – had a negative influence on the Club. In the annual meeting of 1969 two members made a proposal to close the Club and divide the Building Fund. At this stage the Club

obviously had realized that its plans to have a Hall of its own were not realistic. Consequently Mrs. Elsa Kokko proposed at a monthly meeting in April 1969, that the funds should be deposited into an ordinary bank account and could be used for any Club purpose, which was unanimously accepted. However, it was decided that important functions, e.g. the 15th Anniversary of the Finns coming to New Zealand, be celebrated in Kawerau with a supper put on by the Finnish women and a dance with the Finnish Band.

The Finnish community grew older, and children started to marry outside their ethnic group. At the annual meeting of 1970 a decision was made to accept as members persons married to Finns or a child if one of the parents was a Finn. In addition to festivals, dances, film evenings etc., the major activities were the women's Sewing Circle and the small Library. In 1973 the membership had fallen to 39, the highest having been 56. It was decided not to celebrate Finnish Independence Day and to remember members hospitalized for a long period of time. At the annual meeting in March 1975 there was a discussion about the future of the Club. Mr. Jouko Kärki said that "the older we become the more we need each other", and it was unanimously voted to continue the activities.

The transition started in November 1978 when Mrs. Kaarina Rännäli, who for 12 years had been the secretary of the Club, resigned. Raija McCappin, née Viitakangas, was chosen as acting secretary and later became permanent. She wrote reasonably good Finnish, but soon the language used in the minutes was changed to English. In addition to Raija McCappin, Ben van der Molen, who had married a Finn, was elected to the Committee. It was decided that "as long as any English speaking members were present then 'English' will be the spoken and written language." At the annual meeting of July 1980 there was no unanimity about the election of Chairman, and consequently it was decided "to recess the Kawerau Finnish Club by unison until any members wish to recommence and call an A.G.M. to decide any matters". After this a Special Meeting of the Kawerau Finnish Club was held on March 5th, 1984. Chairman T. Viitakangas opened the discussion on ideas from the club regarding a letter received: either to carry on with the club or close it. It was proposed to dissolve the present Club and if so wished a new club can be formed with a whole new outlook at a later date. The motion was carried unanimously by all members present. It was also decided that all the

money and assets be donated to the Kawerau Lutheran Church Building Fund. The Library was to be stored at the Church hall. A second meeting was required to finish the Club, and it was held on April 26th, 1984, at the Lutheran Church, where the decisions of the previous meeting were confirmed. Mrs. Aune Karjalainen was elected to withdraw all funds from the Finnish Club account and pay it into the Lutheran Church Building Fund.³⁸

So the Kawerau Finnish Club closed after an existence of well over 20 years. During the second stage of integration of the Finns in the 1960's and 1970's it had great importance. The small Finnish community needed an organ or institution for cooperation to promote their interests and leisure time activities. The major reason, that it started to lose its strength in the 1970's and 1980's, was that it had lost its original function. The first



The remaining sign of Finnish activity in Kawerau; the Finnish sauna is still popular. Kawerau, Christmas sauna in 1991. Standing: Osmo Nurkka (left) and Yrjö Torvelainen. Sitting: Ben van der Molen, Jouni Viitakangas and Graham Ennis. SI, Turku

generation was getting old, and many active members had died, and some had left Kawerau. It became difficult to get active members to join the Committee to organize various activities. Personal intrigues and lack of interest were also involved. The decision of the second generation to change the Club to use only English had not found much favour among the pioneers, who – even after 20 years – were still quite poor at English. Another reason was a statement by a pioneer, that once the Finns had adjusted to this country they did not need the Club any more.³⁹

It appears from the Minutes and other sources that for the first generation Finns the Club was very useful in many ways. When the second generation grew up, it did not need such a society because there were so many other activities in the town. It was a task of the children of the first immigrants together with a few pioneers of 1954 to honourably bury the Club. The Lutheran Church and the first Finnish institution in Kawerau – the Sauna Club – survived.

The tools of Finnish adjustment in Kawerau were the Sauna, the Lutheran Church and the Society. In 1987 it was estimated that from about 150 Finns in Kawerau in the 1960's there were about 50 left. Most of the children of the Finnish settlers were married and still living in the area. Ties among Finnish families still exist – when there is a funeral everyone turns up. It was claimed that the Finnish community was fast losing its identity. Apart from the unpronounceable surnames in the telephone book and the cultural influence on an individual basis, the only sign that Kawerau was once the home of the biggest Finnish community in New Zealand is the Sauna tucked away on Waterhouse Street.⁴⁰ Most likely the Sauna will stand there for a long time.

Chapter XIV: Women in the Main Role – Finns to New Zealand in Recent Decades

During recent decades Finnish immigrants have concentrated in the big cities of New Zealand, especially in Auckland, which has proved to be more luring to new European immigrants than the other areas in New Zealand. There were only a few Finns living in Auckland before the 1960's and 1970's, when the "invasion" of the young women began. Usually they had married a New Zealander. Besides Auckland, these women also settled in Dunedin, Wellington and other major cities.

According to the census of 1986 there were 96 men and 138 women born in Finland residing in New Zealand. Besides these 234 Finns there were also their children. Unfortunately this was the last census where Finns were counted separately. In the 1980's and 1990's most Finns living in Auckland were female. Men who had come earlier, in the 1920's and 1930's, had mostly died. There were only a few male representatives of the more recent immigration, for example *Ari Hallenberg*, *Victor Torssonen*, *Rafael Hägglund* and *Olaf af Larm*. Also a couple of elderly Finnish ladies, who had arrived in the 1950's, lived in Auckland – *Ilta Keränen* and *Lilja Oates*. Women arriving at the end of the next decade were married to either New Zealanders or Englishmen. This kind of immigration continued in the 1970's. In the 1980's educated professionals came to the big cities. Among them there were also women. Besides these groups of Finns some of the children from the Tokoroa and Kawerau Finnish communities have come to Auckland to study or to work.

The majority of these new women immigrants came from the big coastal cities of Finland, especially from Helsinki and its surroundings. They might have been born in some other area, but for some reason, study or work, they had moved to Helsinki. This reflects the active internal migration, urbanization, which was going on in Finland in the 1960's. From a big city it was then perhaps easier to emigrate further abroad.¹

At first nearly all of these young women lived for a while in some other country, most of all in England. Also Australia attracted them, but that land was a disappointment for many. They experienced it as a harsh and masculine country. Some girls who had immigrated to Australia as children with their families, moved further to New Zealand.²

Abroad Finnish girls studied languages or worked as au pairs or nurses. The next step was to get married to a foreigner and to stay permanently in that or some other country.

One of the most colourful stories is *Hellevi Walrond's* (née Pärssinen). She was born in Viipuri in 1939 and studied at the Finnish Business School. Later on she went to study in Öland, Sweden, and after that to Heidelberg, Germany. There she graduated in the German language after which she worked in a Publishing House in Munich. During that time she also temporarily studied in England, where she met her husband. John Walrond was a New Zealander but he had grown up in southern Rhodesia, where his father was working. The young couple also decided to settle in southern Africa, and they moved further south to Swaziland in 1969. The Walronds lived in that country for 14 years. John worked there as a mining engineer. Both their sons, Mark and Carl, were born in Swaziland. When John got a job as a mining inspector in New Zealand the family immigrated to Wellington in 1983. After 18 months they moved to the South Island, to Dunedin. One can call Hellevi a cosmopolitan for a good reason.³

Also *Tellervo van Oorde* (née Holkko) has experienced many parts of the world. She has lived in Denmark, the Soviet Union, the Netherlands, Liberia and Nigeria before settling in New Zealand. She has lived with her Dutch husband Frans in Auckland since 1969, and she has been an active member of the Auckland Finnish Society.⁴

These women were of ripe age when they arrived in New Zealand, mostly being around 30 years. Usually they had been living for many years in other countries, working and setting up a family. However, when they had left Finland, they had been very young and recently graduated from school.

Regarding occupation and education, the women who immigrated in the 1960's and 1970's had some common features. Most of them have studied at secondary school level. Office clerk is often mentioned as an occupation. This is quite a broad term which can cover many different



Telle and Frans van Oorde in Auckland, August 1991. Telle was born in Lapua and met Frans in Kioto. She was at the time working for Finnair in Copenhagen. After the marriage they moved to New Zealand in 1969. SI, Turku.

tasks. Representatives of traditional working skills are very rare among these more recent immigrants. Higher educated individuals also appear among the "new" immigrants, for example an architect, a chemist and a sociologist.

Tytti Spencer was educated as an architect in Finland and in the United States. Her father was a friend of Jerm Christiansen, and through Christiansen Tytti got to know John Berridge Spencer, a well-to-do businessman in wood-conversion industry. They got married and moved to Auckland in 1969. Tytti was working as an architect also in New Zealand until her death in 1992.

Most of the Finnish women, however, have not been able to get work appropriate to their education. They have worked part-time in factories, hospitals or shops. Quite often they have stayed at home with their children. This has brought new problems. As housewives they may have

felt frustrated and their integration to a new culture has been delayed.⁵

Why then did these young women decide to move abroad at the end of the 1960's? The economic situation in Finland at that time was improving, and the employment situation was not that bad. Probably the basic reason, as it has often been in emigration, was pure longing for adventure. The girls wanted to experience the world. The generally more liberated atmosphere made it easier to leave; new possibilities had been opened for women.

After living for some years in Europe, or somewhere else, they immigrated to New Zealand. Most often the main reason for that was the husband's background in New Zealand or his job there. Immigration to New Zealand could also be a compromise solution, as *Saara St. Martin* experienced. She met her Indian husband in Canada while working there as a chemist from 1956 to 1962. They moved to New Zealand in 1962 because they did not feel at home in Canada, and the husband did not want to move to Finland because of the climate. New Zealand proved to be a satisfactory solution for them both.⁶

The children, and their education, have also been one major reason. New Zealand has been perceived as a safe and good place for raising children. *Hellevi Walrond* tells that one reason for their emigration from Swaziland was, besides the husband's job, the education of their sons. The *Walronds* did not want to send their children to a boarding school. For *Liisa Tate-Manning* from Dunedin, the children were the main reason for



Liisa Tate-Manning (née Mäkinen) and her husband Sean in Dunedin in 1992. SI, Turku.

their immigration. Liisa is married to an Irishman and the family lived for eight years in Belfast, Ireland, where Liisa studied and worked as a social worker. The situation in Belfast at the end of the 1960's was very disturbing. When the children came to school age, the parents did not want to choose between a catholic and a protestant school. This choice would have meant also choosing between the two struggling sides of the nation. Immigration to another country seemed like a good solution.⁷

When the Finns left for Tokoroa and Kawerau in the 1950's they already had jobs in New Zealand. This is not the situation in regard to recent immigration; the job has to be found there. However, in recent decades some highly skilled experts have arrived in the country for different kinds of tasks. An example of this is *Janos Garam*, who moved to Wellington in 1987. He had got a job in a big computer company, Data Bank, through a newspaper advertisement.⁸

Besides the pure longing for adventure, job and children's education, one reason for immigration might have been a search for a different life style. Lately the emphasis on unmaterial values and a healthier lifestyle has become very important for many people. Those who have immigrated to New Zealand in recent decades have mentioned this to be one of the reasons. The distant situation of the country has not, however, especially lured the Finns, as it has lured many Americans in fear of nuclear war.

These "new" immigrants usually have very keen contacts with Finland. Today's effective means of transportation, developed telephone and postal network and different kinds of cassettes and video tapes have made it a lot easier. Almost without an exception immigrants have revisited Finland more than once. The only obstacle to this is still the high price of the journey. The relatives and friends have also made return calls to New Zealand.

These are the ways to keep contact with Finland, but how do they keep contact with one another in a foreign country? Is there any more inter-Finnish contact or has the better knowledge of language and marriage to a foreigner made the assimilation to New Zealand so much easier that the immigrants do not need that kind of activity any more?

Cooperation of the Finns in Auckland

While the old Finnish societies gradually faded away in Kawerau and Tokoroa by the end of the 1970's, especially the Finns residing in Auckland have actively maintained cooperation.

In the beginning the Finns gathered in the home of Sulo and Aili Kanerva. Aili was the unifying force of the whole Finnish community until her return to Finland in 1974 after her husband's death. Many Finns were also members of the Scandinavian Club, which had been founded in 1939. Its evening parties were popular, with even Kawerau Finns sometimes participating. As the number of Finns in Auckland grew, the idea of a club of their own arose.⁹



The Estonian-Finnish Choir in Auckland. It performed in 1960's, e.g. at the Scandinavian Club. From left: Marie Tork, Ippa Korhonen, Olli Korhonen, Aili Kanerva, Harald Kapp, Alide Kapp, Linda Alonson, Ilta Keränen, Bertil Löfqvist and Aino Jacobson. SI, Turku.

The foundation meeting was held on October 11th, 1977, at Aristion Coffee Lounge, Parnell. *Ari Hallenberg* and *Esther Alward*, a daughter of *Armas Kivimäki*, took the initiative. The meeting was, however, called together by an Australian, *Mark Peach*, whose wife is *Tuovi Mäki-Neste*.

At that meeting in 1977 the society was given a name *Suomi – Uusi-Seelanti Seura* (the Finland – New Zealand Society) and the aims for the society were formulated. The society was to keep contact with Finland and with all the other Finns living in New Zealand. Also it should improve the knowledge of Finnish traditions and culture. The society joined the *League of Finns in Australasia* and the *Suomi-Seura* in Helsinki. The language used in the society has been English from the beginning, although Finnish has also been used in conversations. *Mark Peach* was elected first President, *Ged Alward* Vice President and *Ulla Curtis, née Rännäli*, was elected Secretary/Treasurer.¹⁰

Meetings have been held at least three times a year, and once a year a general meeting. The most important activities have been different kinds of parties, most of all Christmas parties. Independence Day, Midsummer Eve and the First of May have also been celebrated either in private homes or in restaurants. The society was particularly active when *Arthur Lydiard* was the President in 1979–80. *Lydiard* is a top athletics coach, who has also worked with Finnish athletes. *Lydiard* married a Finnish gymnast, *Eira Lehtonen*, who lived in New Zealand for 12 years until her death in 1984. As well as parties, also picnics, bushwalks, visits to Kawerau etc. have been arranged. The society has a library, which gets books from the Finnish Embassy in Canberra and from the *Suomi-Seura*. The society co-operates with the Scandinavian Club.¹¹

At the annual general meeting 1984 the name of the society was changed to *Aucklandin Suomalainen Seura* (the Auckland Finnish Society), because its activity was concentrated in the Auckland area. It was also thought that the society could not speak for the other Finnish societies in New Zealand. Some of the members thought, however, that this was a mistake because a society which would have covered the whole country would have been better. At the same meeting the new constitution was approved. According to it, even a person without Finnish origins could be taken as a member. An interest in Finnish culture and Finland was considered to be enough for membership.¹²

The activity of the society began somehow to decline at the end of the



Arthur Lydiard became famous in the 1960's after coaching the Olympic gold medal winners Peter Snell and Murray Halberg. In 1967 the Sport Union of Finland employed Lydiard for a couple of years to raise the standard of Finnish long distance running. The success of the Finnish team in the Olympics of Munich in 1972 can be attributed to Arthur Lydiard. While in Finland Lydiard met Eira Lehtonen, a Finnish Olympic Gymnastic. They were married in Turku on Aug. 5, 1977. They settled outside Auckland and built a beautiful house near the sea. Eira Lehtonen died of cancer in New Zealand in 1984. While visiting Arthur Lydiard in 1992 I felt that he has never really recovered from the loss of his wife. This marriage was a real love story over the oceans. SI, Turku.

1980's. Some kind of weariness can be discerned in the interviews made by *Sinikka Puosi* in 1985. It became difficult to get people into the leading positions. Basically the foreign husbands of the Finnish women were active, as they had been from the beginning. Also the lack of a meeting place of their own hampered activities.

It has to be taken into consideration, that even if the society has quite a number of members, only some of them are really active. Many of them

participate only in the biggest events, like Christmas parties, and they do not take any other part in the society's activities. Some Finns prefer not to take part at all. They think that adjustment to New Zealand's culture is much easier without "getting stuck" to other Finns. Some claim that these events are boring, "tiresome coffee parties". Many of the Finnish immigrants have already so many other local activities, that they do not have interest or time for the Finnish Society. New immigrants usually have a fairly good command of English, they are international people, and for them the Finnish Society is not as important as it was for the Tokoroa and Kawerau Finns, who had arrived directly from Finland. The members of the society have also felt themselves abandoned. They think that the Finns in Australia have got more support from the Finnish Government and from the Suomi-Seura. On the other hand they do recognize the difficulties of cooperation, because a great number of the Finns live apart from each other in New Zealand.¹³

Since the middle of the 1980's the Finnish Society has undergone some sort of a revival. This has shown itself in many ways, both within the Finnish community and to the wider community in which they live their daily lives.

During recent years the Society has organised so-called "cultural weekends" where Finnish culture and traditions are displayed in many ways, through music, sports and food.

The arrival of three Finnish yachts in Auckland as part of the Whitbread Round-The-World yacht race late in 1989 served as an important catalyst for future directions for the Society. A "Finnish Day" was held as part of the celebrations that accompanied this important sporting event. Members of the Society dressed themselves in national costumes and showed Auckland, probably for the first time, that there was a live and active Finnish community in the city.

A direct spin-off from this coming together, particularly of many Finnish children, was the formation of the Finnish language school in 1990. The public display brought about a reawakened interest in further developing the language skills, particularly among the children. Interest grew quickly and soon there were two classes operating every week. At first the beginners were taught by *Sirpa Ottaway* and a group of more advanced learners by *Saara St. Martin*. Although attendance at the classes has been fluid at times, they still continue, recently mostly under the



Jussi Parkkali, Chairman of the Auckland Finnish Society in 1986–93. He was five years old when arriving in Tokoroa with his parents in 1953. SI, Turku.

tutelage of *Marja-Liisa Philbert* and *Elina Väisänen-Schuck*. In 1994 there were 10 Finnish language students attending the school.¹⁴

Almost at the same time as the language school began, the Society became involved in the Auckland City Council's annual Christmas tree display, held in the Aotea Centre. The city's ethnic groups each decorate Christmas trees according to their traditions and culture, and the Finnish tree has stood proudly alongside those of many other cultures.

The traditional Finnish festivals continue to be celebrated and supported with enthusiasm. In 1992, as in many expatriate Finnish communities around the world, the 75th Anniversary of Finnish Independence was a memorable occasion, with even Finns from Kawerau joining the Auckland community to celebrate the event.

In 1993 a Finnish Folk Dance Group was formed under *Marja-Liisa Philbert's* guidance. The group performs at functions organized by the Finnish or Scandinavian societies as well as in other local occasions arranged by New Zealanders.

After *Jussi Parkkali*, *Jouni Kortelainen* has been the Chairman of the Auckland Finnish Society since 1993.



The Treaty of Waitangi was celebrated by the Scandinavian Club in Dunedin in 1990. The guests included the Mayor of Dunedin, various ambassadors and consuls, local Maori Elders and the members of the Scandinavian Club. Pictured from left: Hellevi Walrond, Aino Burgess from Invercargill, a Norwegian and Liisa Tate-Manning. SI, Turku.

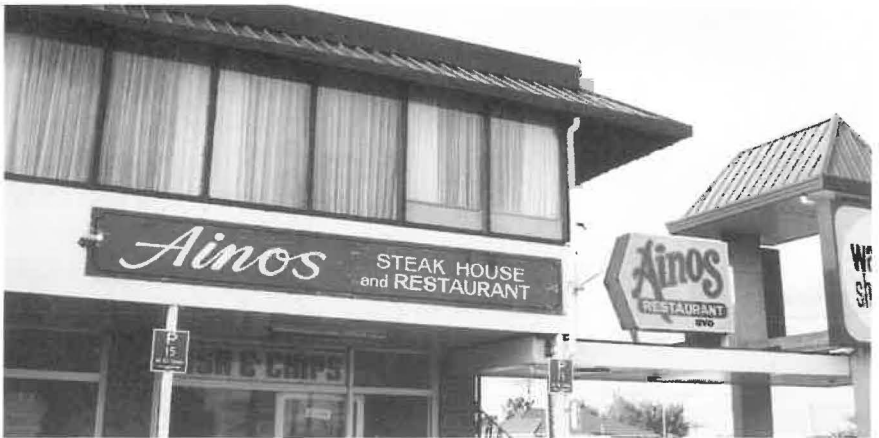
There is a yearning for contact with groups from Finland, and on the relatively rare occasions that the wish comes true, the Society welcomes them with special celebrations. Parliamentary delegations, business groups and cultural groups, e.g. the Tapiola Children's Choir, have all enjoyed the hospitality of the Society as much as the members have enjoyed the chance to meet with groups from the homeland.¹⁵

The Society has played an important role for the Finns in Auckland area trying to maintain their Finnish identity and traditions. The Society will carry on for a long time, because it has avoided reservedness and has been open to everyone. In the mid-90's New Zealand economy has been improving, and the Society has got new members when young Finns have arrived in the country for the traditional reasons of work and marriage.



Aino (née Sallinen) and David Burgess at their summerhouse in Glenorchy in 1992. SI, Turku.

Aino Sallinen arrived in 1961 and set up a café in Invercargill, which became a popular restaurant. The old name has survived after she sold the business. SI, Turku.



In other big cities the Finns also have some kind of cooperation. In Wellington the Finns meet once a month in private homes. In Dunedin they are active in the local Scandinavian Club. Each year Independence Day is celebrated at the club, and the Finnish flag is hoisted at the City Hall's flagstaff.¹⁶

Those who have immigrated during the last few decades have adjusted relatively quickly to the new culture. The main reasons are surely the better knowledge of the language and experiences of other foreign cultures. Similar features in all western cultures have also helped. For example, an immigrant can perform the same kind of tasks in Finland and in New Zealand. In any case, most of the immigrants have succeeded at the same time to maintain their Finnish identity.

Ari Hallenberg is a good example of keeping up the Finnish identity and simultaneously adjusting to New Zealand's society. He arrived in New Zealand in 1971. Earlier he had lived for a while in Australia with his parents. Ari was working for an American advertising company when he came to New Zealand. After meeting a New Zealander woman of German origin he decided to stay permanently in the country. He was employed by the commercial television during the years 1975–80, but after that he and a friend set up an advertising company of their own. Besides that he is a shareholder in a Finnish television production company. Because of that he visits Finland regularly. Ari is also very active in Finnish society, and he

Ari and Margaret Hallenberg and the sons Karl and Jonathan. Ari Hallenberg, former Kum-mola, emigrated to Australia with his parents. When he visited New Zealand he met Margaret, a New Zealander of German origin. Ari Hallenberg is a businessman in TV and other medias. He has been an active member of the Finnish community in Auckland. Since 1989 Mr. Hallenberg has been an Honorary Consul for Finland in Auckland. SI, Turku.



became the Honorary Consul of Finland in Auckland in 1989.¹⁷

Liisa Tate-Manning in Dunedin chose her way of getting closer to New Zealand's society and culture. While living in Waikouaiti she was secretary of the Labour Party's district organization. She was also a member in Waikouaiti School Committee. Besides this Liisa is well acquainted with Maori culture. She has even translated parts of Kalevala into the Maori language. According to her own words, Liisa has been under the influence of four different cultures, those of Finland, Ireland, New Zealand and the Maori, and her Finnish identity has only got stronger.¹⁸

Despite the relatively short time in New Zealand, the adjustment of the Finnish immigrants to local culture has gone so far that most of them do not want to return to Finland. In this new country they appreciate especially the climate, nature, the friendly people, the healthy and relaxed lifestyle and lower living expenses. On the other hand they have quite a critical eye for New Zealand. The country is geographically remote even if some think that this is an advantage. The character of the New Zealanders has caused problems for many Finns; they think that New Zealanders do not work very hard and are superficial. Other disadvantages in the country according to immigrants are its backwardness, unemployment, increasing criminality, racial problems and economic policy in general. A special problem for the Finns is the standard of house construction, because they are used to quite a different level of construction, particularly in the insulation and heating of houses.

The new immigrants have succeeded in retaining their Finnish identity at some level despite their adjustment to the local culture. How about the next generation? While at school the children seem to lose their knowledge of the Finnish language as well as their interest in Finnish culture. When they get older this interest seems to reawaken. They want to know about their roots, their Finnish ancestors. Many of these children have visited Finland various times and have remained in touch with some aspects of Finnish culture. Some even want to enter military service in Finland, like Hellevi Walrond's sons Mark and Carl in Dunedin.¹⁹

The immigration of Finns to New Zealand during the recent decades is in many ways quite different when compared to the older type of immigration; its motives and its ways of realization are not the same. In its own way, however, it is carrying on the tradition of Finnish immigration and adjustment to New Zealand.

Chapter XV: General Review

1. Numbers

Finnish migration to New Zealand has always been tiny, mainly due to the long distance involved. After Herman Spöring's visit with James Cook in 1769–70, the first permanent settlers were sailors and, from the 1860's, gold-diggers. While sailors and gold-diggers were rather transient migrants, by the turn of the century immigrants with more permanent settling thoughts in mind started arriving. New Zealand was seen as an attractive alternative to North America, Australia etc. These pioneers may have visited New Zealand as seamen – or they may have had relatives and friends there already. Up to the First World War the number of Finns increased, totalling close to 400 persons. Before the Census of 1921 Finns were counted as Russians. Subsequent New Zealand Censuses give the following numbers showing persons born in Finland:

Census	Males	Females	Total
1921	282	32	314
1936	191	48	239
1945	141	47	188
1951	153	48	201
1956	168	113	281
1961	146	110	256
1966	174	128	302
1971	144	118	262
1976	140	158	298
1981	111	135	246
1986	96	138	234

Unfortunately in the Census of 1991, Finns were no longer enumerated separately.

Altogether the number of Finns who have moved to New Zealand during the past 150 years could be estimated between 1 500–2 000 persons, the first number being permanent settlers and the latter including short term residents.

2. *Areas of Origin*

The first Finns who came to New Zealand were seamen from the Finnish seaports. This is well illustrated in Map XV.1. The earliest emigration to New Zealand originated from the coasts of the Gulf of Bothnia, especially from the Swedish-speaking areas, with the major centre being the parish of Munsala.

After the Second World War the picture is different, as illustrated in Map XV.2. The areas of departure are the industrial areas of Finland – the Kymi River Valley, Imatra and Helsinki, as well as Oulu and Kemi in the north. With the exception of Helsinki, all these places are centres of Finnish papermill industry, where pulp and paper process experts were recruited to New Zealand in the 1950's and 1960's. However, quite a number of the Finns, 16 per cent, had lived earlier in another country, especially in England and Australia. Finnish women especially had often married a British man or a New Zealander living in Great Britain before the departure to New Zealand.

3. *Dates of Arrival*

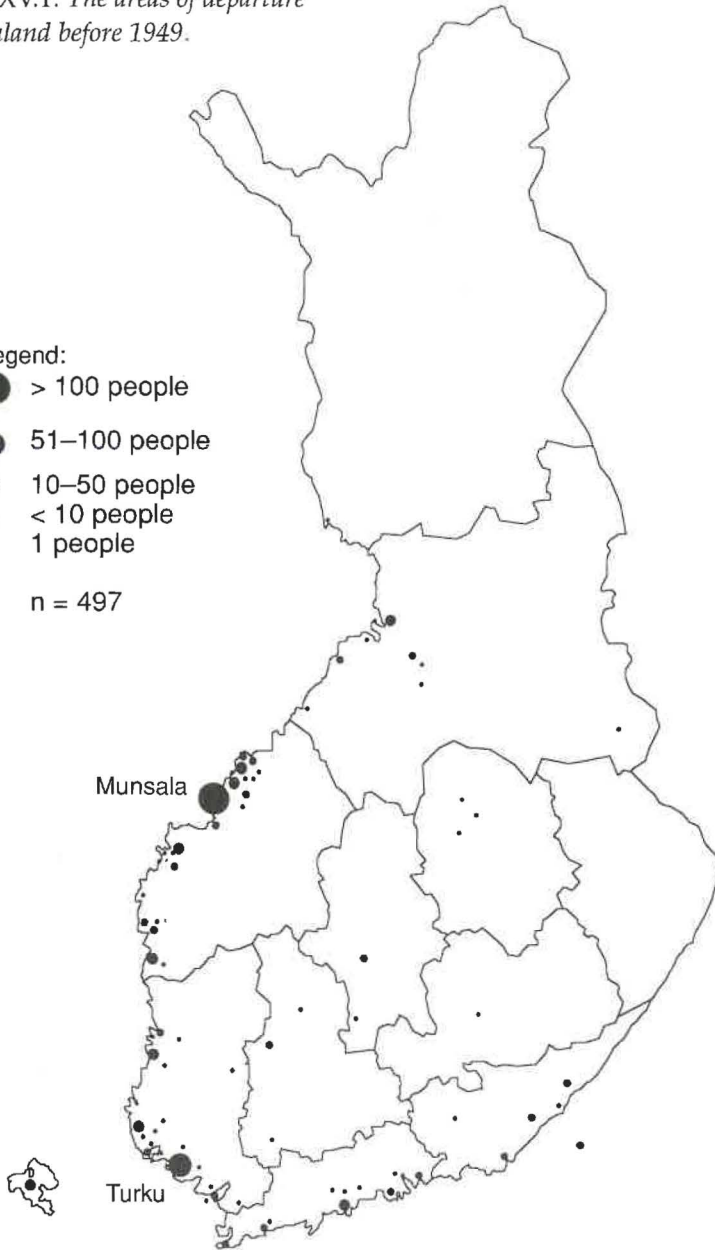
Who the first Finn was to come to New Zealand after the visit of Herman Spöring is not known. Most likely he was a Finnish seaman paid off or a deserter from a British or American whaling ship before the middle of the 19th century. According to the Naturalization Records, the first Finn to live permanently in New Zealand had arrived in 1854. Diagram XV.1. gives the years of arrivals before 1949, showing that the "old migration" took place until the First World War. Between the wars only a few Finns arrived in New Zealand due to entry difficulties and the economic depression. A minor peak in 1941 was the result of the seizure of the s/s *Pamir* in Wellington.

Map XV.1. *The areas of departure
in Finland before 1949.*

Legend:

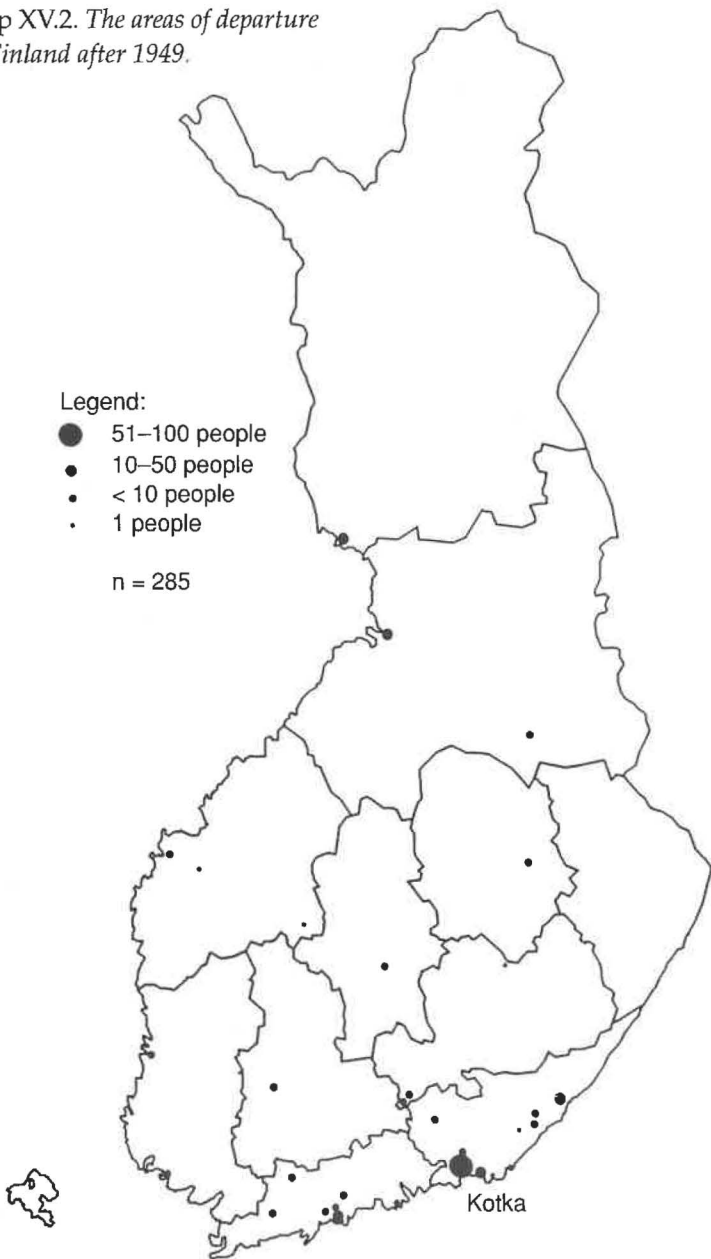
- > 100 people
- 51–100 people
- 10–50 people
- < 10 people
- 1 people

n = 497



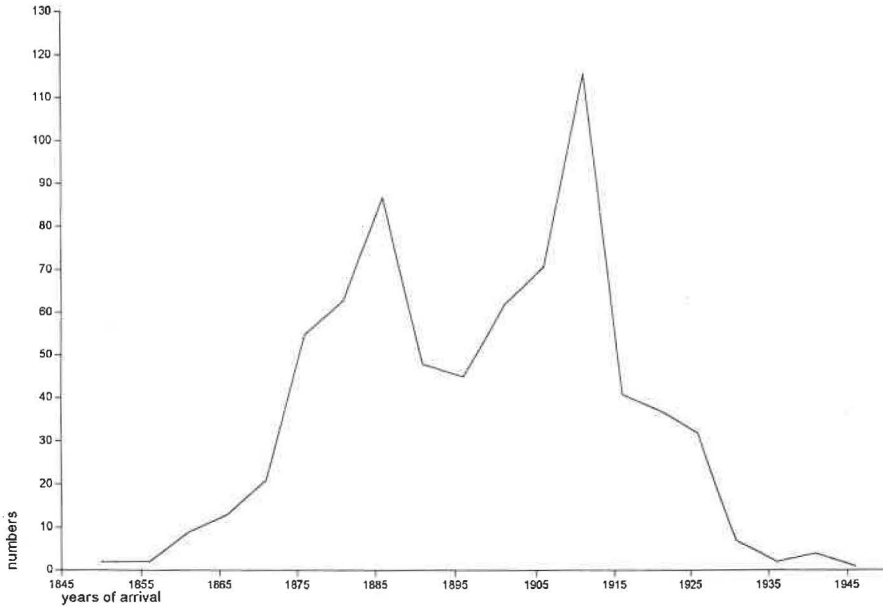
Source: Nat. Rec., Aliens Reg. 1917 etc., Appendix I.

Map XV.2. *The areas of departure in Finland after 1949.*



Source: N.Z. Imm. Service, Appendix II.

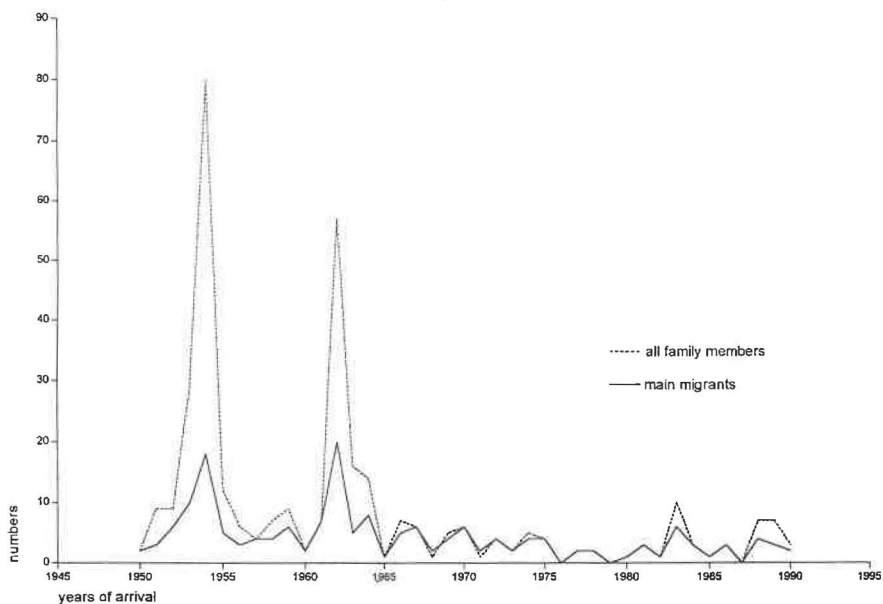
Diagram XV.1. *The years of arrivals in New Zealand before 1949. n = 719.*



Source: Nat. Rec., Aliens Reg. 1917 etc., Appendix I.

The post-war peak years were 1954 and 1962, when 61 and 40 persons respectively arrived (Diagram XV.2). The majority were recruited to the new papermills in Tokoroa and Kawerau. To these "Finn towns" later came relatives and friends via "chain migration". After these tradesmen, since the late 1960's and up to the 1990's most of the Finns who immigrated to New Zealand were married to New Zealanders, or persons of some other nationality, wishing to settle down in this country. This group did not consist only of women but Finnish men as well. Some were experts in their field. The number of Finns moving to New Zealand obviously would have been bigger if New Zealand had not been hit by an extremely severe economic depression in the middle of the 1970's. Due to the revival of New Zealand economy in the middle of the 1990's new Finnish immigrants have started arriving.

Diagram XV.2. *The years of arrivals in New Zealand after 1949. n = 347.*



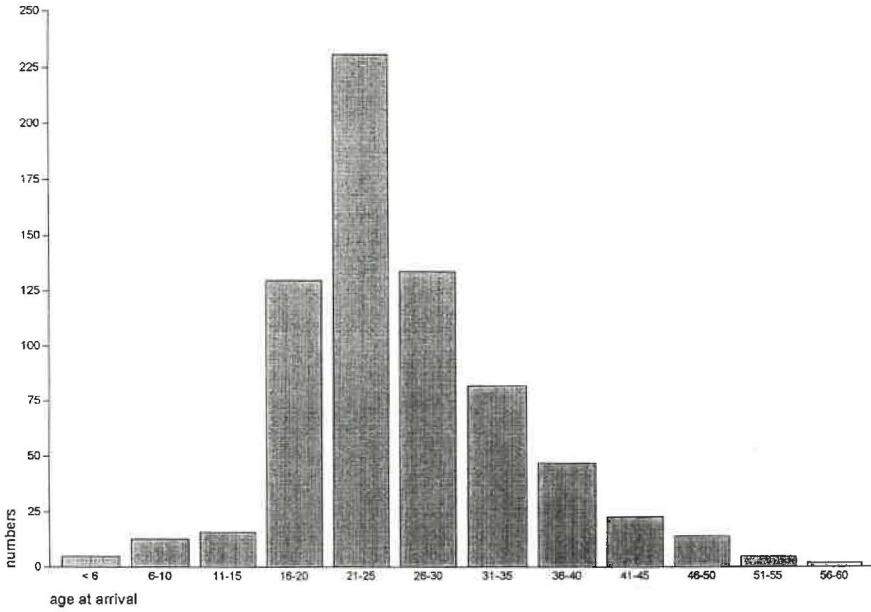
Source: N.Z. Imm. Service, Appendix II.

There is little information about the return of the Finns from New Zealand. Already in the 19th century many Finns returned to Finland or moved to a third country. From the registered cases after the war, 22 per cent left New Zealand, 17 per cent went back to Finland. It appears that fewer Finns returned from New Zealand than from Australia – a major reason being that there had been more family migration to New Zealand than to Australia.

4. Age at Arrival

The Finns who moved to New Zealand before 1949 were generally young adults, between 16 and 30 years of age (Diagram XV.3). In the early days they were often seamen or young sons of Finnish farmers looking for

Diagram XV.3. *The age at arrival before 1949. n = 819.*



Source: Nat. Rec., Aliens Reg. 1917 etc., Appendix I.

better opportunities on the other side of the globe. Also in the 1950's and 1960's most of the arrivals were between 20–40 years, because the New Zealand paper mills recruited mainly young families from Finland – often with small children (Diagram XV.4). Also the Finns settling in New Zealand because of marriage were generally young. By and large, New Zealand has received young people from Finland prepared to contribute their best years to their adopted home country.

Diagram XV.4. a) *The age of all Finnish migrants at arrival after 1949. n = 348.*

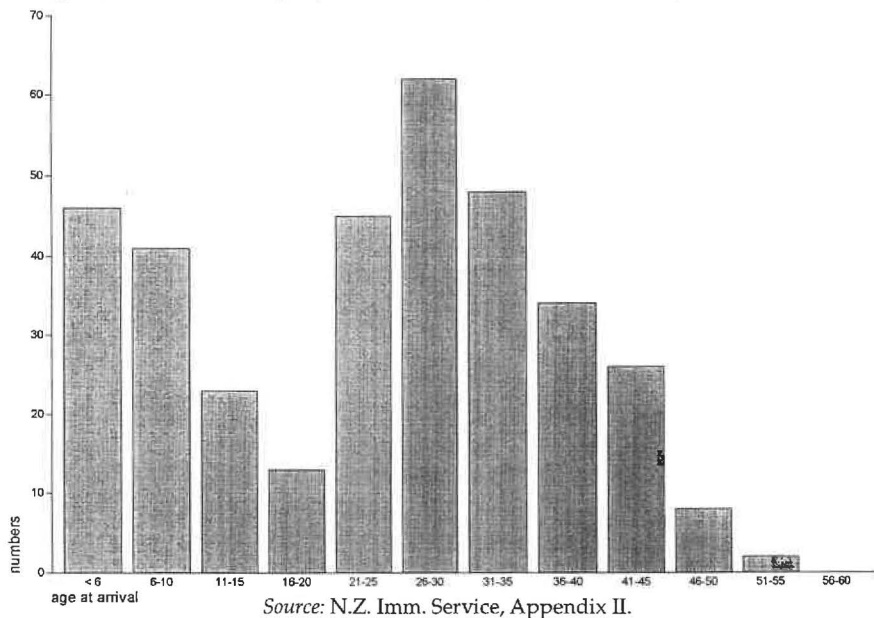
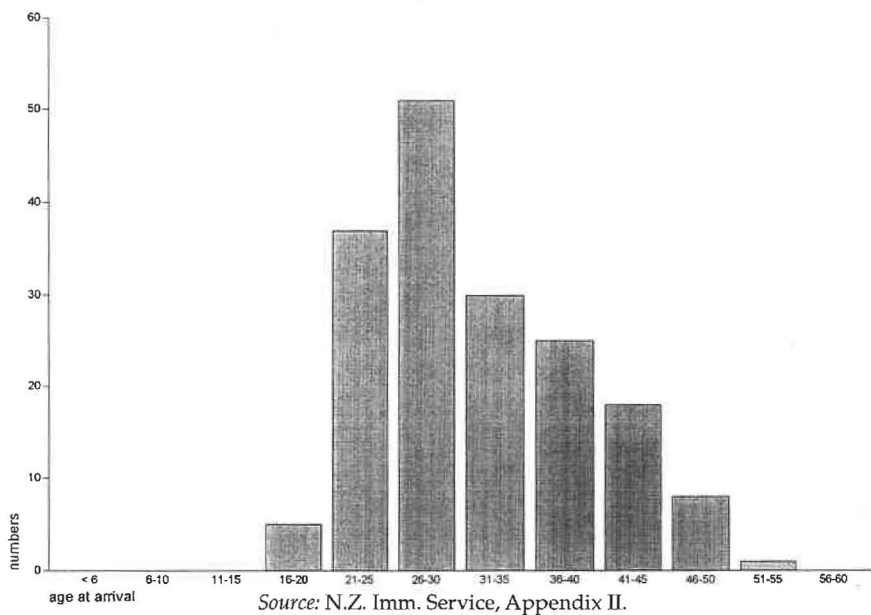
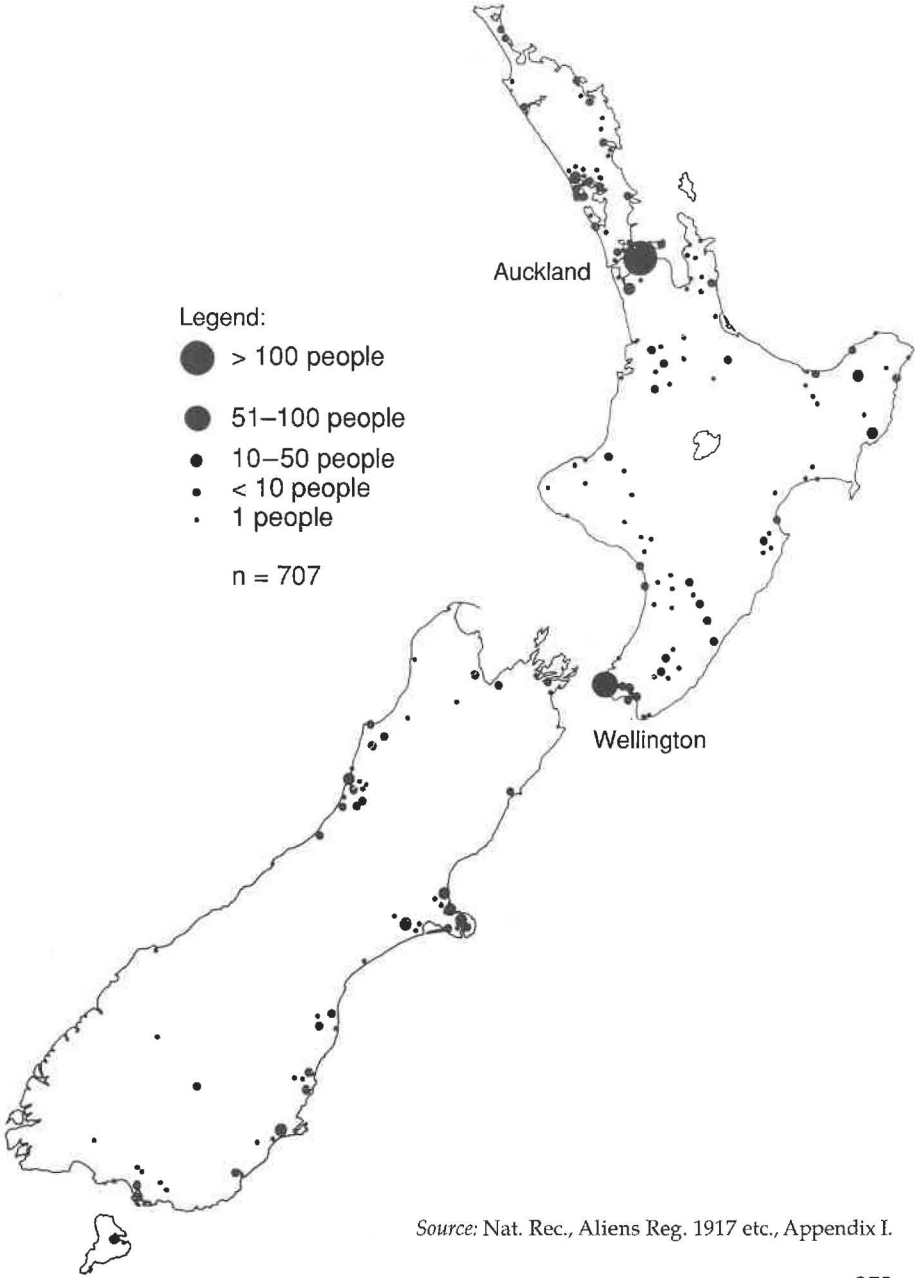


Diagram XV.4. b) *The age of main migrants at arrival after 1949. n = 175.*



Map XV.3. Finnish settlements in New Zealand before 1949.



Source: Nat. Rec., Aliens Reg. 1917 etc., Appendix I.

5. *Places of Settlement and Occupations – Major Contributions*

Finns have been living everywhere in New Zealand, including Stewart Island and the Chathams. As it appears from the Map XV.3., based on the Naturalized Finns before 1949, the major agglomerations were in Auckland and Wellington. The oldest group settlements were, however, on Banks Peninsula in the South Island, where sailors settled down after having arrived at Port Lyttelton.

Finnish Sea Captains

Among the Finnish pioneer immigrants there were quite a number of Master Mariners and Mates (Table 1). Some sailors received their certificate in New Zealand for fishing boats (oil engine vessels), for example Abraham Wäst and Oscar Lindqvist. Others sailed merchant ships between Australia and New Zealand. Hillel Liljeblad, who is known for guiding the British Royal Army on the waters of New Guinea in 1884, later went to Australia, where he became harbour captain in Sydney. Mr. Liljeblad died in 1925.¹

Table 1. *Finnish Master Mariners and Mates*²

Name	Born	Place of Birth	Arrival	Residence	Certificate issued
ALDO, George	1883	Raumo	1903	Wellington	Master Home Trade 1907
ANDERSON, Johan	1853	G. Karleby	1884	Dunedin	"Only Mate" 1884
BLOOM, Andrew	1862	Vaasa	1913	Heathcote	Master Home Trade 1876

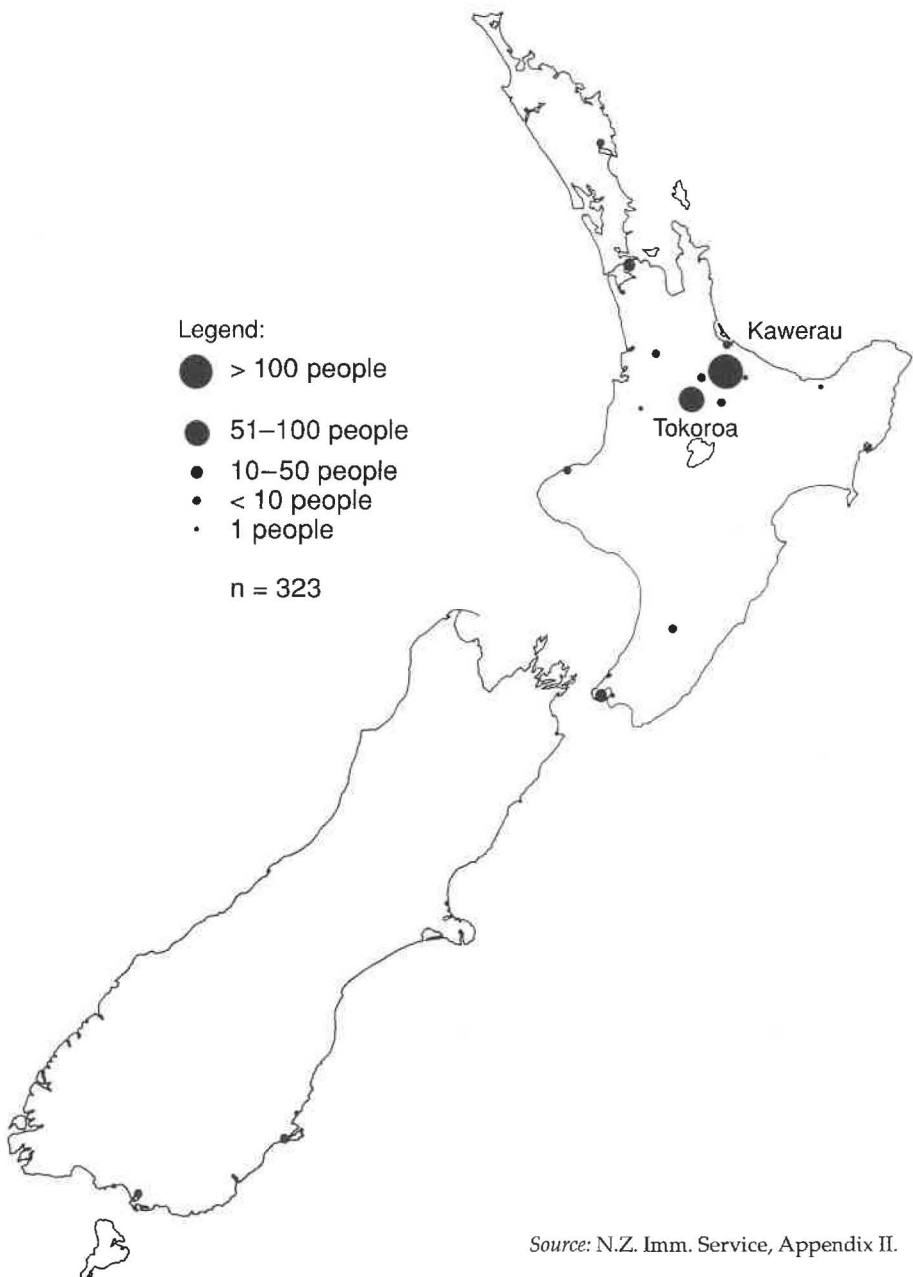
Name	Born	Place of Birth	Arrival	Residence	Certificate issued
GRUNLEAF, John	1832?	Raumo	1873	Stoke's pt. Auckland	Master Home Trade 1876
HIMANEN, Mikko	1882	Willmans- strand	1911	Auckland	Master Home Trade 1916
JACOBSON, Jacob	1860	Nykarleby	1889	-	Master Home Trade 1889
JOHANSON, Johan E.	1866	Mariehamn	1889	Auckland	Master Cargo Sail Home Trade 1905
KANERVA, Kustaa W.	1896	Kustavi	1921	Auckland	Seacaptain
LILJEBLAD, Hillel F.	1849	Uleåborg	-	-	Master 1895
LINDFORS, Carl	1845	Turku	1893	Auckland	Master Mariner
LINDQUIST, Francis Oscar	1875	Nauvo	1901	Bluff	Sail F or OEV 20 tons (Oil en- gine vessel) 1906
MYLIUS, George	1859	Tampere	1903	Timaru	Master Mariner
NEWMARK, Harry A.	1874	Helsinki	-	-	Master Home Trade 1905
NIEUMAN, Karl O.	1861	Åbo	1884	Auckland	Mate Home Trade 1906
PETERSEN, Peter	1845	-	ab. 1878	Auckland	Master Mariner
PIPONIUS, John	1854	Iisalmi	-	Dunedin	Second Mate 1877

Name	Born	Place of Birth	Arrival	Residence	Certificate issued
ROSTEN, John G.	1865	Nystad	–	Auckland	Only Mate 1894 NSW as Master 1898
SANDVICK, Johannes	1877	Jakobstad	1899	Dunedin	Master Home Trade 1914
SUNDELL, John P.	1845	Kokkola	1868	Greymouth	Master Mariner
WIDERSTROM, Uno T.G.	1856	Vaasa	1883	Napier	Master Mariner
WÄST, Abraham	1845	Bergö	1876	Stewart Is	OEV 6 tons 1911

Table 2. *Occupations – Finnish males naturalized in 1878–1948³*

Occupation	N	%
Professionals	1	0.3
Industry & Commerce	1	0.3
Farmers	35	10.5
Farm & Forest lab.	26	7.8
Seamen	55	16.5
Fishermen	12	3.6
Wharf labourer	6	1.8
Skilled workers	45	13.5
Miners	10	3.0
Gumdiggers	18	5.4
Service & Transport	27	8.1
Labourers	96	28.8
Not in work force	1	0.3
TOTAL	333	99.9

Map XV.4. Finnish settlements in New Zealand after 1949.



Source: N.Z. Imm. Service, Appendix II.

Farmers and Labourers

Most of the pioneer settlers were seamen who had left their ships and started to work at Little River and Pigeon Bay farms and sawmills. Many tried their luck on the goldfields as well as gumdigging in areas north of Auckland. Only a few were able to start farms of their own. As table 2. shows the largest number of Finns were occupied as labourers.

Papermill Workers and Professionals

After the war the main Finnish settlement was found in North Island, especially in the paper manufacturing centres of Tokoroa and Kawerau, and in Auckland (Map XV.4). To some extent the old seaman and farmer tradition continued, but the bulk of the new arrivals were tradesmen and experts in paper industry, including 13 Civil Engineers. Many of these professionals returned to Finland. Another major group was in the service sector, including nursing and office workers. Generally speaking the Finns immigrating to New Zealand in the last few decades have been well-educated, one reason being the strict New Zealand immigration policy and another reason the marriages with New Zealanders.

6. Social and Religious Life

Because of their small numbers, the social interaction between the early Finns in New Zealand probably took place mainly within the ethnic group, much due to the language problems. Sailors generally learnt English on the high seas during the years, and when they married a local girl in New Zealand, it was quite easy for them to adopt the local way of life. Soon they assimilated into the local community and their children hardly knew the place of origin of the father.

It was not until the ethnic Finnish group settlements grew up in Tokoroa and Kawerau in the 1950's and 1960's that there were any formal Finnish societies. The social life started with building a community sauna in Kawerau. The Finnish clubs in Kawerau and Tokoroa were vital in maintaining Finnish culture and traditions for nearly 20 years. However,

when the first generation grew old and their children found their activities and hobbies in the local New Zealand community, the societies could be abolished. Only in Auckland is the Finnish society still active. However, even there the language used is English.

The early Finnish males moving to New Zealand either had no religion or stuck to their old religion. However, if a Finn married a New Zealander, he often adopted the church of his wife. Among the postwar immigrants poor knowledge of English was common, and consequently the visits of the Finnish Seamen's Pastor to New Zealand were most important. There was no purely Finnish Lutheran congregation in New Zealand, but in Kawerau the Finns were the backbone of the local Lutheran church. Those married to Englishmen or New Zealanders may have adopted the church of their spouses, consequently their religious lives were more complicated.

By the middle of the 1990's the stronghold of the Finnish community is in Auckland. The Finnish Society there organizes popular Finnish classes and many ethnic cultural activities. Because of the bad economic situation in Finland there is much interest in emigration to New Zealand. However, the strict New Zealand immigration laws make it difficult to get accepted as a migrant. Some Finns are still able to enter the country, mainly because of marriage or having family members already in New Zealand.

7. Offences against the Law

Many colonists believed that in the "new world" there would not be the same problems as in their old home countries. The social pattern in New Zealand did differ from the old world. A lower crime rate tells about a more homogeneous population living in small cities, which did not face the same social problems as more urbanized areas.⁴

Most arrests were for "offences against good order" or "offences against property". Unskilled male immigrants were in the majority among detainees. Men were ten times more likely to be convicted than women. According to statistics from the year 1920, there were 5,234 cases of drunkenness (4,939 male and 295 female persons), 1,022 cases of theft (944 male and 78 female persons), 382 cases of obscene, threatening or abusive language (372 male and 10 female persons) and 303 cases of indecent, riotous or offensive conduct (297 male and 6 female persons).⁵

One has to keep in mind that the immigrant population was also male dominated. The highest correlation between women and lawbreaking is found among vagrants; of 295 cases of vagrancy there were 39 females. Female offenders were considered, by contemporary criminologists, "lacking the maternal instinct".⁶

Finnish Drinking Habit

There is very little information about Finnish immigrants' offences against the law in New Zealand. Statistical sources give some figures about foreign law breakers. The US criminal statistics show that most crimes committed by Finnish immigrants in the United States in the late nineteenth century and early twentieth century were connected to the Finns' frequent use of alcohol. The Finns got into knifefights with their fellow citizens as well as with Scandinavians and Irishmen.⁷

Drunkenness was also the most common cause of arrest in New Zealand in 1911–1920. Among Finns the convictions for drunkenness took the highest proportion of all arrest cases in 1920 (Table 3.), while only a small part of the British (although by number the largest group of convicted drunks) and the Danish convictions were caused by

Table 3. *Magistrate Courts – Arrest Cases – Total Summary for Drunkenness 1919 and 1920, by Nationality and Population*⁸

Country	Arrests		Mean	Popu- lation 1921*	% males of popu- lation	% drunken- ness of population
	1919	1920				
Denmark	36	38	37	2 113	67.3	1.75
Finland	29	36	32.5	314	89.8	10.35
Great						
Britain	3 438	3 538	3 488	237 996	54.7	1.4
Norway	89	87	88	1 048	74.05	8.40
Sweden	85	94	89.5	1 206	85.66	7.42

* No census available for 1919–1920

drunkenness. The Norwegian and Swedish drinking behaviour seems more similar to the Finnish. All of the convicted Finns were men. The number of illegal acts decreased in the 1920's as the immigrants became more settled down, got permanent jobs and married.

8. Contacts with Finland and Search for Roots

From the very beginning many Finnish immigrants in New Zealand maintained contacts to their country of birth by letters and occasional visits. However, many were thoroughly absorbed in their new surroundings, and when the decades passed they lost their contacts with the family back in Finland. Quite different from these "isolated settlers" is the story of the postwar immigrants who in small Finnish communities were able to cherish their old culture and traditions. Now these Finns of Tokoroa and Kawerau are getting old, many have died, and some have returned to Finland. Their children are New Zealanders of Finnish origin, often proud of their ethnicity and culture. In most cases the second generation has knowledge of the Finnish language. Sometimes they also visit Finland to meet relatives and friends. The third generation is also interested in Finland, but generally they cannot speak the language of their grandparents – except for a few words.

The descendants of the early Finnish immigrants in New Zealand, i.e. the fourth – sixth generations, are interested in family history and genealogy and eager to find their roots in Finland. Many of them also visit Finland to experience the re-union of the branches of families over distance and time. This may help them to understand that they still may have some features of character different from the rest of the "British New Zealand" population of the human mosaic of international flavour.

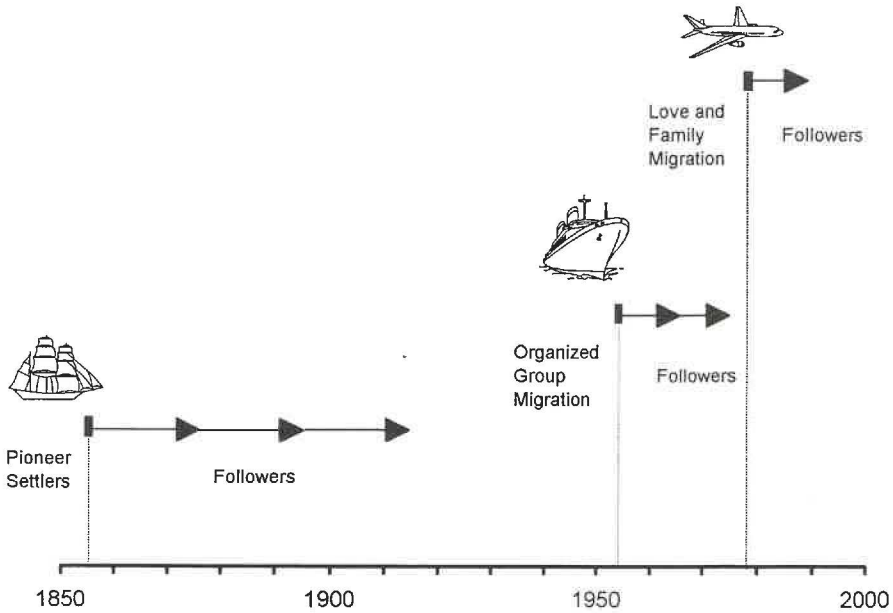
Chapter XVI: Conclusion and International Perspectives

1. Patterns of Migration

In this study migration is considered a relatively permanent movement of people from one geographical location to another – in this case from the opposite side of the world. Human migration is as old as mankind, as the Finnish scholar, Ragnar Numelin, has well pointed out in his book “The Wandering Spirit”, published in 1936.¹ Despite the timelessness of the process it was not until 1885 that the British geographer, E. G. Ravenstein, formulated his “Laws of migration”.² Many of his observations are still valid today, e.g. that economic cause is the most dominant factor. American H. P. Fairchild defined a theoretical model in 1925, with five typologies: invasion, conquest, colonization, free movement and compulsory migration.³ In the 1950’s another American, W. Petersen, formulated a typology in five categories: primitive, forced, impelled, free, and mass migration. He emphasized innovative migration, often combined with “wanderlust”, and also formulated the concepts of push and pull factors.⁴ The best known of the push-pull -hypotheses was formulated by Robert E. Lee in the 1960’s. He also introduced the idea of intervening obstacles – the most obvious being distance. According to Lee, the migration process is never completely rational as it includes a number of personal factors.⁵ MacDonald & MacDonald focused on chain migration, which means that a migrant learns of the opportunities, and is often provided with the means of transport, and has initial accommodation and employment arranged by previous migrants.⁶

All these migration hypotheses and typologies fit to some extent to the tiny Finnish immigration to New Zealand. The most relevant typologies are free migration and chain migration throughout the whole period of the study, as well as the organized migration to the papermills of Tokoroa and Kawerau in the 1950’s and 1960’s. Considering push and pull factors, it is

The Pattern of Finnish Migration to New Zealand.



quite clear that the attraction of New Zealand has been stronger than the push of Finland, although in most cases both directions are effective – consciously and unconsciously.

Concerning the long distance involved – 19,000 km from Finland to New Zealand – the spatial factor is essential. The major problem has been how to overcome this barrier – the “intervening obstacle”. The high seas sailors were the first to do this, often becoming pioneer settlers starting migration chains for decades. The arrival of relatives and friends from Finland has been a major characteristic of Finnish migration to New Zealand – as well as to many other overseas destinations. In addition to sporadic arrivals and chain migration, the third feature is seen in the organized labour force immigration by the New Zealand paper industry after the Second World War. The fourth type could be defined as “love migration”, especially in the 1970’s and 1980’s, when well-educated Finnish women (and men) made a deliberate choice to live and raise their

families in "Aotearoa". Furthermore, there have always been individuals who have also fallen in love with the South Seas and New Zealand – its nature, people and way of life.

2. International Contexts

German-born persons constituted the largest continental European population in New Zealand prior to the First World War, approximately 8,500 persons, many of them arriving as government assisted immigrants.⁷ Like the Finns, German immigration was part of a larger movement to the United States, South Africa, Australia etc. Also German immigration often took the form of chain migration. Persons would emigrate from a village or city in Germany over a period of time and settle in contiguous German groups in New Zealand. In these ethnic agglomerations the Germans used to cherish their old traditions.⁸

After the German-born the next largest Continental European immigrant groups to settle in New Zealand before the First World War were Scandinavians. Most of them arrived under the organized immigration scheme of the 1870's. Scandinavian immigration to New Zealand consisted of about 10,000 persons up till the Depression of the 1930's. Of these about one half were Danes while Swedes and Norwegians made up 25 per cent each. The Scandinavians were more ruralized than the German immigrants, largely due to their almost exclusive placement in isolated bush settlements, especially in Hawkes Bay.⁹

In many ways the Finnish immigration to New Zealand is similar to the Yugoslav pattern. Prior to the turn of the century a number of many ethnic groups in Yugoslavia had made their way to New Zealand. With relatively few exceptions, Yugoslav immigrants before 1920 were young single men in search of work and wealth, with little or no intention of settling permanently. These early arrivals played an important role in directing later Yugoslavs to the Colony. Some gold-miners had returned to their home country with favourable reports while those who stayed filtered further information in letters back to their native land. Like many Finns, immigrants from Yugoslavia were attracted to kauri gum-digging in the Auckland area. In this work little monetary outlay was necessary in relation to expected promising monetary returns.¹⁰

Before 1914 the Germans and Scandinavians were the largest groups of Continental emigrants. At the turn of the century they formed over 78 per cent of this group. By the end of the Second World War they had fallen to 42 per cent while Southern Europeans had increased from 16 to 45 per cent. The most important Continental immigration since the war came from the Netherlands, and by 1966 the largest Continental European ethnic group in New Zealand was the Dutch population, over 18,000 persons, followed by 3,500 Yugoslavs, 2,650 Greeks and 2,250 Poles.¹¹

Chain migration was also typical among Southern Europeans. About 90 per cent of the Italians in New Zealand in 1966 had arrived with the assistance of relatives and friends. Of the Greeks little more than 50 per cent were chain migrants. The arrivals from Italy and Greece originated almost entirely from rural localities and had few skills transferable to an urban society.¹²

A basic feature of New Zealand's foreign population is the pronounced imbalance of the sexes in favour of the male element. The masculinity of the non-British population is attributed to male-oriented economic activities such as gold-mining and kauri gum-digging.¹³ Also the journey around half of the world was expensive and difficult – even dangerous in the old days – and this explains the maritime background of many early European settlers in New Zealand.

Comparing the Finnish immigration and settlement to other overseas destinations, the major feature in New Zealand is the small numbers. As to the United States, Canada and Australia, a typical pattern is chain-migration as well, but the ethnic settlements there are generally much bigger. The Finns established numerous small rural and urban settlements which developed into vibrant communities where the language, cultural landscape and social institutions were Finnish for a long period of time. The pattern of Finnish settlement in New Zealand has many similarities to the one in Australia.¹⁴ However, the papermill communities of Tokoroa and Kawerau are quite unique in the whole Finnish migration history. The Finnish immigration to New Zealand has always been small and generally very selective. Some Finns have – no doubt – drifted, or even shipwrecked – to these South Sea islands. To many Finns the furthest corner of the world has been a deliberate choice to contribute through their own efforts – and with the further generations – to the multiethnic population of New Zealand today.

Notes and References

Chapter I: Introduction

- ¹ This general review of New Zealand and her history is based on *An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand*, Vol. 2, ed. A. H. McLintock, Wellington 1966; and on Keith Sinclair, *A History of New Zealand*, Auckland 1988; and *The Oxford History of New Zealand*, ed. W. H. Oliver and B. R. Williams, Wellington 1981.
- ² R. A. Lochore, *From Europe to New Zealand; An Account of our Continental European Settlers*, Wellington 1951, pp. 20–21.
- ³ Ian H. Burnley, "Survey of New Zealand Literature on Migration", in *Australian Immigration; A Bibliography and Digest*, No. 2, 1970, ed. Charles Price & al., Australian National University, Canberra, 1971, pp. A 62–76.
- ⁴ Ian H. Burnley, "The Greek, Italian and Polish Communities in New Zealand", Ph.D. Dissertation, Victoria University of Wellington 1969.
- ⁵ Saara St. Martin, "Tiedustelu Kaweraun ja Tokoroan suomalaisten viihtymisestä (An enquiry of the adjustment of the Finns in Kawerau and Tokoroa)", *Siirtolaisuus – Migration*, No. 2, 1975, pp. 5–12.
- ⁶ Martti Grönfors, "Uuden Seelannin Suomalaiset (Finns in New Zealand)", *Ulko-suomalaisia (Finns Abroad)*, Kalevala Seuran Vuosikirja (The Yearbook of the Kalevala Society), No. 62, Helsinki 1982, pp. 90–101.
- ⁷ Sinikka Puosi, "Anpassung der finnischen Migranten in Neuseeland; Die lokale Identität in einer kleinen Gemeinde", Magisterarbeit, Johann Wolfgang Goethe Universität, Frankfurt am Main 1987. Also by Sinikka Puosi the following articles:
 - "Pienten siirtolaisryhmien suomalaisuuden säilyminen (The maintenance of the Finnishness of small migrant groups)", *Siirtolaisuus – Migration*, No. 3, 1985, pp. 1–8, and
 - "Heimat als Ergebnis des menschlichen Schaffens; Das Beispiel der finnischen Einwanderer in Neuseeland", *Siirtolaisuus – Migration*, No. 4, 1987, pp. 9–19.
- ⁸ Olavi Koivukangas, *Scandinavian Immigration and Settlement in Australia before World War II*, Kokkola 1972; and *Sea, Gold and Sugarcane; Finns in Australia 1851–1947*, Turku 1986.
 - See also Olavi Koivukangas – John S. Martin, *The Scandinavians in Australia*, Melbourne 1986.
- ⁹ Sten Aminoff, *Svenskarna i Nya Zeeland; Den svenska utvandringen till Nya Zeeland fram till 1940 (Swedes in New Zealand; Swedish immigration to New Zealand until 1940)*, Växjö 1988.
- ¹⁰ *Danish Emigration to New Zealand*, ed. Henning Bender and Birgit Larsen, Aalborg 1990.

- ¹¹ Jens Lyng, *The Scandinavians in Australia, New Zealand and the Western Pacific*, Melbourne 1939.
- ¹² G. C. Petersen, *Forest Homes; The Story of the Scandinavian Settlements in the Forty Mile Bush, New Zealand*, Wellington 1956, reprint 1966.
- ¹³ J. W. Davidson, "The Scandinavians in New Zealand", M.A. thesis, Department of History, Victoria University of Wellington 1936; and H. A. Henderson, "Dannevirke – the Founding of a Bush Settlement", M.A. thesis, Department of History, Victoria University of Wellington 1938.
- ¹⁴ Andrew Trlin, *Now Respected, Once Despised; Yugoslavs in New Zealand*, Palmerston North 1979.

Chapter II: Herman Spöring from Turku, Finland, sailed with James Cook in New Zealand in 1769–70

- ¹ This information is based on certain communications by natives to James Cook. The crew of a ship shortly before Cook was obviously massacred by the barbarious inhabitants. M. Russell, *Polynesia; A History of the South Sea Islands including New Zealand*, London MDCCLIII, pp. 336–337. See also J. C. Beaglehole, *The Discovery of New Zealand*, 2nd ed., Wellington 1961; and Anne Salmond, *Two worlds; first meetings between Maori and Europeans 1642–1772*, Auckland 1991.
- ² The old church records of Turku were destroyed in the big fire of 1827.
- ³ Rudiger Joppien and Bernhard Smith, *The Art of Captain James Cook's Voyages, Vol. One: The Voyage of the Endeavour 1768–1771 with Descriptive catalogue of all the known original drawings of people, places, artifacts and events and the original engravings associated with them*, New Haven and London 1985, p. 76.
- ⁴ *The Journals of Captain James Cook on his Voyages of Discovery; The Voyage of the Endeavour 1768–1771*, ed. J. C. Beaglehole, Cambridge 1955, p. 529. See also A. Charles Begg and Neil C. Begg, *James Cook and New Zealand*, Wellington 1969, p. 27.
- ⁵ *The Endeavour Journal of Joseph Banks 1768–1771*, ed. J. C. Beaglehole, Sydney 1963, Vol. I, p. 25 and Vol. II, p. 191.
- ⁶ Joseph Angus Mackay, *Historic Poverty Bay and the East Coast, N.I., N.Z.*, Christchurch 1982, p. 55.
- ⁷ About the name of Spöring Island or Pourewa, Penelope Lawrence, New Zealand Geographic Board, letter Sept. 20, 1990, to Mr. Jussi Parkkali, Chairman of the Finnish Society of Auckland, Copy, SI, Turku, Finland.
- ⁸ *An Account of the Voyages Undertaken by the Order of his Present Majesty for Making Discoveries in the Southern Hemisphere and Successively Performed by Commodore Byron, Captain Carteret, Captain Wallis and Captain Cook, In the Dolphin, the Swallow, and the Endeavour: Drawn up From the Journals which were kept by several*

Commanders, And from the Papers of Joseph Banks, Esq; by John Hawkesworth, LL.D in three Volumes, London MDCCLXXIII, Copy Mitchell Library, Sydney.

See also JOPPIEN & SMITH, 1985, p. 42 and Hugh Cobbe, ed., *Cook's Voyages and Peoples of the Pacific*, British Museum, London 1979, p. 5.

- ⁹ J. S. Pollack, *New Zealand: Being a Narrative of Travels and Adventures during a Residence in that Country between the Years 1831 and 1837*, Vol. II, London M.DCCC.XXXVIII, pp. 139–140.
- ¹⁰ *Daniel Solander 1733–1782, naturvetenskapman och världsomseglare (Daniel Solander 1733–1782, a naturalist and worldaround sailor)*, ed. Christian Gisselquist and Per Tingbrand, Piteå kommuns kulturnämnd, skrifter 1, Piteå 1983; See also Markku Löytönen. "Herman Dietrich Spöring nuorempi, tuntemattoman mantereen etsijä (H. D. Spöring Jr. an explorer of an unknown continent)". *Matka-arkku; suomalaisia tutkimusmatkailijoita (A Travel Trunk; Finnish Explorers)*, SKS, Hämeenlinna 1989, p. 32.
- ¹¹ JOPPIEN & SMITH 1985, p. 41.
- ¹² A. M. Lysaght, *Banks Artist in the Endeavour, The Journal of H.M.S. Endeavour 1768–1771 by Lieutenant James Cook*, Genesis Publication, 1977, p. 38.
- ¹³ JOPPIEN & SMITH 1985, p. 41.
- ¹⁴ SALMOND 1991, p. 294. See also pp. 105, 111, 231–233.
- ¹⁵ BEAGLEHOLE 1955, p. 447; On the passage to Cape of Good Hope altogether 23 crew members died in addition to seven in Batavia. *Historical Records of New Zealand*, Vol. II, by Robert McNab, Wellington 1914, p. 73. Altogether 38 out of 94 crew members died during the voyage.
- ¹⁶ LYSAGHT 1977, p. 38.
- ¹⁷ KOIVUKANGAS 1986, pp. 58–59; and Olavi Koivukangas, "Herman Dietrich Spöring; an Explorer from Turku who sailed with James Cook in the South Seas, 1768–71", in *Studia Historica in Honorem Vilho Niitemaa*, Turku 1987, pp. 170–182; also LÖYTÖNEN 1989.
- ¹⁸ LYNG 1939, p. 157.

Chapter III: Finns among Whalers

- ¹ J. M. R. Owens, "New Zealand before Annexation", *The Oxford History of New Zealand*, Wellington 1981; and SINCLAIR 1988, p. 46; and "Immigration", *An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand*, Vol. 2, Wellington 1966, p. 130.
- ² *Stories of Old New Zealand*, Paul Hamlyn, 1971, p. 388.
- ³ F. D. Ommanney, *Lost Leviathan*, London 1971, pp. 79–80.
- ⁴ Harry Morton, *The Whale's Wake*, Dunedin 1982, Pref. and p. 15.
- ⁵ OWENS 1966, pp. 31–32.
- ⁶ MORTON 1982, p. 312.
- ⁷ OMMANNEY 1971, p. 80.
- ⁸ MORTON 1982, p. 312.

- ⁹ *Ibid*, pp. 65–66.
- ¹⁰ J. W. Dakin, *Whalemen Adventurers*, Sydney 1963 (1st 1934), pp. 3–4.
- ¹¹ Alan Moorehead, *The Fatal Impact; An Account of the Invasion of the South Pacific 1767–1840*, London 1966, pp. 88–89.
- ¹² Henrik Ramsay, "Purjelaivojen merimiehiä (Seamen in the Days of Sail)", *Valtamerten Ääriiltä (From the Ends of the Oceans)*, Helsinki 1950, pp. 24–26.
- ¹³ Harry Morton, *The Wind Commands; Sailors and Sailing Ships in the Pacific*, Vancouver 1975, p. 198.
- ¹⁴ Herman Melville, *Omoo; A Narrative of Adventurers in the South Seas*, Evanston and Chicago 1968 (1st 1847), p. 46.
- ¹⁵ Herman Melville, *Moby Dick*, New York 1962 (1st 1851), p. 114.
- ¹⁶ *Historical Records of New Zealand South Prior to 1840*, Compiled by RO. Carrick, Dunedin MCMIII, p. 121.
- ¹⁷ DAKIN 1963, pp. 69, 113.
- ¹⁸ KOIVUKANGAS 1986, pp. 60–61.
- ¹⁹ MORTON 1982, pp. 68, 238–239.
- ²⁰ *Ibid*, pp. 217, 257, 260; MCNABB relates in his New Zealand classics *The Old Whaling Days; A History of Southern New Zealand from 1830 to 1840*, Auckland 1971 (1st 1913), p. 297, that in Cook Strait at Te Avaiti in September 1839 there were some 40 European whalers, all of whom lived with Maori women. A visitor counted 21 half-caste children whose appearance struck him very favourably.
- ²¹ "Tapsell, Philip or Felk". *An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand*, ed. A. H. McLintock, Vol. 3, Wellington 1966, pp. 349–350.
- ²² DAKIN 1963, p. 113.
- ²³ KOIVUKANGAS 1986, p. 63.
- ²⁴ Aarne Koskinen, *Missionary Influence as Political Factor in the Pacific Islands*, Helsinki 1953, p. 128; Eino Koivistoinen, *Tahiti*, Porvoo 1977, pp. 81–88; and KOIVUKANGAS 1986, p. 61. About Peter Hagerstein at Otahaite (Tahiti) see: RUSSELL, *Polynesia ...*, MDCCCLIII; p. 134; and *Georg Vancouver; A Voyage of Discovery to the North Pacific Ocean and Round the World 1791–1795*, London 1984 (1st 1798), p. 120. About the visit the H.M.S. *Daedulus* see Robert McNabb, *Historical Records of New Zealand*, Vol. I, Wellington 1908, p. 333, and the above *Journal of Georg Vancouver*, Vol. III, p. 1081. See also Robert Langdon, *Tahiti: Island of Love*, 3rd ed. Sydney 1968 (1st 1959), pp. 78, 86.
- ²⁵ G. R. V. Barratt, *Bellinghousen: A visit to New Zealand*, 1820, Palmerston North 1979, pp. 26–29; and Glynn Barratt, *Russofobia in New Zealand 1838–1908*, Palmerston North 1981; See also Harry Morton – Carol Morton Johnston, *The Farthest Corner; New Zealand A Twice Discovered Land*, Auckland 1988, p. 135; and MOOREHEAD 1966, pp. 83–84, 87, 216–217.
- ²⁶ Information from Mrs. Anne Ingram and other members of the Wanhalla family, especially a letter by Mrs. Shirley Rhodes, Christchurch 1991, SI, Turku, Finland.
- ²⁷ Interview with the descendants of Francis Urwin, Auckland, Jan. 30, 1992, SI, Turku, Finland.

²⁸ The Urwin family history.

²⁹ Interview with the descendants of Francis Urwin, Auckland, Jan. 30, 1992, SI, Turku, Finland.

Chapter IV: Goldiggers and Other Early Finns

¹ A good general review of the New Zealand goldrushes is P. W. Morrell, *The Gold Rushes*, 2nd ed. London 1968, pp. 260–282. The book gives also an excellent view of the international character of the gold rushes. Also SINCLAIR 1988, p. 106; and Philip Ross May, *The West Coast Gold Rushes*, Christchurch 1967 (1st 1962), p. 104.

² About the discovery of gold at Coromandel in 1852 see "First Report of Gold in New Zealand", *Bright Fine Gold; Stories of New Zealand Goldfields*, compiled by William F. Heinz, Wellington 1974, pp. 108–110.

³ In the Californian rush Gabriel Read (1824–94) had learnt the art of gold prospecting, spending also some time on the Australian goldfields. Coming originally from Tasmania Read soon settled there and did no further prospecting. J. H. M. Salmon, *A History of Goldmining in New Zealand*, Wellington 1963, pp. 43–56; and HEINZ 1974, pp. 56–59.

⁴ W. D. Borrie, *Immigration to New Zealand 1854–1938*, Canberra 1991, p. 16.

⁵ A few thousand Chinese had drifted across to New Zealand from Australia in the 1850's and early 1860's, but it was not until 1866 they started to arrive in significant numbers. Peter Butler, *Opium and Gold*, Martinborough 1977; and HEINZ 1974, pp. 168–176.

⁶ MORRELL 1968, p. 269.

⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 274.

⁸ MAY, *Hokitika; Goldfields Capital*, Christchurch 1964, p. 12.

⁹ About the West Coast goldrushes see MAY 1967; and Murray McCASKILL, "The Goldrush Population of Westland", *New Zealand Geographer*, Vol. XII, April 1956, No. 1, pp. 32–50.

¹⁰ W. P. Morrell, *A History of New Zealand Life*, Christchurch 1957, pp. 109, and 141–144.

¹¹ "Gold Discoveries", *An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand*, Vol 1, ed. A. H. McLintock, Wellington 1966, p. 823, 1964, p. 12.

¹² SINCLAIR 1988, p. 107.

¹³ MAY 1967, pp. 196 and 199.

¹⁴ SALMOND 1963, p. 118.

¹⁵ McCASKILL 1956, p. 42.

¹⁶ AMINOFF 1988, p. 21.

¹⁷ KOIVUKANGAS – MARTIN 1986, pp. 37–38.

¹⁸ LYNG 1939, pp. 157–158.

¹⁹ KOIVUKANGAS 1986, p. 71.

- ²⁰ Australian Naturalization Records 1911/19080, Commonwealth Archives, Canberra.
- ²¹ Letter from Mrs Elva Lynch, Feb. 15, 1996, Auckland, SI, Turku.
- ²² A. E. Tonson, *Old Manukau*, Auckland 1966, pp. 80–83.
- ²³ New Zealand Death Records, Office of Registrar General, Lower Hutt.
- ²⁴ New Zealand Register of Aliens 1917, Department of Internal Affairs, National Archives, Wellington.
- ²⁵ Interview with the descendants of John Koskela, Lyttelton, Jan. 5, 1992, SI, Turku, Finland.
- ²⁶ Registration of shipping and seaman; Certificates of Master Mariners, mates etc. 1874–1938, Ministry of Transport, Wellington.

Chapter V: South Island – the Gateway to the Colony

- ¹ W. J. Gardner, "A Colonial Economy", *The Oxford History of New Zealand*, Wellington 1981, pp. 58–63; and SINCLAIR 1988, passim.
- ² Gordon Ogilvie, *Banks Peninsula; Cradle of Canterbury*, Wellington 1990, pp. 1–5.
- ³ *A Return of the Freeholders of New Zealand – October 1882*, Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington; and "Erik West", Nat. Rec. I A 1883/5052, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁴ W. H. Scotter, *A History of Lyttelton*, Christchurch 1976, p. 1.
- ⁵ "John Koskela", Nat. Rec. I A 1878/3184, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁶ Interview with Graeme Koskela, Mrs. Judith Tewian-Smith and other descendants of John Koskela, Lyttelton, Jan. 5, 1992.
- ⁷ "John Johnson", Nat. Rec. I A 1905/1026, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁸ *Register of Aliens 1917*, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁹ OGILVIE 1990, pp. 232, 233, 237 and 245.
- ¹⁰ Erikson Family Records c/o John Erikson, especially the Orbitaly of Andrew Erikson; interview with the descendants of the Erikson family, Christchurch, Jan. 5, 1992, SI, Turku.
- ¹¹ The family history of Erik Soderlund compiled by Marlene and her son Craig Brankin, especially the Registers of Births and Marriages at Little River and in Christchurch, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; and the interview of Marlene Brankin and Elna Strathen, granddaughters, Christchurch, Jan. 3–5, 1992, SI, Turku.
- ¹² *Souvenir History of Little River School Reunion*, March 12–14, 1965, pp. 4–5.
- ¹³ H. C. Jacobson, *Tales of Banks Peninsula*, Akaroa 1976 (1st 1914), pp. 316, 372–374. OGILVIE 1990, p. 236, calls the men "Scandinavians".
- ¹⁴ *Österbottniska Posten*, Dec. 8, 1887.
- ¹⁵ According to the Nat. Rec. a Nils Jacobson was naturalized at Pigeon Bay in 1891 – four years after the killing. Here the year of his birth is given 1862 while the Church Records from Munsala give 1850. "Nils Jacobson", Nat. Rec. I A 1891/

20/4/265 – according to the Index at the National Archives in Wellington. The original file was not found.

- ¹⁶ OGILVIE 1990, pp. 85–90.
- ¹⁷ Nicholas John Taylor (b. 1973), "Family Background of the Scandinavian side", A family history of Henrik Johan and Brita Sofia Blomquist and their descendants, Christchurch, copy SI, Turku.
- ¹⁸ Archives of the Ministry of Defence, Helsinki, 26/6900/88/50; and a letter on June 30, 1988, to Mr. Craig Brankin, Christchurch.
- ¹⁹ Family Records of the descendants of Isak Blomquist, especially collected by Marlene and her son Craig Brankin, Christchurch. Interview of Marlene Brankin and Elna Strathen, granddaughters, Jan. 5, 1992, Christchurch, SI, Turku.
- ²⁰ Brenda Guthrie, *New Zealand Memories*, London 1930, pp. 226–231.
- ²¹ "Robert Olin", Nat. Rec. I A 1886/423/21/76, N.A., Wellington; "Carl Petter Carlson", Nat. Rec. I A 1887/2622/243/89, N.A., Wellington; New Zealand Register of Aliens 1917, N.A., Wellington.
- ²² "Carl Demhard Telenius", Nat. Rec. I A 1890/3368/27/187, N.A., Wellington; *From River to Range*, Waimea South Historical Society, 1992, p. 30.
- ²³ "John Henry Sandos", Nat. Rec. I A 1923/20/1/1510/70/155, N.A., Wellington; letter from Wendy Cockburn, a descendant of Johan Henrik Sandos, Lower Hutt Oct. 25, 1991, SI, Turku; letter from John Sandos, grandson of Johan Henrik Sandos, Hamilton, Nov. 6, 1991, SI, Turku; an interview with John Sandos Jan. 25, 1992 in Hamilton, SI, Turku; the passengerlists of Finnish Steamship Company; Church Records of Saarijärvi and Vaasa Parishes; Sandos Familytree by Wendy Cockburn 1986; A. SOMERO, *Sandåsin perheen historia Munsalassa 1726–1901*, Vaasa 1940.
- ²⁴ "Andrew Bloom", Nat. Rec. I A 1920/20/1/1150.
- ²⁵ "Waino Sarelius", Nat. Rec. I A 1920/20/1/1694; and UM, Helsinki, 53, Fff Auckland.
- ²⁶ "Anders Wilhelm Erikson", Nat. Rec. I A 1922/20/1/986/69/145 N.A., Wellington; the familytree of the Knuts and Träsk families; Munsala Parish Church Record; an article in *Christchurch Star-Sun*, June 18, 1958.
- ²⁷ "Edward Erick Erickson", Nat. Rec. I A 1923/20/1/1864/70/178 N.A., Wellington; familytree of the Knuts and Träsk families; obituary of Edward Erick Erickson in 1941.
- ²⁸ "Edward Gunnar Neilson", Nat. Rec. I A 1948/115/1503/91/390, N.A., Wellington.
- ²⁹ "Otto Wilhelm Sandelin", Nat. Rec. I A 1905/1368/44/33, N.A., Wellington; "Otto Arne Sandelin", Nat. Rec. I A 1933/158/91/82/305, N.A., Wellington.
- ³⁰ "John Herman Whitberg", Nat. Rec. I A 1922/20/1/2128/70/23, N.A., Wellington.
- ³¹ "Charles Williams", Nat. Rec. I A 1923/20/1/1331/71/179, N.A., Wellington.
- ³² "Mary Gustava Keenan", Nat. Rec. I A 1906/1366/30/3, N.A., Wellington; "John Oscar Keinan", Nat. Rec. I A 1935/158/9/83/71, N.A., Wellington;

- Register of Deaths, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; letter from Sean G. Brosnahan (Otago Early Settlers Museum) July 24, 1992 Dunedin, SI, Turku.
- ³³ A letter from Frances Ford to Olavi Koivukangas, May 6, 1993, Rangiora, SI, Turku.
- ³⁴ "Benjamin Backholm", Nat. Rec. I A 1902/4255/40/256, N.A., Wellington; Certification of Marriage, Jan. 23, 1895 Alexandra, Register of Marriages, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; Letter from Lois Kirkwood, a descendant of Benjamin Backholm, Timaru, February 1992, SI, Turku.
- ³⁵ "Nils Edward Nelson", Nat. Rec. I A 1938/115/426/85/319, N.A., Wellington.
- ³⁶ "Robert Johnson", Nat. Rec. I A 1928/20/1/3895/79/148, N.A., Wellington.
- ³⁷ "August Israel Nyberg", Nat. Rec. I A 1928/20/1/3708 and I A 1928/115/22/73/228, N.A., Wellington.
- ³⁸ Interviews with Francis Oscar Lindquist in Kumara on Jan. 7, 1992, son of F. Oscar Lindquist, and Susan Lindquist in Dunedin, Jan. 8, 1992, married to F. Oscar Lindquist's grandson.
- ³⁹ Jack Churchouse, *Leonard Robertson, the Whangaroa & La Bella*. Wellington 1982.

Chapter VI: North Island – the Main Settlement

- ¹ Letter from Mr. Nash to Hilda Lehtonen, sister of Hjalmar Suominen, April 6, 1937, SI, Turku; a letter from Veikko Vuorinen, the nephew of Suominen, to Olavi Koivukangas, Oct. 15, 1981, SI, Turku; "Hjalmar August Suominen", Nat. Rec. I A 1/20/1/1335/65/88, N.A., Wellington.
- ² "David Andersson", Nat. Rec. I A 1/20/1/3925, N.A., Wellington.
- ³ "Jacob Erkkilä", Nat. Rec. I A 1/20/1/3265, N.A., Wellington; letters from Bertha Mitchell, daughter of Erkkilä, to Mr. Karhula, Oct. 12, 1936 and Aug. 21, 1937 (The collection of Urpo Kokkonen, TYYH/s/X/IV); letters from Iisakki Apola to Mr. Karhula, June 4, 1936 and May 8, 1937 (The collection of Urpo Kokkonen, TYYH/s/X/IV); a letter from Mrs. B. Culloch to Mr. Karhula Oct. 18, 1938 (The collection of Urpo Kokkonen, TYYH/s/X/IV); an article in *Suomi*, Dec. 4, 1939.
- ⁴ "John Henrik Henrikson", Nat. Rec. I A 1/1907/1288, N.A., Wellington; letters from Corinne Henriksson, a descendant of Johan Henriksson, Oct. 25, 1991, and Dec. 3, 1991, SI, Turku; Return of Applications to Marry in the Tokatoka District Feb. 27, 1891, Register of Marriages, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; Munsala Parish Church Records.
- ⁵ "Theodore David Davidson" Nat. Rec. I A 1911/2373/57/133, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁶ "Samuel Granros", Nat. Rec. I A 1922/20/1/2151/69/69; an interview with Jenny Ruohonen in Auckland 1975 by Saara St. Martin; "Ojala family History" by the Salvation Army Brg. Owen L. Ojala, Palmerston North; letters from Iisakki Apola to Mr. Karhula, May 10, 1936 and July 6, 1936 (The collection of Urpo Kokkonen, TYYH/s/X/IV).

- ⁷ An interview with Jenny Ruohonen in Auckland 1975 by Saara St. Martin; "Frans Arthur Ruohonen", Nat. Rec. I A 1934/158/145/83/123.
- ⁸ "Konsta Ojala", Nat. Rec. I A 1911/117/63/57/146 and I A 1911/3294, N.A., Wellington; "Ojala Family History" by the Salvation Army Brg. Owen L. Ojala, Palmerston North; an interview with Owen L. Ojala, Dec. 8, 1991, in Palmerston North, SI, Turku; AMINOFF 1988, p. 321.
- ⁹ "Arvo Alexander Storm", Nat. Rec. I A 1919/20/1/1277/63/78; an interview with Arvo Storm in 1975 by Saara St. Martin; an interview with Graham Storm, SI, Turku; an article in *Suomi*, No.10/1955.
- ¹⁰ "Bertel Michel Lofquist", Nat. Rec. I A 1933/158/39/82, N.A., Wellington; a letter from Saara St. Martin on Dec. 1, 1993, SI, Turku; an interview with Bertel Löfqvist, Oct. 22, 1988, Auckland, made by Saara St. Martin, SI, Turku.
- ¹¹ "Peter Groos", Nat. Rec. I A 1919/20/1/164/64/65, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹² "Alice Ingeborg Wik", Nat. Rec. I A 1937/158/57/85/85, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹³ An answer of Alli Niskanen to a questionnaire in 1992, SI, Turku; "Lauri Niskanen", Register of Deaths, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; an interview with Alli Niskanen in Auckland, Sept. 22, 1988, made by Saara St. Martin, SI, Turku.
- ¹⁴ "Oscar Hill", Nat. Rec. I A 1948/115/2456/91/413, N.A., Wellington; "Oscar Hill", Register of Deaths, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt.
- ¹⁵ "John Henry Hapala", Nat. Rec. I A 1921/20/1/1904/68/80, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹⁶ "Anders Wilhelm Holmberg", Nat. Rec. I A 1946/115/1380/88/, N.A., Wellington; Munsala Parish Church Records.
- ¹⁷ "Matt Alarik Holm", Nat. Rec. I A 1926/20/1/1458/73/148, N.A., Wellington; an interview with Johannes Holm, son of Matt Alarik Holm, Aug. 10, 1991, and Jan. 26, 1992, Pukekohe, SI, Turku; *Fem grenar på Knuts Träd*. En släktutredning uppgjord av Axel Backlund och Nils Björklund. Ytterjeppo, Nykarleby och Helsingfors 1988.
- ¹⁸ An interview with Johannes Holm, son of Matt Alarik Holm, Aug. 10, 1991, Pukekohe, SI, Turku; *Fem grenar på Knuts Träd*. En släktutredning uppgjord av Axel Backlund och Nils Björklund. Ytterjeppo, Nykarleby och Helsingfors 1988.
- ¹⁹ Peter Newton, *Big Country of the South; North of the Rangitata*, A. H. & A. W. Reed, Wellington, Sydney, London 1973, p. 44.
- ²⁰ "Jakob Leander Erikson", Nat. Rec. I A 1938/115/180/85/267, N.A., Wellington; "Jakob Gunnar Eriksson", Register of Deaths, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; an interview with Alice Dugy, daughter of Jakob Leander Erikson, Waiuku, Jan. 26, 1992, SI, Turku.
- ²¹ "Anton Herman Fohrström", Nat. Rec. I A 1908/20/2/214/53/10, N.A., Wellington; a letter from Carole Lindsay, Oct. 18, 1991, Tauranga, SI, Turku.
- ²² "Johannes Yern", Nat. Rec. I A 1911/1319/56/32, N.A., Wellington; a letter from Mrs. E. J. Waldron, daughter of Johanes Yern, May 27, 1992 Whangarei, SI, Turku.

- ²³ An interview with Rakel Hancock, Oct. 30, 1988, Auckland, made by Saara St. Martin, SI, Turku.
- ²⁴ "Oscar Porola", Nat. Rec. I A 1938/115/212/85/441, N.A., Wellington.
- ²⁵ "Gustav Alexander Hermanson", Nat. Rec. I A 1927/20/1/3685/73/224, N.A., Wellington; an interview with Hilda Sofia Sundell, May 6, 1972, in Opotiki, SI, Turku; interviews with Elvira Sundell, daughter of Edvard Sundell, and Harry Hermansson, son of Gustav Hermansson, Aug. 12, 1991, and Dec. 22–23, 1991, in Opotiki, SI, Turku.
- ²⁶ "Anders Wilhelm Rutas", Nat. Rec. I A 1939/115/780/86/35, N.A., Wellington.
- ²⁷ "August Sundvik", Nat. Rec. I A 1935/158/42/83/114, N.A., Wellington.
- ²⁸ "Otto Rock", Nat. Rec. I A 1920/20/1/955/65/68, N.A., Wellington; an interview with Fred Rock, son of Otto Rock, Dec. 20, 1991, in Gisborne, SI, Turku.
- ²⁹ Letter from Sven-Erik Nylund, a nephew of Harry Nylund, to Norma Rock Feb. 25, 1991, SI, Turku; letter from Sonja HowChow to Sven-Erik Nylund, SI, Turku; an article by Sven-Erik Nylund in *Arbetarbladet*, 1987.
- ³⁰ Frans Rock's journey to New Zealand in 1911, and the time spent there, are recorded in a diary, of which a microfilm copy is deposited at the Institute of Migration (SI roll 8); KOIVUKANGAS 1986, p. 255.
- ³¹ "John Edwin Thomson", Nat. Rec. I A 1937/ 115/315/85/153, N.A., Wellington; Certificate of Marriage, May 19, 1917, Gisborne, Register of Marriages, District of Gisborne, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; an article by Saara St. Martin of Mr. and Mrs. Thomson in *Suomi*, March 4, 1981; "Uuden-Seelannin suomalaisvanhuksia tapaamassa", a biography by Saara St. Martin based on an interview of Mr. and Mrs. Thomson, Nov. 25, 1974.
- ³² Letter from Al Edwin Kinnunen, son of Eino Kinnunen, Feb. 9, 1992, Ngongotata, SI, Turku.
Fax from Neil M. Anderson, Rotorua, July 7, 1995.
- ³³ "Elias Kytölä", Nat. Rec. I A 1921/117/49/68/160, N.A., Wellington; information from Sonja HowChow, daughter of Elias Kytölä, Dec. 20, 1991, Gisborne.
- ³⁴ "Charles Magnus Henrikson", Nat. Rec. I A 1905/2737/45/138, N.A., Wellington; Certificate of Discharge of Karl Magnus Henriksson, Port Pirie, Australia 1891; letter from Joy Milmine, a descendant of Karl Magnus Henriksson, Jan. 8, 1991, Hamilton, SI, Turku.
- ³⁵ Letter of Joy Milmine, Jan. 8, 1991 Hamilton; a passport of Johan Henriksson; a passengers Contract Ticket for s/s *Austral*, Aug. 13, 1901.
- ³⁶ "Anders Neilson", Nat. Rec. I A 1933/158/18/82/331, N.A., Wellington.
- ³⁷ "Frank Evert Carlson", Nat. Rec. IA 1931/20/1/4538/82/111, N.A., Wellington.
- ³⁸ An article in a Newcastle newspaper given by Mrs. Helena Henderson.
- ³⁹ "Uno Thure Gideon Widerstrom", Nat. Rec. I A 1887/2647/24/7, N.A., Wellington; letter from Helena Henderson, daughter of Uno Widerström, Nov. 24, 1991, Greenmeadows, SI, Turku; an interview with Helena Henderson in Napier, Dec. 17, 1991, SI, Turku; obituary of Uno Widerström in 1937 from

- Helena Henderson; M. D. N. CAMPBELL, *Story of Napier 1874–1974*, Napier 1975, p. 226.
- ⁴⁰ "Otto Alexander Molander", Nat. Rec. I A 1938/115/304/8/371, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁴¹ "Charles Peterson", Nat. Rec. I A 1936/158/6, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁴² "John Grönstrom", Nat. Rec. I A 1933/158/106/82/298, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁴³ "John Styris", Nat. Rec. I A 1899/117/171/37/246, N.A., Wellington; an interview of Bernard, Raymond and Aureen Styris, children of Johannes Styris, Jan. 25, 1992, in Hamilton, SI, Turku; letter from Bernard Styris, Dec. 13, 1992, Hamilton, SI, Turku.
- ⁴⁴ "Johan Roy", Nat. Rec. I A 1893/4049/31/37, N.A., Wellington; an interview with Don Roy, grandson of Johan Roy, Sept. 16, 1991, in Wellington, SI, Turku; an interview with Don Roy and Ina Wilson, daughter of Johan Roy, Sept. 29, 1991, in Mangatainoka, SI, Turku; letter from Don Roy 1993, SI, Turku; Maalahti Parish Church Records; Certification of Death of Johan Roy in Hokitika, Sept. 16, 1941, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; Henry ANGELINI, *Mangatainoka Memories*, s.a. (about 1980), pp. 133–138.
- ⁴⁵ Burr, Val, *Mosquitoes and sawdust: a history of Scandinavians in early Palmerston North and surrounding districts*, Skandia II, pp. 129–130.
- ⁴⁶ Burr, Val, A letter, Palmerston North, April 26, 1995, to Olavi Koivukangas, SI, Turku.
- ⁴⁷ "Alexander Aaltonen", Nat. Rec. I A 1923/20/1/2392/70/185, N.A., Wellington; an interview with Roy and Leo Aaltonen, sons of Alexander Aaltonen, Dec. 17, 1991, in Napier, SI, Turku.
- ⁴⁸ Interview by phone with Mrs. Doris Mary McGruer, Jan. 17, 1992, Wellington; letter from Blenheim, June 22, 1994, from Sharon Lee Mason, daughter of Ronald Wass.
- ⁴⁹ "Charles Merilä", Nat. Rec. I A 1920/20/1/1664/66/2, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁵⁰ "Gristof Pederson", Nat. Rec. I A 1926/20/1/3232/78/153, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁵¹ "Kustaa Wilhelm Kanerva", Nat. Rec. I A 1926/115/317/78/100, N.A., Wellington; information from Iisakki Apola (The collection of Urpo Kokkonen, TYYH/s/X/IV); Ruben F. Luotolahti, *Kuunarilaiva "Mozartin" matkassa maapallon ympäri*, Turku 1982, p. 52; letter from Tuula Kanerva, June 16, 1994.
- ⁵² "Iisakki Malakias Apola", Nat. Rec. I A 1937/158/108 and I A 1937/115/1512/85/127, N.A., Wellington; letters from Iisakki Apola to Mr. Karhula from Wellington, May 8, 1937, and July 6, 1936 (The collection of Urpo Kokkonen, TYYH/s/X/IV); an article in *Suomi*, Dec. 4, 1939.
- ⁵³ "Matias William Jonson", Nat. Rec. I A 1893/2716/31/207, N.A., Wellington; letter from Joan Rosier-Jones, grand-daughter of Matias Jonson, Sept. 1, 1991, Auckland, SI, Turku; an interview with Joan Rosier-Jones, Aug. 9, 1991, SI, Turku; Register of Marriage, District of Wellington, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; Register of Deaths, Wellington, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt; an article about Jessie Rosier and her daughter Anne Boutery visiting Åland in the Åland, Sept. 19, 1990; R. S. Fletcher, *The Construction of the Main*

Trunk Railway, Auckland 1978; Joan Rosier-Jones, *Voyagers*, Hodder & Stoughton 1987.

⁵⁴ Joan Rosier-Jones, a letter on Jan. 10, 1995, to Olavi Koivukangas, SI, Turku.

Chapter VII: Fishermen on Stewart Island

¹ A. H. Reed, *Farthest South*, Wellington 1953, chapter "Stewart Island", pp. 99–105; and Gertrude Dempsey, *The Little World of Stewart Island*, Wellington 1964, and by the same Author, *The Spell of Stewart Island*, Wellington 1967; and Sheila Natusch, *Brother Wohlers*, Christchurch 1969; and Basil Howard, *Rakiura; A History of Stewart Island New Zealand*, Dunedin 1974 (1st 1940); and Olga Sansom, *In the Grip of an Island; Early Stewart Island History*, Invercargill 1982.

² E. R. Martin, *Marine Department Centennial History 1866–1966*, Wellington 1969, p. 118.

³ Olga Sansom, *The Stewart Islanders*, Wellington 1970, p. 147.

⁴ Don Grady, *Sealers and Whalers in New Zealand Waters*, Auckland 1986, pp. 242, 256; and DEMPSEY 1967, pp. 41–42.

⁵ Roy Traill, "Recollections of Traill Family of Stewart Is.", *The Southland Times*, Dec. 26, 1970.

⁶ SANSOM 1982, p. 21.

⁷ A telephone interview with Mrs. Henrietta Tozer, Timaru, from Invercargill, Jan. 12, 1992.

⁸ DEMPSEY 1967, p. 59.

⁹ The interview of Henrietta Tozer, Jan. 12, 1992, and George H. Wäst on the visit to the grave of Abraham Wäst on Stewart Island on Jan. 12, 1992.

¹⁰ DEMPSEY 1967, p. 26; NATUSCH 1969, pp. 95, 103, 205.

¹¹ A letter from Ruth Waddell to George Wäst, copy SI, Turku.

¹² Sheila Natusch, *On the Edge of the Bush*, Invercargill 1976, p. 72.

¹³ The *Whakapapa* of Jane Elizabeth Wäst, née Maraetaia, the Wäst Family Records, Invercargill. The Maori language text was kindly translated by Mrs. Liisa Tate-Manning, Dunedin.

¹⁴ Letter from John Tolson, Matoura, June 22, 1992, SI, Turku.

¹⁵ SANSOM, 1970, p. 179

¹⁶ DEMPSEY 1967, p. 123.

¹⁷ "Tolosen Lance", Nat. Rec. I A 20/1/1077, N.A., Wellington.

¹⁸ Letter from John Tolson, Mataura, June 22, 1992, SI, Turku.

Chapter VIII: Gabriel Johanson, a Shipwrecked Settler, Chatham Island

- ¹ Rosaline Redwood, *Forgotten Islands of the South Pacific; The Story of New Zealand's Southern Islands*, Wellington 1950, chapters XII–XIV.
- ² Fiona Holmes, *Chatham Islands Rekohu 1791–1884*, Christchurch 1984, p. 36.
- ³ HOLMES 1984, p. 135.
- ⁴ REDWOOD 1950, p. 98.
- ⁵ Copy of Register of Marriage by Registrar, Marriage in the District of Chatham Islands, 3635, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt.
- ⁶ According to a letter from Patrick Johanson, a grandson of Gabriel Johanson, Auckland, Jan. 9, 1992.
- ⁷ "Gabriel Johanson", Nat. Rec. I A 1 1907/408, N.A. Wellington.
- ⁸ A letter from Patrick Johanson, Auckland, Oct. 6, 1991.

Chapter IX: The "Pamir" – A Prize of War 1941–49

- ¹ Sydney D. Waters, *Pamir; The Story of a Sailing Ship*, Wellington 1949; and Jack Churchouse, *The Pamir Under the New Zealand Ensign*, Wellington 1978.
- ² Georg Kähre, *Under Gustaf Ericksons flagga (Under Gustaf Erickson's Flag)*, Mariehamn 1948; and by the same Author, *The Last Tall Ships; Gustaf Erickson and the Åland Sailing Fleets 1872–1947*, London 1978.
- ³ WATERS 1949, pp. 21–23; and CHURCHOUSE 1978, pp. 11–13.
- ⁴ Mikko Uola, *Suomi ja Etelä-Afrikka (Finland and South Africa)*, Tampere 1974, p. 62.
- ⁵ The basic information of this section comes from the file "Finnish Barque 'Pamir'", at the National Archives, Wellington, AAAR J 1941/50/1527, henceforth as the "Pamir File, N.A., Wellington". See also the List of the Crew of the *Pamir*, Wellington Harbour Board Maritime Museum.
- ⁶ CHURCHOUSE 1978, p. 12.
- ⁷ Prime Minister's Office, Aug. 22, 1941, Memorandum for The Hon. Attorney General, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁸ Minister of Justice, Order Imposing Special Restriction on Alien, Sept. 26, 1941, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ⁹ J. L. Arcus, Wellington, Oct. 6, 1941, to the Under-Secretary of Justice, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹⁰ The Under-Secretary, Department of Justice, Dec. 18, 1941, a Memorandum for the Minister, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹¹ *Ibid.*
- ¹² *Ibid.*
- ¹³ Managing Secretary, Waipawa Hospital Board, Waipukurau, March 20, 1942, to

- the Under-Secretary, Department of Justice, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹⁴ The Under-Secretary, Department of Justice, March 26, 1942, to the Managing Secretary, Waipawa Hospital Board, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹⁵ The Under-Secretary, Department of Justice, July 16, 1942, to the Minister in Charge of Aliens, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹⁶ The Under-Secretary, Department of Justice, Sept. 10, 1943, to the Minister in Charge of Aliens, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹⁷ The Under-Secretary, Department of Justice, Sept. 29, 1943, to the Minister, Hon. W. Perry, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹⁸ Commissioner Police, Wellington, April 17, 1945, to the Minister in Charge of Aliens, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ¹⁹ CHURCHHOUSE 1978, p. 13.
- ²⁰ Aliens Appeal Tribunal, Aug. 24, 1942, to the Minister of Justice, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ²¹ *Ibid.*
- ²² Aliens Appeal Tribunal, Sept. 3, 1942, to the Minister of Justice, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ²³ Aliens Appeal Tribunal, Sept. 21, 1942, to the Minister of Justice, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ²⁴ *Ibid.*
- ²⁵ Telephone interview of Svend E. Andersen, Wellington, Dec. 12, 1991; and "De slog sig ned i Landet med den lange hvide Sky (They settled in the Land of the Long White Cloud)", *Lolland-Falsters Folketidende*, March 10, 1990.
- ²⁶ Aliens Appeal Tribunal, Aug. 24, 1942, to the Minister of Justice, the *Pamir* File, N.A., Wellington.
- ²⁷ Information from Captains Murray J. Henderson and George S. Gunn, Napier, Dec. 18, 1991. Henderson and Gunn sailed in the New Zealand crews of the *Pamir* and are active members of the "New Zealand *Pamir* Association".
- ²⁸ *Lolland-Falster Folketidene*, March 10, 1990; interview of Karl Nyström, Wellington, Dec. 13, 1991, SI, Turku.
- ²⁹ *Ibid.*
- ³⁰ Interview of Karl Nyström, Wellington, Dec. 13, 1991, SI, Turku.
- ³¹ Telephone interview of Harry Jäkälä, Turku – Maarianhamina, Dec. 7, 1995.

Chapter X: Attempts to Get Finnish Timber Workers in 1949–50

- ¹ G. R. Hawke, "The Growth of the Economy", *The Oxford History of New Zealand*, Wellington 1981, pp. 374–380, 384; and SINCLAIR 1988, p. 290 and *passim*.
- ² Ruth S. J. Farmer, "International Migration", *Population of New Zealand*, Country Monograph Series, No. 12, Vol. 1, United Nations, New York 1985, p. 64.

- ³ A. R. Entrican, Director of Forestry, a Memorandum, Aug. 23, 1949, for the Director, Dept. of Labour & Employment, Immigration Division, Wellington, New Zealand Immigration Service, henceforth NZIS, Ministry of Labour, File HO 22/1/70, "Finland: Policy and General", henceforth the "Finland File".
- ⁴ A Telegram, Aug. 18, 1949, from the New Zealand High Commissioner in London, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ⁵ Employment Officer, Aug. 23, 1949, to Asst. Secretary, "Immigration – Finnish Forestry Workers", NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ⁶ Director of Employment and Controller of Customs, Oct. 10, 1949, to Rt. Hon. Minister, "Finnish Timber Workers", NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ⁷ H. L. Bockett, Director of Employment, Oct. 21, 1949, a Memorandum for the N.Z. High Commissioner for N.Z. in London, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ⁸ This appears from a Memorandum of the Director of Employment, March 13, 1950, for the Director, State Forest Service, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ⁹ H. L. Bockett, Director of Employment, a letter, June 29, 1950, to N.A. Mannio, Secretary General, Ministry of Social Affairs for Finland, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ¹⁰ Niilo A. Mannio, July 6, 1950, to Mr. H. L. Bockett, Director of Employment in New Zealand c/o High Commissioner for New Zealand in London, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ¹¹ A telegram from H. L. Bockett, London, July 26, 1950, to Minister of Immigration, Wellington, and the answer telegram, July 27, 1950, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ¹² A. R. Entrican, Aug. 31, 1950, to the Director of Employment, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ¹³ H. L. Bockett, Sept. 13, 1950, to A. R. Entrican, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ¹⁴ A. R. Entrican, Sept. 25, 1950, to H. L. Bockett, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ¹⁵ E. Sohlberg, Counselor of the Legation of Finland in London, Oct. 3, 1950, to J. Brennan, Chief Migration Officer, N.Z. Government Office, London, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ¹⁶ Kauno Kleemola, Minister of Communications and Public Works, Sept. 19, 1950, to the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, Archives of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, Helsinki, "Suomalaista metsätyövoimaa Uuteen Seelantiin", UM 36, Kf. Uusi Seelanti.
- ¹⁷ H. L. Bockett, Oct. 17, 1950, to the Director of Forestry, NZIS, the "Finland File".
- ¹⁸ K. W. Thomson, "The Dutch", *Immigrants in New Zealand*, ed. K. W. Thomson and A. D. Trlin, Palmerston North 1970, p. 156; and Veronique Vervoort, "From the Netherlands to New Zealand; An Essay on Migration", M.A. Thesis, Victoria University, Wellington 1983, p. 51.
- ¹⁹ D. L. Chapple, *Tokoroa; Creating a Community*, Auckland 1976, p. 11.; Kenneth W. Moore, *Kawerau; Its History and Background*, Kawerau 1991, p. 27.
- ²⁰ Elinor Barr, letters Thunder Bay, Canada, April 2, 1991, and Nov. 16, 1991, SI,

Turku. These Canadian-Finnish loggers to New Zealand were not found. According to Mrs. Barr some are already dead, in a resthome, or their whereabouts is not known.

- ²¹ "Spent nine years on Orchard in Paraguay", *Tasman Logbook*, June 1963, p. 7; and The minutes of the Kawerau Finnish Club, July 25, 1961.
- ²² Register of persons granted New Zealand citizenship 1948–81, Department of Internal Affairs, Wellington.

Chapter XI: Pioneers of the Pulp and Paper Industry

- ¹ The interview of Mrs. Berta Kivi, Auckland, Aug. 8, 1991, and the material of Armas Kivi, SI, Turku.
- ² *The March of Pine*, June 1955, Vol. 4, p. 22; letter from Tuula Kanerva to Olavi Koivukangas, Espoo, March 13, 1994, SI, Turku.
- ³ Doline Lory, *Early Tokoroa*, Rotorua 1977; and *Tokoroa; New Zealand*, a publication of Tokoroa Business and Commercial Expansion Trust, Hamilton 1988.
- ⁴ *The March of Pine*, Sept. 1953, Vol. 3, No. 1, p. 10.
- ⁵ A Certificate from the Church Register of Kotka, Nov. 26, 1991.
- ⁶ Brian Healey, *A Hundred Million Trees*, Auckland 1982, p. 126.
- ⁷ HEALEY 1982, pp. 127, 137–138.
- ⁸ The interview of Mrs. Hilja Lajunen, Tokoroa, Oct. 9, 1991, SI, Turku. In addition to the labour force Christiansen had bought machinery from Finland worth 100 million mark. Seppo Simonen, "Puunjalostusta Uudessa Seelannissa Suomen avulla (Processing of wood in New Zealand with the help of Finland)", *Yhteishyvä*, 58/1956.
- ⁹ HEALEY 1982, p. 139.
- ¹⁰ *The March of Pine*, Sept. 1953, Vol. 3, No. 1, p. 2; and "Jerm Christiansen" file, New Zealand Immigration Service, NZIS, Wellington.
- ¹¹ *The March of Pine*, March 1954, Vol. 3, No. 3, pp. 2–4; and HEALEY 1982, p. 139.
- ¹² HEALEY 1982, pp. 127, 145, 182, 191, 208; and CHAPPLE 1976, p. 10.

Chapter XII: From the Kymi Valley to the Volcanic Plateau – Tokoroa 1953

- ¹ CHAPPLE 1976, p. 10.
- ² A copy of an advertisement in a Finnish newspaper without the name of the paper or the date. Received from Mrs. Hilja Lajunen, Tokoroa.
- ³ The immigration files at the Archives of the New Zealand Immigration Service, NZIS, Wellington.

- ⁴ A diary of Matti Parkkali May 5 – June 22, 1953, in the possession of son Jussi Parkkali, Auckland.
- ⁵ Kalevi Reinikkala, Tokoroa, a comment to the manuscript, 1995, SI, Turku.
- ⁶ Interview of Mrs. Hilja Lajunen, Tokoroa, Oct. 9, 1991, SI, Turku.
- ⁷ *The March of Pine*, Sept. 1953, Vol.3, No. 1, pp. 15–16.
- ⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 3.
- ⁹ *The March of Pine*, June 1955, Vol. 4, No. 4, p. 2.
- ¹⁰ Re-Entry Permits, Juusela Family, File 102834, Immigration Files, NZIS, Wellington.
- ¹¹ "Kaarle Juusela", NZIS, Wellington; and *The March of Pine*, June 1955, Vol. 4, No. 4, p. 23.
- ¹² *The March of Pine*, March 1954, Vol. 3, No. 3, p. 23.
- ¹³ *The March of Pine*, Dec. 1954, Vol. 4, No. 2, p. 24.
- ¹⁴ *The March of Pine*, September 1955, Vol. 5, No. 1, p. 24.
- ¹⁵ A memorandum of the meeting with about 15 Tokoroa Finns on May 5, 1972, SI, Turku; and the interview of Seija Spear, née Räikkönen, Tokoroa, Jan. 25, 1992.
- ¹⁶ HEALEY 1982, p. 143.
- ¹⁷ File No 178267, NZIS, Wellington. There is no date in the letter, but obviously it was written about 1960.
- ¹⁸ The Minutes of the Tokoroa Finnish Club, deposited in the Archives of the Institute of Migration, Turku, Finland.
- ¹⁹ CHAPPLE 1976, p. 143.
- ²⁰ A good example of the role of an ethnic association to a small Finnish community is the story of the "Hermit Society" and its handwritten journal the "Orphan" at Nambour, near Brisbane, in 1902–04. KOIVUKANGAS 1986, pp. 302–308.
- ²¹ The list of the Finns employed by the New Zealand Forest Products Ltd, Kinleith, SI, Turku.

Chapter XIII: Kawerau – the Finnish Stronghold

- ¹ Kenneth A. Moore, *Kawerau; Its History and Background*, Kawerau 1991, pp. 24–27. The Kaingaroa logging Company and some Finns coming from Canada were discussed earlier in Chapter X.
- ² MOORE 1991, pp. 6–7.
- ³ *Ibid.*, p. 37; and about Pekka Vakomies See Insinöörimatrikkeli.
- ⁴ MOORE 1991, p. 81.
- ⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 83–84.
- ⁶ *Ibid.*, pp. 47–48.
- ⁷ A memorial description by Mrs. Aune Elizabeth Karjalainen, published in MOORE 1991, pp. 164–165. Of the long journey there is a diary by Mr. Toivo

- Nurkka, now in the possession of a son, Osmo Nurkka, Kawerau, a photocopy, SI, Turku.
- ⁸ Compiled from the personal immigration files, NZIS, Wellington.
 - ⁹ The *Rotorua Post*, March 1, 1955.
 - ¹⁰ The diary of Toivo Nurkka; and an anniversary article by Pekka Paavonperä, *Whakatane Beacon*, May 21, 1974. Pekka Paavonperä, a future journalist, was a baby of a fortnight when he left Finland with the group.
 - ¹¹ MOORE 1991, pp. 140–141.
 - ¹² The *Rotorua Post*, Nov. 9, 1955, on article about the Rev. Heikki Castrén's visit in Kawerau.
 - ¹³ The article cit. by Pekka Paavonperä, May 21, 1974.
 - ¹⁴ "Tough times in early Kawerau", The *Whakatane Beacon*, April 13, 1983, when Superintendent Kaarlo Viitakangas retired.
 - ¹⁵ Immigration Files, NZIS; Wellington.
 - ¹⁶ MOORE 1991, pp. 87,93.
 - ¹⁷ An interview with the Arponen family, *The Daily Post*, June 9, 1962.
 - ¹⁸ Immigration Files, NZIS, Wellington.
 - ¹⁹ A. Marshall, Tasman Pulp and Paper Company Ltd, Manager of Personnel Department, Oct. 29, 1958, to the Secretary of Labour, Immigration Division, File 136818, NZIS, Wellington.
 - ²⁰ Immigration Files, NZIS, Wellington.
 - ²¹ The *Tradewind*, March 1982.
 - ²² The interview of the Kawerau Finns, May 6, 1972.
 - ²³ The diary of Toivo Nurkka; and a manuscript of Elsa Kokko, Oct. 16, 1979; and Paavonperä, *art. cit.*, May 21, 1874; and the interview of the Kawerau Finns, May 6, 1972.
 - ²⁴ Elsa Kokko, a copy of a writing, n.d., sent to Mr. Olin, Elsa Kokko's papers, SI, Turku.
 - ²⁵ The history of the Lutheran Church in New Zealand will be written in the near future according to the President of the Lutheran Church of New Zealand, Rev. Rodney Beh, who served also the Kawerau Lutheran congregation in the early 1980's. See an article by Robert J. Wiebush in the *New Zealand Lutheran*, October 1982.
 - ²⁶ Reminiscences of Mrs. Elsa Kokko about the history of the Kawerau Lutheran congregation, Oct. 19, 1982, published in the *Suomi Paper*, Dec. 6, 1984, Australia.
 - ²⁷ *The Rotorua Post*, Nov. 9, 1955.
 - ²⁸ Reminiscences of Elsa Kokko, Oct. 19, 1982.
 - ²⁹ *Ibid.*
 - ³⁰ Interview of Mrs. Aune Karjalainen, Dec. 1991; and the lists of the children attending the Sunday School, copies SI, Turku.
 - ³¹ Reminiscences of Elsa Kokko, Oct. 19, 1982.
 - ³² Interview of Rodney Beh, President of the Lutheran Church of New Zealand,

- 1991; and a letter from the Rev. L. G. Steike, President of the Lutheran Church of Australia. New Zealand is a part of the Lutheran Church of Australia.
- ³³ A newspaper cut Aug. 12, 1970, probably in the *Rotorua Post*, received from Mrs. Elsa Kokko; and "Suomalaisten siirtolaisuus Uudessa Seelannissa ja erikoisemmin Kaweraussa (Finnish immigrants in N.Z. and especially in Kawerau)", a report to Olavi Koivukangas's enquiry, accepted in the General Meeting on April 28, 1970.
- ³⁴ The Minutes of the Kawerau Finnish Club, abbreviated KFC, March 3, 1961. The original Minutes have recently been deposited to the Archives of the Institute of Migration, Turku, Finland.
- ³⁵ Interview of Mrs. Elsa Kokko, Kawerau, Dec. 27, 1991.
- ³⁶ The Minutes of the KFC, June 5, 1961, and a local newspaper cutting attached to the Minutes.
- ³⁷ The *Tasman Logbook*, July 1961.
- ³⁸ This whole section is based on the Minutes, General and Committee Meetings, of the KFC, SI, Turku.
- ³⁹ Sinikka Puosi, "Pienten siirtolaisryhmien suomalaisuuden säilyminen (The maintenance of the Finnishness of the small migrant groups)", *Siirtolaisuus – Migration*, No. 3, 1985, p. 5.
- ⁴⁰ The *Whakatane Beacon*, Dec. 4, 1987.

Chapter XIV: Women in the Main Role – Finns to New Zealand in Recent Decades

- ¹ Questionnaire to the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland in January 1992, SI, Turku.
- ² *Ibid.*
- ³ An interview with Hellevi Walrond, Jan. 8, 1992, in Dunedin, SI, Turku.
- ⁴ Questionnaire to the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland in January, 1992: Tellervo van Oorde, SI, Turku.
- ⁵ Questionnaire to the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland in January 1992: Tytti Spencer, SI, Turku.
- ⁶ Questionnaire to the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland in January, 1992: Saara St. Martin, SI, Turku.
- ⁷ An interview with Hellevi Walrond, Jan. 8, 1992, in Dunedin, SI, Turku; an interview with Liisa Tate-Manning, Jan. 8 & 10, 1992, in Dunedin, SI, Turku.
- ⁸ An interview with Garam family, Jan. 18, 1992, in Wellington, SI, Turku.
- ⁹ Questionnaire to the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland in January, 1992, SI, Turku.
- ¹⁰ Minutes of Inaugural Meeting of Suomi – Uusi-Seelanti Seura (Finland – New Zealand Society), Oct. 11, 1977, in Auckland.

- ¹¹ Minutes of Suomi – Uusi-Seelanti Seura (Finland – New Zealand Society); an interview with Arthur Lydiard, Jan. 27, 1992 in Auckland, SI, Turku.
- ¹² Minutes of the Annual General Meeting of the Finnish Society, June 24, 1984, in Auckland.
- ¹³ Interviews with the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland, made by Sinikka Puosi in 1985, SI, 22/85, Turku.
- ¹⁴ Articles by Saara St. Martin in *Finlandia News*, Jan. 24, 1992, and Aug. 4, 1995; personal information from Jussi Parkkali in 1994.
- ¹⁵ Personal information from Jussi Parkkali, 1994.
- ¹⁶ An interview with Hellevi Walrond, Jan. 8, 1992, in Dunedin, SI, Turku; an interview with Arja Prasad, Jan. 18, 1992, in Wellington, SI; Turku.
- ¹⁷ An interview with Ari Hallenberg, Jan. 30, 1992, in Auckland, SI, Turku.
- ¹⁸ An interview with Liisa Tate-Manning, Jan. 8 & 10, 1992, in Dunedin, SI, Turku.
- ¹⁹ Questionnaire to the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland in January, 1992, SI, Turku.

Chapter XV: General Review

- ¹ KOIVUKANGAS, 1986, p. 272.
- ² Ministry of Transport, ... Certificates of Master Mariners, Mates etc. 1874–1938, information compiled by Sten Aminoff, 1976.
- ³ Naturalization Records 1878–1948, Wellington.
- ⁴ Erik Olssen, "Towards a New Society" pp. 262–263 in *The Oxford History of New Zealand*, ed. by W. H. Oliver and B. R. Williams, Wellington, 1981.
- ⁵ Statistics of New Zealand, 1920 – Law and Crime.
- ⁶ OLSEN 1981, p. 263, Statistics of New Zealand 1911–1920 – Law and Crime.
- ⁷ Reino Kero, "A Knife-wielding Terror, a Drunkard and a Communist. The Finnish American Immigrant Minority in US Criminal Statistics, *The Turku Historical Archives* 48, Turku 1994.
- ⁸ Statistics of New Zealand 1919, 1920, Census of New Zealand 1921.

Chapter XVI: Conclusion and International Perspectives

- ¹ Ragnar Numelin, *The wandering spirit. A study of human migration*. Copenhagen 1936.
- ² E. G. Ravenstein, "The Laws of Migration", *Journal of the Statistical Society*, 48, June 1885.
- ³ Henry Pratt Fairchild, *Immigration*, New York 1925.

- ⁴ William Petersen, "A General Typology of Migration", *American Sociological Review*, 23, 1958.
- ⁵ Everett S. Lee, "A Theory of Migration, *Migration*, ed. J. A. Jackson, Cambridge 1969.
- ⁶ J. S. MacDonald and L.D. MacDonald, "Chain Migration, Ethnic Neighbourhood Formation and Social Networks", *Milbank Memorial Fund Quarterly*, XLII, 1964.
- ⁷ A good account of the Continental European immigration to New Zealand is R. A. Lochore, *From Europe to New Zealand*, Wellington 1951. See also K. W. J. McCracken, "New Zealand's Foreign Born Population 1840-1911", M. A. Thesis, University of Otago 1969, and K. W. Thomson and A. D. Trlin, *Immigrants in New Zealand*, Palmerston North 1970.
- ⁸ I. H. Burnley, "German Immigration and Settlement in New Zealand", *New Zealand Geographer*, Vol. 29, April 1973, No. 1.
- ⁹ J. Lyng, *The Scandinavians in Australia, New Zealand and the Western Pacific*, Melbourne 1939; Sten Aminoff, *Svenskarna i Nya Zealand* (The Swedes in New Zealand), Växjö 1988. A good general review of the Scandinavians in New Zealand is Olavi Koivukangas, "The Longest Voyage of the Vikings. New Zealand - a Remote Alternative to America" in *On Distant Shores*, ed. Birgit Flemming Larsen, Henning Bender and Karen Veien, Aalborg 1993.
- ¹⁰ Andrew Trlin, *Now Respected Once Despised; Yugoslavs in New Zealand*, Palmerston North 1979.
- ¹¹ I. H. Burnley, "The Greek, Italian and Polish Communities in New Zealand", Ph.D. Thesis University of Wellington 1969. See also Veronique J. Vervoort, "From the Netherlands to New Zealand; An Essay in Migration. Victoria University of Wellington 1983.
- ¹² BURNLEY 1969, pp. 52-53.
- ¹³ MCCRACKEN 1969, p. 138.
- ¹⁴ KOIVUKANGAS 1986.

Bibliography

I ARCHIVAL AND STATISTICAL SOURCES

1. Public Archives in New Zealand

Census of New Zealand, 1921–1986.

National Archives AAAR J 1941/50/1527, Wellington.

Naturalization Records 1878–1948, National Archives, Wellington.

New Zealand Immigration Service, NZIS, Ministry of Labour, Wellington.

New Zealand Register of Aliens 1917, Department of Internal Affairs, National Archives, Wellington.

Registration of shipping and seamen; Certificates of Master Mariners, mates etc. 1874–1938, Ministry of Transport, Wellington.

Register of Births, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt.

Register of Marriages, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt.

Register of Deaths, Registrar General's Office, Lower Hutt.

Register of Persons Granted New Zealand Citizenship 1948–81, Department of Internal Affairs, Wellington.

Statistics of New Zealand, 1911–1920 – Law and Crime.

Wellington Harbour Board Maritime Museum : List of the Crew on the Pamir.

2. Archives in Australia

Australian Naturalization Records 1911/19080, Commonwealth Archives, Canberra.

3. Archives in Finland

A. Kotka Parish Church Records.

B. Maalahti Parish Church Records.

C. Munsala Parish Church Records.

D. Saarijärvi Parish Church Records.

E. Vaasa Parish Church Records.

F. Åbo Akademi Library, Turku

Finnish Steamship Company Records, Passengerlists.

G. Private Archives.

Diary of Matti Parkkali 5.5.–22.6.1953, Jussi Parkkali, Auckland.

Erikson Family Records c/o John Erikson.

Family Records of the descendants of Isak Blomquist, collected by Marlene and Craig Brankin, Christchurch.

Family history of Erik Soderlund, compiled by Marlene and Craig Brankin.

Familytree of the Knuts and Träsk families.

Obituary of Edward Erick Erickson 1941.

OJALA, Owen L., "Ojala Family History", Palmerston North.

Sandos Familytree by Wendy Cockburn 1986.

SOMERO, A., Sandåsin perheen historia Munsalassa 1726–1901, Vaasa 1940.

TAYLOR, Nicholas John, "Family Background of the Scandinavian Side", A family history of Henrik Johan and Brita Sofia Blomquist and their descendants, Christchurch, copy.

The Urwin Family History, Auckland.

The Wäst Family Records, Invercargill.

H. Ministry of Defence

Archives 26/6900/88/50, Helsinki.

I. Ministry of Foreign Affairs

Helsinki, 53, Fff Auckland

J. Siirtolaisuusinstituutin arkisto (SI) (The Archives of the Institute of Migration).

Letters:

- Elinor Barr, Thunder Bay, Canada, 2.4.1991 and 16.11.1991.
- Sean G. Broshnahan (Otago Early Settlers Museum) 24.7.1992 Dunedin.
- Wendy Cockburn, Lower Hutt 25.10.1991.
- Helena Henderson, Greenmeadows 24.11.1991.
- Corinne Henriksson, 25.10.1991 and 3.12.1991.
- From Sonja HowChow to Sven-Erik Nylund.
- Patrick Johanson, Auckland 9.1.1992.
- Tuula Kanerva, Espoo 16.6.1994.
- Letter from Penelope Lawrence, New Zealand Geographic Board to Jussi Parkkali,
President of the Finnish Society of Auckland, 20.9.1990, copy.
- Al Edwin Kinnunen, Ngongotata 9.2.1992.
- Lois Kirkwood, Timaru February 1992.
- Carole Lindsay, Tauranga 18.10.1991.
- Elva Lynch, Auckland 15.2.1996.
- Joy Milmine, Hamilton 8.1.1991.
- From Mr. Nash to Hilda Lehtonen 6.4.1937.
- From Sven-Erik Nylund to Norma Rock 25.2.1991.
- Shirley Rhodes, Christchurch 1991.
- Joan Rosier-Jones, Auckland 1.9.1991.
- Don Roy, Wellington 1993.
- John Sandos, Hamilton 6.11.1991.
- Saara St. Martin, Auckland 1.12.1993.
- John Tolson, Matoura 22.6.1992.
- Ruth Waddell to George Wäst.
- Mrs. E. J. Waldron, Whangarei 27.5.1992.
- Veikko Vuorinen to Olavi Koivukangas 15.10.1981.

Other SI sources:

- Answer of Alli Niskanen to a questionnaire in 1992.
- Diary, microfilm copy, of Frans Rock's journey to New Zealand in 1911.
- Diary of Toivo Nurkka, photocopy.
- Certificate of Discharge of Karl Magnus Henriksson, Port Pirie, Australia, 1891.
- Interviews with the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland by Sinikka Puosi,
1985.

Interview with Kawerau Finns, 6.5.1972.
 Interview with Rakel Hancock, Auckland 30.10.1988, made by Saara St. Martin.
 Interview with Bertel Löfqvist, Auckland 22.10.1988, made by Saara St. Martin.
 Interview with Alli Niskanen, Auckland 22.9.1988, made by Saara St. Martin.
 Interview with Jenny Ruohonen, Auckland 1975, by Saara St. Martin.
 Interview with Arvo Storm, 1975, by Saara St. Martin.
 Interview with Graham Storm.
 List of children attending Sunday School in Kawerau.
 List of Finns employed by the New Zealand Forest Products Ltd, Kinleith.
 Material of Armas Kivi.
 Memorandum of the meeting of Tokoroa Finns 5.5.1972.
 The Minutes of the Tokoroa Finnish Club, 3.3.1961.
 Passengers Contract Ticket for the s/s Austral 13.11.1901.
 Passport of Johan Henriksson.
 Obituary of Uno Widerström in 1937 from Helena Henderson, SL.
 Questionnaire to the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland, January 1991.
 Questionnaire to the members of the Finnish Society in Auckland, January 1992.
 TAYLOR, Nicholas John, "Family Background of the Scandinavian Side", A family history of Henrik Johan and Brita Sofia Blomquist and their descendants, Christchurch, copy.
 Writing of Elsa Kokko, copy.

K. Turun yliopiston historian laitoksen arkisto (TYYH) (Research Archives for Migration History, Department of History, University of Turku).
 The Collection of Urpo Kokkonen TYYH/s/X/IV.
 Letters from Bertha Mitchell to Mr. Karhula 12.10.1936 and 21.8.1937.
 Letters from Iisakki Apola to Mr. Karhula 4.6.1936, 10.5.1936, 6.7.1937 and 8.5.1937.
 Letter from Mrs. B. Culloch to Mr. Karhula 18.10.1938.

II. INTERVIEWS IN NEW ZEALAND 1991-1992

Name	Place	Date
Aaltonen, Roy and Leo	Napier	December 1991
Andersen, Svend E.	Wellington	December 1991
Brankin, Marlene	Christchurch	January 1992
Dugy, Alice	Waiuku	January 1992

Name	Place	Date
Erikson family (descendants)	Christchurch	January 1992
Garam family	Wellington	January 1992
Gunn, George S.	Napier	December 1991
Hallenberg, Ari	Auckland	January 1992
Henderson, Helena	Napier	December 1991
Henderson, Murray J.	Napier	December 1991
Hermansson, Harry	Opotiki	December 1991
Holm, Johannes	Pukekohe	August 1991 January 1992
Karjalainen, Aune	Kawerau	December 1991
Kivi, Berta	Auckland	August 1991
Kokko, Elsa	Kawerau	December 1991
Koskela, Graeme and other descendants of John Koskela	Lyttelton	January 1991
Lajunen, Hilja	Tokoroa	October 1991
Lindquist, Francis Oscar	Kumara	January 1992
Lindquist, Susan	Dunedin	January 1992
Lydiard, Arthur	Auckland	January 1992
Nyström, Karl	Wellington	December 1991
Ojala, Owen L.	Palmerston North	December 1991
Parkkali, Jussi	Auckland	1991
Prasad, Arja	Wellington	January 1992
Rock, Fred	Gisborne	December 1991
Rosier-Jones, Joan	Auckland	August 1991
Roy, Don	Wellington	September 1991
	Mangatainoka	September 1991
Sandos, John	Hamilton	January 1992
Strathen, Elna	Christchurch	January 1992
Styris, Bernard, Raymond and Aureen	Hamilton	January 1992
Sundell, Elvira	Opotiki	August 1991
Tate-Manning, Liisa	Dunedin	January 1992
Tewian-Smith, Judith	Lyttelton	January 1992
Tozer, Henrietta	Timaru	January 1992
Wahlrond, Hellevi	Dunedin	January 1992
Wilson, Ina	Mangatainoka	September 1991
Wäst, George H.	Stewart Island	January 1992
Descendants of Urwin Francis	Auckland	January 1992

Name	Place	Date	
In Finland			
Harry Jäkälä	Maarianhamina	December 1995	by phone from Turku

III. MANUSCRIPTS

1. New Zealand

BURNLEY, Ian H., "The Greek, Italian and Polish Communities in New Zealand", Ph.D. Dissertation, Victoria University of Wellington 1969.

DAVIDSON, J. W., "The Scandinavians in New Zealand", M.A. Thesis, Department of History, Victoria University of Wellington 1936.

HENDERSON, H. A., "Dannevirke – the Founding of a Bush Settlement", M.A. Thesis, Department of History, Victoria University of Wellington, 1938.

MC CRACKEN, K. W. J., "New Zealand's Foreign Born Population 1840–1911", M.A. Thesis, University of Otago 1969.

The Minutes of Inaugural Meeting of Suomi – Uusi-Seelanti Seura (Finland – New Zealand Society), Auckland, 11.10.1977.

Minutes of Suomi – Uusi Seelanti Seura (Finland – New Zealand Society).

Minutes of the Annual General Meeting of the Finnish Society in Auckland, 24.6.1984.

ST. MARTIN, Saara, "Uuden-Seelannin suomalaisvanhuksia tapaamassa", biography based on interviews with Mr. and Mrs. Thomson 25.11.1974.

VERVOORT, Veronique J., "From the Netherlands to New Zealand; An Essay in Migration", Victoria University of Wellington 1983.

2. Other countries

PUOSI, Sinikka, "Anpassung der finnischen Migranten in Neuseeland; Die lokale Identität in einer kleinen Gemeinde", Magisterarbeit, Johann Wolfgang Goethe Universität, Frankfurt am Main 1987.

IV. NEWSPAPERS AND PERIODICALS

1. New Zealand

Christchurch Star-Sun 18.6.1958.

The Daily Post, 9.6.1962.

The March of Pine, September 1953, Vol. 3, No. 1.

The March of Pine, March 1954, Vol. 3, No. 3.

The March of Pine, December 1954, Vol. 4, No. 2.

The March of Pine, June 1955, Vol. 4.

The March of Pine, September 1955, Vol. 5, No. 1.

The New Zealand Lutheran, October 1982.

Rotorua Post, 1.3.1955.

Rotorua Post, 9.11.1955.

The Southland Times, 26.12.1970.

The Tradewind, March 1982.

Whakatane Beacon, 21.5.1974.

Whakatane Beacon, 13.4.1983.

Whakatane Beacon, 4.12.1987.

2. Australia

Finlandia News, 24.1.1992.

Finlandia News, 4.8.1995.

Suomi 4.12.1939

Suomi No. 10/1955

Suomi 4.3.1981

Suomi 6.12.1984

3. Finland

Arbetarbladet 1987.

Yhteishyvä 58/1956.

Åland 19.9.1990.

Österbottniska Posten, 8.12.1887.

4. Denmark

Lolland-Falsters Folketidende, 10.3.1990.

V. LITERATURE AND ARTICLES

AMINOFF, Sten, *Svenskarna i Nya Zeeland; Den svenska utvandringen till Nya Zeeland fram till 1940.* (Swedes in New Zealand; Swedish immigration to New Zealand until 1940.), Växjö 1988.

(A) *Return of the Freeholders of New Zealand – October 1882*, Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.

ANGELINI, Henry, *Mangatainoka Memories*, s. a., s. l.

BACKLUND, Axel – BJÖRKLUND, Nils, *Fem grenar på Knuts träd* (A genealogical study), Ytterjeppo, Nykarleby och Helsingfors 1988.

BARRAT, G. R. V., *Bellinghausen: A Visit to New Zealand, 1820*, Palmerston North 1979.

BARRATT, Glynn, *Russofobia in New Zealand 1838–1908*, Palmerston North 1981.

BEAGLEHOLE, J. C., *The Discovery of New Zealand*, 2nd ed., Wellington 1961.

BEAGLEHOLE, J. C. (ed.), *The Endeavour Journal of Joseph Banks 1768–1771*, Sydney 1963, Vol. I–II.

BEAGLEHOLE, J. C. (ed.), *The Journals of Captain James Cook on his Voyages of Discovery; The Voyage of the Endeavour 1768–1771*, Cambridge 1955.

BEGG, A. Charles – Neil C. BEGG, *James Cook and New Zealand*, Wellington 1969.

BENDER, Henning – Birgit, LARSEN, *Danish Emigration to New Zealand*, Aalborg 1990.

BORRIE, W. D., *Immigration to New Zealand 1854–1938*, Canberra 1991.

BURNLEY, I. H., "German Immigration and Settlement in New Zealand", *New Zealand Geographer*, Vol. 29, April 1973, No. 1.

BURNLEY, Ian H., "Survey of New Zealand Literature on Migration", in *Australian Immigration; A Bibliography and Digest*, No. 2, 1970, ed. Charles Price & al., Australian National University, Canberra, 1971.

BURR, Val, *Mosquitoes & sawdust: a history of Scandinavians in early Palmerston North & surrounding districts*, Skandia II.

BUTLER, Peter, *Opium and Gold*, Martinborough 1977.

CAMPBELL, M. D. N., *Story of Napier 1874–1974*, Napier 1975.

CARRICK, R. O. (compiled by) *Historical Records of New Zealand South Prior to 1840*, Dunedin MCMIII.

CHAPPLE, D. L., *Tokoroa; Creating a Community*, Auckland 1976.

CHURCHOUSE, Jack, *Leonard Robertson, the Whangaroa & La Bella*, Wellington 1982.

CHURCHOUSE, Jack, *The Pamir under the New Zealand Ensign*, Wellington 1978.

COBBE, Hugh, ed., *Cook's Voyages and Peoples of the Pacific*, London 1979.

- DEMPSEY, Gertrude, *The Little World of Stewart Island*, Wellington 1967.
- FARMER, Ruth S. J., "International Migration", *Population of New Zealand, Country Monograph Series, No. 12, Vol. 1, United Nations, New York* 1985.
- FAIRCHILD, Henry Pratt, *Immigration, New York* 1925.
- FLETCHER, R. S., *The Construction of the Main Trunk Railway, Auckland* 1978.
- GARDNER, W. J., "A Colonial Economy", *The Oxford History of New Zealand, Wellington* 1981.
- DAKIN, J. W., *Whalemen Adventurers, Sydney* 1963 (1st 1934).
- GISSELQVIST, Christian – Per TIGERBRAND (eds.), *Daniel Solander 1733–1782, naturvetenskapsman och världsomsegare. (Daniel Solander 1733–1782, a naturalist and worldaround sailor.), Piteå kommuns kulturnämnd, skrifter 1, Piteå* 1983.
- GRADY, Don, *Sealers and Whalers in New Zealand Waters, Auckland* 1986.
- GRÖNFORS, Martti, "Uuden Seelannin Suomalaiset. (Finns in New Zealand.)", *Ulkosuomalaisia. (Finns Abroad.), Kalevala Seuran Vuosikirja. (The Yearbook of the Kalevala Society.), No. 62, Helsinki* 1982.
- GUTHRIE, Brenda, *New Zealand Memories, London* 1930.
- HAWKE, G. R., "The Growth of the Economy", *The Oxford History of New Zealand, Wellington* 1981.
- HAWKESWORTH, John, *An Account of the Voyages Undertaken by the Order of his Present Majesty for Making Discoveries in the Southern Hemisphere And successively performed by Commodore Byron, Captain Carteret, Captain Wallis and Captain Cook, In the Dolphin, The Swallow and the Endeavour: Drawn up from the Journals which were kept by several Commanders, and from the Papers of Joseph Banks, Esq., LL.D in three volumes, London MDCCLX–XIII, Copy Mitchell Library, Sydney.*
- HEALY, Brian, *A Hundred Million Trees, Auckland* 1982.
- HEINZ, William F. (compiled by), "First Report of Gold in New Zealand", *Bright Fine Gold; Stories of New Zealand Goldfields, Wellington* 1974.
- HOLMES, Fiona, *Chatham Islands Rekohu 1791–1884, Christchurch* 1984.
- HOWARD, Basil, *Rakiura; A History of Stewart Island New Zealand, Dunedin* 1974 (1st 1940).
- JACOBSON, H. C., *Tales of Banks Peninsula, Akaroa* 1976 (1st 1914).
- JOPPIEN, Rudiger – Bernhard SMITH, *The Art of Captain James Cook's Voyages, Vol. One: The Voyage of the Endeavour 1768–1771, with Descriptive catalogue of all the known original drawings of people, places, artifacts and events and the original engravings associated with them, New Haven and London* 1985.
- Journal of George Vancouver, Vol. III, p. 1081?*
- KERO, Reino, "A Knife-wielding Terror, a Drunkard and a Communist. The Finnish Immigrant Minority in US Criminal Statistics, *The Turku Historical Archives* 48, Turku 1994.
- KOIVISTOINEN, Eino, *Tahiti, Porvoo* 1977.
- KOIVUKANGAS, Olavi, "Herman Dietrich Spöring; an Explorer from Turku who

- sailed with James Cook in the South-Seas, 1768–71”, *Studia Historica in Honorem Vilho Niitemaa*, Turku 1987.
- KOIVUKANGAS, Olavi, “The Longest Voyage of the Vikings. New Zealand – a Remote Alternative to America, On Distant Shores, eds. Birgit Flemming Larsen, Henning Bender and Karen Veien, Aalborg 1993.
- KOIVUKANGAS, Olavi, *Scandinavian Immigration and Settlement in Australia before World War II*, Kokkola 1972.
- KOIVUKANGAS, Olavi – John S. MARTIN, *The Scandinavians in Australia*, Melbourne 1986.
- KOIVUKANGAS, Olavi, *Sea, Gold and Sugarcane; Finns in Australia 1851–1947*, Turku 1986.
- KOSKINEN, Aarne, *Missionary Influence as Political Factor in the Pacific Islands*, Helsinki 1953.
- KÅHRE, George, *The Last Tall Ships; Gustaf Erickson and the Åland Sailing Fleets 1872–1947*, London 1978.
- KÅHRE, George, *Under Gustaf Ericksons flagga (Under Gustaf Erickson’s Flag)*, Mariehamn 1948.
- LAMB, Kaye W. (ed.), *George Vancouver; A Voyage of Discovery to the North Pacific Ocean and Round the World 1791–1795*, London 1984 (1st 1798).
- LANGDON, Robert, *Tahiti: Island of Love*, 3rd ed., Sydney 1968 (1st 1959).
- LEE, Everett S., “A Theory of Migration”, *Migration*, ed. J. A. Jackson, Cambridge 1969.
- LOCHORE, R. A., *From Europe to New Zealand; An Account of our Continental European Settlers*, Wellington 1951.
- LORY, Doline, *Early Tokoroa, Rotorua 1977*.
- LUOTOLAHTI, Ruben F., *Kuunarilaiva “Mozartin” matkassa maapallon ympäri. (Around the World on the Ship “Mozart”.)*, Turku 1982.
- LYNG, Jens, *The Scandinavians in Australia, New Zealand and the Western Pacific*, Melbourne 1939.
- LYSAGHT, A. M., *Banks Artist in the Endeavour, The Journal of H.M.S. Endeavour 1768–1771 by Lieutenant James Cook*, Genesis Publication, 1977.
- LÖYTÖNEN, Markku, “Herman Dietrich Spöring nuorempi, tuntemattoman mantereen etsijä. (H. D. Spöring Jr. an explorer of an unknown continent.)”, *Matka-arkku; suomalaisia tutkimusmatkailijoita. (A Travel Trunk; Finnish Explorers.)*, SKS, Hämeenlinna 1989.
- MACDONALD, J. S. – L. D. MACDONALD, “Chain Migration, Ethnic Neighbourhood Formation and Social Networks”, *Milbank Memorial Fund Quarterly*, XLII, 1964.
- MACKAY, Joseph Angus, *Historic Poverty Bay and the East Coast, North Island, New Zealand*, Christchurch 1982.
- MARTIN, E. R., *Marine Department Centennial History 1866–1966*, Wellington 1969.
- MAY, Philip Ross, *Hokitika; Goldfields Capital*, Christchurch 1964.

- MAY, Philip Ross, *The West Coast Gold Rushes*, Christchurch 1967.
- MCCASKILL, Murray, "The Goldrush Population of Westland", *New Zealand Geographer*, Vol. XII, April 1956, No. 1, pp. 32-50.
- MCLINTOCK, A. H. (ed.), "Gold Discoveries", *An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand*, Vol. 1, Wellington 1966.
- MCLINTOCK, A. H.(ed.), *An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand*, Vol. 2, Wellington 1966.
- MCNAB, Robert (ed.), *Historical Records of New Zealand*, Vol. I, Wellington 1908.
- MCNAB, Robert, *Historical Records of New Zealand*, Vol. II, Wellington 1914.
- MCNAB, Robert, *The Old Whaling Days; A History of Southern New Zealand from 1830 to 1840*, Auckland 1971 (1st 1913).
- MELVILLE, Herman, *Moby Dick*, New York 1962 (1st 1851).
- MELVILLE, Herman, *Omoo: A Narrative of Adventurers in the South Seas*, Evanstone and Chicago 1968 (1st 1847).
- MOORE, Kenneth W., *Kawerau; Its History and Background*, Kawerau 1991.
- MOOREHEAD, Alan, *The Fatal Impact; An Account of the Invasion of the South Pacific 1767-1840*, London 1966.
- MORRELL, W. P., *The Gold Rushes*, 2nd ed. London 1968.
- MORRELL, W. P., *A History of New Zealand Life*, Christchurch 1957.
- MORTON, Harry – Carol MORTON JOHNSTON, *The Farthest Corner; New Zealand, a Twice Discovered Land*, Auckland 1988.
- MORTON, Harry, *The Wale's Wake*, Dunedin 1982.
- MORTON, Harry, *The Wind Commands; Sailors and Sailing Ships in the Pacific*, Vancouver 1975.
- NATUSCH, Sheila, *Brother Wohlers*, Christchurch 1969.
- NATUSCH, Sheila, *On the Edge of the Bush*, Invercargill 1976.
- NEWTON, Peter, *Big Country of the South; North of the Rangitata*, A. H. & A. W. Reed, Wellington, Sydney, London 1973.
- NUMELIN, Ragnar, *The Wandering Spirit. A Study of Human Migration*. Copenhagen 1936.
- OGILVIE, Gordon, *Banks Peninsula; Cradle of Canterbury*, Wellington 1990.
- OLIVER, W. H. – WILLIAMS, B. R., *The Oxford History of New Zealand*, Wellington 1981.
- OMMANNEY, F. D., *Lost Leviathan*, London 1971.
- OWENS, J. M. R., "New Zealand before Annexation" in *The Oxford History of New Zealand*, (eds.) W. H. Oliver – B. R. Williams, Wellington 1981.
- PETERSEN, G. C., *Forest Homes; The Story of the Scandinavian Settlements in the Forty Mile Bush*, New Zealand, Wellington 1956, reprint 1966.
- PETERSEN, William, "A General Typology of Migration", *American Sociological Review*, 23, 1958.
- POLLACK, J. S., *New Zealand: Being a Narrative of Travels and Adventures during a Residence in that country between the years 1831 and 1837*, Vol. II, London M.DCCC.XXXVIII.

- PUOSI, Sinikka, Heimat als Ergebnis des menschlichen Schaffens; Das Beispiel der finnischen Einwanderer in Neuseeland", *Siirtolaisuus – Migration*, No. 4, 1987.
- PUOSI, Sinikka, Pienten siirtolaisryhmien suomalaisuuden säilyminen. (The maintenance of the Finnishness of small migrant groups.)", *Siirtolaisuus-Migration*, No. 3, 1985.
- RAMSAY, Henrik, "Purjelaivojen merimiehiä. (Seamen in the Days of Sail.)", *Valtamerten ääriiltä. (From the Ends of the Oceans.)*, Helsinki 1950.
- RAVENSTEIN, E. G., "The Laws of Migration", *Journal of the Statistical Society*, 48, June 1885.
- REDWOOD, Rosaline, *Forgotten Islands of the South Pacific; The Story of New Zealand's Southern Islands*, Wellington 1950.
- REED, A. H., *Farthest South*, Wellington 1953.
- ROSIER-JONES, Joan, *Voyagers*, Hodder & Stoughton 1987.
- RUSSEL, M., *Polynesia; A History of the South Sea Islands including New Zealand*, London MDCCLIII.
- SALMON, J. H. M., *A History of Goldmining in New Zealand*, Wellington 1963.
- SALMOND, Anne, *Two Worlds; First Meeting between the Maori and Europeans 1642–1772*, Auckland 1991.
- SANSOM, Olga, *In the Grip of an Island; Early Stewart Island History*, Invercargill 1982.
- SANSOM, Olga, *The Stewart Islanders*, Wellington 1970.
- SCOTTER, W. H., *A History of Lyttelton*, Christchurch 1976.
- SINCLAIR, Keith, *A History of New Zealand*, Auckland 1988.
- Souvenir History of Little River School Reunion*, March 12–14 1965.
- ST. MARTIN, Saara, "Tiedustelu Kaweraun ja Tokoroan suomalaisten viihtymisestä. (An enquiry of the adjustment of the Finns in Kawerau and Tokoroa.)", *Siirtolaisuus-Migration*, No. 2, 1975.
- Stories of Old New Zealand*, Auckland 1971.
- Tasman Logbook*, July 1961.
- Tasman Logbook*, June 1963.
- THOMSON, K. W., "The Dutch", *Immigrants in New Zealand*, ed. K. W. Thomson and A. D. Trlin, Palmerston North 1970.
- THOMSON, K. W. – A. D. TRLIN, *Immigrants in New Zealand*, Palmerston North 1970.
- Tokoroa; New Zealand, a Publication of Tokoroa Business and Commercial Expansion Trust*, Hamilton 1988
- TONSON, A. E., *Old Manukau*, Auckland 1966.
- TRLIN, Andrew, *Now Respected Once Despised; Yugoslavs in New Zealand*, Palmerston North 1979.
- WATERS, Sydney D., *The Story of a Sailing Ship*, Wellington 1949.

Appendix I: Finns to New Zealand before 1949

The Register is based mainly on New Zealand Naturalization Records, Register of Aliens 1917 and Death Records.

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
AAB, Jacob Charles	1870	Riika	1893	1907	Waihi Te Kaha	Cook Bushfeller	1928 -17
AALTONEN, Alexander Single -17 Married 1919 w. Lizzic Maidment, Ch: Roy, Leo and Mabel	1890	Ruoko- lahti	1913	1923	Petone	Labourer	1968
ARNIO, See ORNIO							
ABERG, Karl, Axel	1886	-	1912	-	Wellington	Watersidew.	-
ABRAHAMAS, Andrew	1868	-	1886	1899	Little R.	Farmer	-
ABRAHAMSEN, John Single -17	1849	-	1885	-	Auckland	Seaman "Talisman"	-
ABRAHAMSSON, Anders	1868	-	-	-	Canterbury	-	-
ADAMS, Karl Evert	1903	Munsala	1925	-	-	Farmer	-
ADAMSON, John Married	1851	-	-	-	Reefton	Carpenter	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ADAMSON, William	1873				Te Awa mutu	Bushman	1945
AHLGREN, Gustav, Wilh.	1885	Turku	1909	1921	Auckland Manunui Putaruru	Stewedore Millhand	1933
AHLGREN, John 1st wife Ellen Cannrug 2nd wife Jessie Abbott	1858	Uusik.	1897	1903	Henderson Taupaki New Lynn	Railw.firem. Carpenter Quarrym.	1931
AHLQUIST, Eino Julius	1895	Rauma	1912	1925	Rotorua Whangarei	Barman	-
AHLSTROM, Johan Albin	1878	-	1908	1924	Nelson (6 years in S. Afr., nat. there)	Carpenter	-
AKERLUND (Olsen) Albert Artur	1884	Taivass.	1908	1948	Wellingt.	Stewedore	-
ALBERT, (Albreht?) Emile Victor	1885	Turku	1907	1927	Oratia (came from Australia)	Fruit farm.	-
ALBRECHT, Axel Leonard	1882	Helsinki	1903	1910	Tangitiki	Gumdigger	-
ALDO, George Arthur	1883	Rauma	1903	1907	Wellington	Sailor	-
ALEXANDER, Hugo Henrik Single -17	1894	-	-	-	Waitangi	Bushfeller	-
ALIN, See Olin							

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ALM(QUIST), Paul	1884	Rauma	1909	-	Auckland	Seaman "Celtic King"	1914
ALTO, William Single -17	1890	-	1917	-	Wellington	Seaman "Kapuni"	-
ALTONE, Alexander A. E. Single	1858	Turku	1881	1902	Sydenham	Fishmonger (Christch.)	-
ANDERS, Edward Single -17	1889	-	-	-	Waitangi	Bushfeller	-
ANDERSON, Alexander Nat. in Australia	1852	Rauma	1877	-	Wellington Reefton	Coppererer	1931
ANDERSON (Hansel), Andrew Single -17	1852	Raahe	1877	1908	Auckland	Seaman (Retired porter)	1927
ANDERSON, Edward Edwin Wife Minnie, b. 1907, Ch: Neil Ludvig 1932 & Edward Paul 1935	1897	Munsala	1916	1936	Waitangi Shannon	Bushfeller Bridgecarpenter	-36?
ANDERSON, Arvid Single -17:	1878	Vaasa	1901	1908	Palm.N. Linton	Lab. Flaxcutter	-
ANDERSON, Charles John H. Wife Margaret Tracy	1830	-	1878	-	Gabriel's	Miner	1904
ANDERSON, David Wife Mep Potiti, no children, lived with the Maoris	1853	Raahe	1879	1928	Whakapara	Carpenter	1927

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ANDERSON, Edwin Single -17	1898	-	1916	-	Waitangi	Bushfeller	-
ANDERSON, Erick Edward	1872	Vaasa	1898	1902	Eketahuna	Labourer	-
ANDERSON, Erik Johan Son, Edward Edwin	1864	Muns.	1890	1911	Pigeon Bay	Labourer return to Finland 1914-15	
ANDERSON, Harry Single -17	1861	-	1916	-	Rotoroa I. Hauraki Gulf	Seaman	-
ANDERSON, Johan	1853	Gamla Karleby	-	1884 -	Dunedin	Seaman	-
ANDERSON, Johanna (Fem.) Single -17	1887	-	1913	-	Pigeon Bay	Cook	-
ANDERSON, John Single	1864	Raahe	1884	1932	Auckland	Ships Rigger	1945
ANDERSON, John	1849	-	-	-	Tokatoka	Gumgigger	1915
ANDERSON, Kurt Edv.	1909	Munsala	1930	1949	Wellingt.	-	-
ANDERSON, March Single -17	1865	-	1887	-	Paeroa	Labourer	1936
ANDERSON, O. Single -17	1867	-	1887	-	Kirikiri	Carpenter	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ANDERSON, Peter 1st. w. Lizzie, 2nd w. Miss Kelsall	1828	Helsinki	1862	1899	Maropiu Thames	Gumdigger	1916
ANDERSON, Peter	1823	-	-	-	Palmerston South	Labourer Dunedin	1883
ANDERSON, Peter Single	1859	-	1905	-	Scott Gap Otautau	Farmass. Labourer	1941
ANDERSON, (known Aron Henrickson) Peter,	1862	Helsinki	1885	1937	Blackmount	Labourer	-
ANDERSON, Valentine	1876	-	1897	-	Te Kopuru	Seaman	1897
ANDERSON, Victor Married -17	1872	Kemiö	1909	-	Nihotupu Auckland	Shipcarpent.	-
ANDERSON, William Single -17	1896	-	1914	-	Gisborne	Bushfeller	-
ANDERSSON, Andrew	1872	Uusi- kaarlepyy	1898	1905	Gisborne Waitangi	Labourer Bushfell.	-
ANDERSSON, Erik Gunnar	1908	Munsala	1926	-	Wellington	-	-
ANDERSSON, Johan Jakob	1865	-	1907?	-	Auckland	-	-
ANDERSSON, Johan Birger	1907	Munsala	1930	-	-	-	-
ANDERSSON, Nils	1855	-	1917?	-	Canterbury	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ANDERSSON, Wilhelm	-	-	1926	-	Wellington	-	-
ANTTILA, Alex Married -17	1884	-	-	-	Whataatutu	Bushman	-
APOLA, Iisakki Malak. 17 years in America before NZ	1894	Lappi,Tl	1930	1937	Wellington Tauranga	Stonemason	-
ARMSTRONG, Julius	1851	-	1870	1891	Hokitika	Miner	-
ARNESEN, Olga, Magdal. F	1889	-	1913	-	Dargavil.	Dom. Dut.	-
ASKOLA, Johan	1861	-	-	1887	Martinbor.	Stationhand	-
ASPLUND, Frank Married -17	1845	Finland	1897?	1897	Stratford	Marketgard.	-
ASPLUND, Johan Christ. W. Emma Sophia Phillips Ch. Ivar	1844	Uusikaup.	1903	1908	Rahotu Stratford	Dairyfarm.	1927
ASPLUND, Otto Hezekiel Single -17	1893	Kemiö	1915	1921	Lyttelton	Seaman "Opouri"	-
BACK, Wilhelm Single -17	1890	-	1911	-	Whataatutu	Fencer	-
BACKHOLM, Benjamin w. Elizabeth Forrest Ch. Fridtjof, Benjamin and Walter	1856	Vaasa	1882	1903	Alexandra (Dunedin)	Dredgeman Miner	1938

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
BACKHOLM, Frederick	1865	-	1885	1899	Puhi Puhi	Miner ret. soldier	1941 Weymouth
BACKLUND, Johan Wilhelm Married	1854	Oravai- nen	1886	-	-	-	-
BACKMAN, Jakob Otto	1892	-	1909	-	Lyttelton	-	-
BACKMAN, Reinhold Single Brother in USA	1870	Vaasa	1899	1911	Waitekauri Hamilton	SheepFar.	1931
BANK, Matthew	1842	Åland	1887	-	Awhitu Auckland	Kaurigumdigger Seaman	1932
BARK, Anders Matts.	1844	-	-	-	Canterbury	-	-
BARNER, Selim Johann. Wife Ellen Vinter	1891	Nykarl.	1912	-	-	-	1929
BECK, Herman W. Annie Conway, two children	1884?	Helsinki	1904	1907	Dargaville Auckland	Bushman Miner	1919
BECKERMAN, John	1835	-	-	-	Auckland	Mariner "Tweed"	1880
BECKMAN, William	1833	Loviisa	1865	1887	Dunganville	-	-
BERG, August	1883	Hanko	1904	1905	Picton	Shipcarpent.	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
BERG, Gustaf	1833	Tornio	1857	-	Collingwood	Miner	-
BERTELL, Niklas Wilh.	1902	Munsala	1920	-	-	-	-
BETREL, Henrig	1846	Oulu	1882	1899	Pigeon Bay	Labourer	-
BICK, Kirman Married -17	1886	-	1902	-	Waihi	Miner	-
BIRCH (Bjork), Carl Fredrik W. Elizabeth Ritchie & 2 children	1878	Rauma	1904	1912	Hastings Opotiki	Carpent.	1928
BIÖRKLUND, Magnus Marcus W. Catherine King & 4 children	1846	-	1882	-	Omaka Pakiri	Farmer	1902
BJÖRK, Elis	1887	Luoto	1907	-	Marybor.	-	-
BJÖRKBOM, (Oscar Peterson) Kurt Rafael	1902	Vaasa	1926	1947	Auckland	Storekeeper	-
BJORKLUND (Burke), Gustav Abel W. Helen Wolf, marriage in Auckland ab. 1891 Ch. William Edward	1855	Pietars.	1884	1905	Auckland	Labourer	1934
BJÖRKMAN, Alfred Vilh.	1894	Nykarl.	1912	-	-	-	-
BLOM, Isak	1869	-	1908	-	Lyttelton	-	-
BLOMFELLS, Aaron Robert W. Ellen Thomson, 1 daughter	1853	-	1878	-	Dunedin Pine Hill	Labourer	1886

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
BLOMQUIST, Anna Alina	1900	Munsala	1923	-	-	-	-
BLOMQUIST, Aino Augusta (F) Father Isak B.	1912	Munsala	1913	-	Pigeon Bay	Child	1921
BLOMQUIST, Annie (F) Single -17, Henrik Johan's daughter	1900	Munsala	1910	-	Pigeon Bay	Assistant	-
BLOMQUIST, Carl August Married -17	1875	Munsala	1900	1911	Managone Tangitere	V.Bul.driv. Carter	-
BLOMQUIST, Elna Maria Isak's daughter	1908	Munsala	1913	-	-	-	-
BLOMQUIST, Erik Single	1841	Purmo	1874	1907	Ohingaiti	Labourer	-
BLOMQUIST, Erik Johan Married -17	1868	Munsala	1911	-	Westport Foxton	Labourer Flaxcutter	1937
BLOMQUIST, George Single -17, Henrik Johan's son	1898	-	1910	-	Pigeon Bay	Assistant	-
BLOMQUIST, H. Single -17	1898	-	1911	-	Waitangi	Bushfeller	-
BLOMQUIST, Henrik Henrik Johan's son	1896	Munsala	1910	-	Pigeon Bay	-	-
BLOMQUIST, Henrik Johan W. Brita Sofia	1860	Munsala	1910	1913	Pigeon B.	Dairyfar.	1921
			(first 1880's)				

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
BLOMQUIST, Brita Lovisa	1870	Munsala	1911	-	-	-	-
BLOMQUIST, Brita Sofia (F) Husband Henrik Johan B. 4 ch.: Henrik 1896, Jakob 1899, Anna 1900, Johannes 1902	1863	Munsala	1910	1913	Pigeon B.	Dairyfar.	1939
BLOMQUIST, Henrik Hugo	1896	Munsala	1910	-	Pigeon Bay	Child	-
BLOMQUIST, Isaac w. Sofia Josefina, b. 1873 5 ch.: Jenny 1898, Irene 1902, Isak 1904, Elna 1908, Anna 1912	1863	Munsala	1913	1920 (1887)	Pigeon Bay	Farmer	1944
BLOMQUIST, Isak Evert	1904	Munsala	1912	-	Pigeon Bay	Child	-
BLOMQUIST, Irene Susanna	1902	Munsala	1912	-	Pigeon Bay	Child	-
BLOMQUIST, Jakob	1898	Munsala	1910	-	Pigeon Bay	-	-
BLOMQUIST, Jennie (F) Single -17	1900	-	1914	-	Pigeon Bay	Housemaid	-
BLOMQUIST, Johannes	1902	Munsala	1910	-	Pigeon Bay	-	-
BLOMQUIST, Jenny Josef.	1898	Munsala	1912	-	Pigeon Bay	Child	-
BLOMQUIST, Karl August Married -17	1876	Munsala	1900	1911	Managove Tangitere	V.Bull.dr. Carter	-
BLOMQUIST, Lennart	1902	Munsala	1910	-	Pigeon Bay	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
BLOMQUIST, Oskar Isak Drowned at Waipiro Bay	1881	Korppoo	-	-	-	Seaman	1906
BLOMQUIST, Otto	1895	Munsala	1920	-	Auckland	Labourer	-
BLOMQUIST, Sofia Husb. Isak Blomquist	1873	Munsala	1913	-	Pigeon Bay	Dom.Duties	-
BLOOM, Andrew (Anders) W. Victoria Anna Smith	1861	Vaasa	1884	1919	Heathcote Mariner	V.Master	1929
BORGER, Andrew Ewald	1901	Alavet.	-	1948	Tarawera	Timberwork.	-
BRICK, Carl Married	1878	-	1906	-	Hastings	Carpenter	-
BRO, Oskar Edward Single	1906	Munsala	1924	1969	-	-	-
BROMS, Jacob William W. Mary Ellen Erickson, 3 ch.	1891	-	1912	-	Waitangi Christchurch	Bushfeller	1933
BROWN, Augustus W. Sarah Ballantyne & 6 ch.	1833	Åland	1864	1906	Alexandra	Carpenter	1907
BROWN, Charles Widower -17	-	-	1877	-	Onamalutu Marlb. County	Labourer	-
BROWN, Harry	1853	-	1885	1887	Te Avaite Featherston	Labourer	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
BROWN, Henry, See Myllyoja, Antti							
BRUSILA, Karl Gustaf	1878	Hels.pit.	-	-	Kaikoura	Seaman	1911
Washed overboard near Kaikoura							
BURKE Gustav Abel, See Bjorklund, G. A.							
CALDÉN, Matts Gunnar	1906	Munsala	1924	-	Dargaville	-	1964
CALENDAN, Carl Freder.	1884	-	1905	-	Waipaoa	Carpenter	-
Married -17							
CARLSEN, (Carlson?) Carl Eliel	1880	Marieh.	-	1908	Waitara	Labourer	-
CARLSON, Alfred	1848	-	1878	-	Coromandel	Bushman	1908
W. Mary Ann Ryan, 7 children							
CARLSON, Alfred G. A.	1865	Helsinki	1887	1902	Dunedin	Seaman	-
Married -17						Wellington	Stewedore
CARLSON, (known Linström Harry) Arvid	1882	Helsinki	1904	1910	Auckland	Seaman	-
CARLSON, Carl	1850	Turku	1891	1906	Auckland	Seaman	1920
CARLSON, Carl Ludvig	1869	Hallent.	-	1899	Taumutu	Fisherman	-
CARLSON, Charles	1880	Mariehamn	-	-	Mokau	-	-
Married -07							
W. Ellen Myrtle Lamb							
Ch. Myrtle b. 1912							

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
CARLSON, Frank Evert Nat. in USA, son of Michelson	1884	Närpes	1925	1931	Wairoa	Labourer	-
CARLSON, Gustaf Adolf Married	1867	Helsinki	1886	1902	Wellington	Seaman	1934
CARLSON, Ida (F) Married Oscar C., Norw.	1891	-	1914	-	Kaihu P.O.	Dom. Dut.	-
CARLSON, John	1862	-	1883	1902	Grey Lynn Auckland	Shipwright	-
CARLSON, Karl	c. 1847	-	1885	-	Auckland	Sailor	1915
CARLSSON, Carl Peter W. Sara Jane Meurtha, 3 ch.	1854	Iniö	1879	1887	Kumara Dilmanstown	Farmer	1932 Kikawa
CARPPE, Iola Aug. (F) Married James C.	1891	-	1912	-	Dargaville	Dairy Farmer	-
CARPPE, James Hemming Married -17	1879	Helsinki	1902	1906	Scarrot's Dargaville	Gumdigger Dairy Farmer	-
CAVANDER, Carl	1871	-	-	-	Oamaru	Seaman	1896 falled from the mast of the steamship "Sonerua"
CAVENIUS, Alexander	1847	-	-	1895	Waikawa	Farmer	-
CEDERSTROM, Johan Emil brother of Mikael H. Cederstrom	1864	Munsala	-	-	-	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
CEDERSTROM, Mikael Herman Wife Sanna Sund	1861	Munsala	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	1896 died in S. Africa
COLDSTREAM, John Married 1874 W. Ida Williamson Ch. Mary and Lena 1874, Josephine Louisa 1875, John Marscleus 1877, William Alexander 1879, Bessie May 1881, Leonard Martin 1883, Victor August 1885, Percival Christoffer 1888, Cecilia Prua and Mabel Alvilde 1890, Ruth 1893.	1841	-	1872	1893	Palmerst.N.	Carpenter	1907
COLEMAN, Johanna (F) Marr. twice, 5 ch.	1870	-	1911	-	Wellington	Dom.Dut.	1935
COOK, Freder. Edward 1st w. Miss McGee 2nd w. Lilian Leach, 2ch	1872	Tampere	1897	1902	Dunedin Runanga Died at Sumnes	Seaman Electrician	1944
CORDELIN, August Married -17	1856	Rauma	1880	1884	Lyttelton	Mariner Custodian	1934
CUSTIFSON, Custy Single -17	1883	-	1910	-	Wellington	Seaman "Mapourika"	-
DAVID, Emil c/o J. H. Carppe	1867	-	1907	-	Dargaville	Traveller	-
DAVIDSON, David Bernh. Single -17	1851	Loka- lahti	1884	1899	Hamua Wanganui	Labourer	1921
DAVIDSON, John	1853	Loviisa	1875	1893	Kauka- pakapa	Hotelkeeper	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ERIKSON, Anna Andersd. Daughter Anna Sofia Erikson	1854	Munsala	1909	-	Thames V.	-	1925
ERIKSON, Anna Sofia (F) Married Doherty	1887	Munsala	1909	-	Thames V.	-	-
ERIKSON, Anders Wilh. W. Kristina Sofia (2nd 1921) 2 daughters: Tekla & Signe	1873?	Munsala?	1901	1922	Pigeon Bay	Labourer	-
ERIKSON, Andrew w. Jane (Campbell) 8 sons	1858	Uusi- kaarlepyy	1878	1884	Little Riv. Christch.	Farmer Labourer	1943
ERIKSON, August Theod.	1876	Almo	1901	1909	Greymouth	Labourer	-
ERIKSON, Brita Lov. (F) h. Jacob Leander E., 5 ch.	1889	Munsala	1921	1938	Waiuku	Dom. Dut.	1941
ERIKSON, Dagmar Lise (F) Daughter of Jacob Leander E.	1912	Munsala	1921	-	Waiuku	Child	-
ERIKSON, Elvi Lovisa (F) Daughter of Jacob Leander Erikson	1910	Munsala	1921	-	Waiuku	Child	-
ERIKSON (WIDBERG), Eric Wilhelm	1898	Munsala	1924	-	Waiuku	Brickmaker	1933
ERIKSON, Jacob	1854	Nykarl.	1879	1884	Little R.	Farmer	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ERIKSON, Jacob Leander W. Brita Lovisa Ch. Jakob Gunnar, Elvi Lovisa, Dagmar Lise, Eric Sven, Oscar	1880	Munsala	1921	1938	Waiuku	Farmer	-
ERIKSON, Jakob Gunnar	1909	Munsala	1921	1937	Waiuku	Electric.	1969
ERIKSON, Johan	1869	Munsala	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
ERIKSON, Kristina Sof. (F) Husband Anders Wilhelm E.	1878	Munsala	1920	-	Pigeon Bay	-	-
ERIKSON, Matthew	c. 1855	-	c. 1890	-	Christch.	Labourer	1915
ERIKSON, Otto Married	1883	Munsala	1915	-	Whatatutu	Bushman	-
ERIKSON, Per Albin	1875	Hammarl.	1904	1911	Otira	Bushman	-
ERIKSON, Signe (F) Daughter of Anders Wilhelm E.	-	Munsala	1920	-	Pigeon Bay	-	-
ERIKSON, Sven Erik Son of Jacob Leander E.	1918	Munsala	1920	1938	Waiuku	Farmer	-
ERIKSON, Tekla Sofia (F) Daughter of Anders Wilhem	1903	Munsala	1920	-	Pigeon B.	-	-
ERIKSSON, (Burton) Edward Married	1890	Kristii- nankaup.	-	-	Auckland	Butcher	1918

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ERKKILÄ, Antti A.	1863	Lohtaja	1890	-	-	-	-
ERKKILÄ, Jacob	1855	Raahe	1879	1925	Taurikura Henderson	Farmer	1938
In America and Canada 1873-78 in A. 1881-1903, nat. N.S.W. 1895 w. Annie Jennings 4 ch.: Aina, Bertha, Hilda & Charles							
ESSELSTRÖM, Anders Johans.	1845	Ähtävä	1886	-	-	-	-
Married							
ESSEN, von, Adolph Fred.	1857	Kristii- nankaup.	1879	1903 1917:	Kauheranga Trentham, Hamil.	Prospector Soldier	1926
Single							
EVERSON, Frank	1846	-	1896	-	Auckland	Seaman	1919
FAHLER, John Adolphus	1830	Korsnäs	1862	1899	Reefton	Accountant	-
FORDELL, Emilia (F)	1881	-	1908	-	Marybor.	-	-
FORSTROM, Anton Herman	1868	Inkoo	1888	1908	Waikino Hamilton	Labourer	1922
w. Florence Bell 2 ch.: Herman Oswald 1914 & Florence Alma 1915							
FORSBERG, Carl	1846	Kristii- nankaup.	1861	-	Kawakawa Purerua	-	1921
FORSMAN, John	1845	Kristii- nankaup.	1874	1907	Waipu Auckland	Gumdig. (Seaman) Retired	1922
Single -17							

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
FREDRIKSON, Victor Yrjö Single -17	1893	Turku	1914	1940	Auckland Lyttelton Tangiwai	Stewedore Sailor Labourer	-
FRIBERG, Carl G. Single -17	1889	-	1914	-	Wellington	Clerk	-
FRISKE, Johan Ludvig	1859	Kristii- nankaup.	1892	1894	Cambellt. (Bluff?)	Mariner	-
FÄGEL, Johan Johnson	1862	Munsala	1886	-	-	-	-
FÄGEL, Johanna (F)	1886	Munsala	1913	-	-	-	-
GABRIELSON, William	1875	Marieh.	1905	1911	Wellington	Steward	-
GASTGIFARS, Anders	1869	Munsala	1888	-	Auckland	-	-
GRANMAN, Cos Nestor Single -17	1892	-	1917	-	Tekaha	Bushfeller	-
GRANROOS, Frans Emil Single -17	1882	-	1913	-	Tuaranga	Seaman "Dandy"	-
GRANROOS, Hulda (F) Husband Samuel Granros	1902	Rauma	1924	-	Auckland	Housewife	-
GRANROS, Samuel W. Hulda Hermina Suomela, 2 daughters	1884	Rauma	1902	1922	Auckland	Carpenter	1946

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
GRAST, Johan Olaf Single -17	1892	-	-	-	Wellington	Hosp. attend.	-
GRAY, Aina Oliv. (F) Married -17	1889	-	1905	-	Linwood	Dom. Dut.	-
GRONSTROM, John Single	1860	Rauma	1884	1933	Taihape	Labourer	1942
GROOS, Peter Single -17	1879	Viipuri	1909	1919	Auckland	Tailor	-
GRUNLEAF, John Isaak	1842	Rauma	1873	1878	Stoke's Pt. Auckland	Master M.	-
GUHUNSON, Peter Single -17	1872	-	1917	-	Wellington	Shipcarp. "Vermont"	-
GUSTAFSON, Gustaf W.	1864	Abo	1893	1897	Huntermvil. Patea	Labourer	1920?
GUSTAFSON, Isaac Will. W. Belle Atkinson, 2 ch.	1857	Turku	1889	1891	Wellington Petone	Dairyfarmer Farmer	1928
GUSTAFSON, Verner Single -17	1879	Loviisa	1903	1908	Hokitika Rona Bay	Carpenter Eastb.	-
GUSTAFSON, Johan Verner	1890	Nykarl.	1912	-	Christch.	Seaman	1912
GUSTAVSON, Gustav Adolf	1864	Helsinki	1895	1908	Dunedin	Seaman	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
GUSTAVSON, Karl Edward Single -17	1860	Pori	1892 /1890	1910	Tangitiki Wairoa	Gumdigger Seaman	-
HAAPALA, (Johan Henry Aspen) Johannes H. 1st w. Annie Träsk, n. Speer 2nd w. Mary, 1 son & daughter	1859	Oulu	1892	1921	Auckland Tamaki West	Seaman	1931
HACKELL, Charlotte W.	1872	Kokkola	1897	1906	Greymouth	Laundress	-
HACKELL, Andrew Emil	1870	Kaarleby	1893	1896	Dunganvil. Kanieri	Miner Contractor	-
HAGERT, John Victor, See Ekstrom John							
HAGGMAN (Hoffman), Isaac	1837?	-	1867	1887	Hokitika	Miner Labourer	1917
HAGGSTROM, Erik Erikss. Married	1854	Oravain.	1892	-	-	-	-
HAGGLOW, H.	-	-	-	-	Christch.	Farmer	-
HAKALA, Jack Single -17	1860	-	1889	-	Tamaki W.	Inmate	-
HAKKANEN, (see Johnson, John)							
HALLMAN, Gustaf	1845	-	1870	-	Dunedin	Carter	1899
HALM, Jakob Mattson	1859	Munsala	1886	-	-	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
HANGA, Herman Single -17	1872	Kokko- la?	1917	-	Kaikoura	Sawmillhand	-
HANSEN, John	1852	Oulu	1877	1923	Carterton Greytown	Labourer Retired	1928
HARJU, Erik	1878	-	1896	-	-	-	-
HASU, Alex Single -17	1879	-	-		Greymouth "Kuia"	Seaman	-
HAUSEN, von Arndt W. Mabel Ashworth	1877	St.Mårt- ens	1904	1911	Bulls Rangit. Wanganui	Gardener	-
HAUSEN, von Charles	1872	-	1909	-	Waikeria	Cook, pris.camp-17	-
HAUSEN, John Single -17	1853	-	1892	-	Masterton	-	-
HEDLUND, Selim Ferd.	1858	Turku	1876	1891	Auckl.	Board.housek.	-
HEIKELL, Emil W. Mary Morton	1864	Turku	1894	1925	Gisborne	Roadman	1939
	5 ch.: Catherine 1905, Erland 1908, Oscar 1911, Florence 1912 and John 1913						
HEIKKINEN, Johanna (F)	1869	Nilsiiä	-	1933	Wellington	Cook	-
HELLMOND, Axel	1864	Helsinki	1899	1906	Lyttelton	Shipcarp.	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
HELLESTEN, John Aug. Widower	1870	Uusik.	1895	1902	Turua, Thames	Labourer	1921
HELLSTON, Charles	1878	-	1903	-	Waikawa	Fisherm.	1943
HELLSTROM, (Charles Victor Smith) Frans Wictor	1859	Pori	1883	1888	Mercury B.	Millhand	-
HELSING, Erik Edward	1906	Munsala	1924	1928	Taumarunui	Farmhand	-
HENRICKSON, Aron	1874	Kuopio	1899	1909	Mangawai	Gumdigger	-
HENRICKSON, Charles Magn. w. Amalia Holford 2 ch.: Maud and Hilda	1868	Loviisa	1892	1905	Gisborne	Seaman	1942
HENDRICKSON, Charlie Married -17	1883	-	1914	-	Whatatutu	Bushman	-
HENRIKSSON, Johan Henrik or John Herbert W. Ellen Andrew 3 ch.: Henrik, John and Helen	1864	Munsala	1883	1907	Matamata Te Kopuru	Farmer Roadwork.	1927
HENRICKSON, Leander Single	1853	Kokkola	-	-	Mangere	Labour.	1922
HENRIKSNÄS, John Feliks	1902	Munsala	1920	-	-	Farmer	-
HENRIKSSON, Johan Richard Brother of Karl Magnus Henrickson	1870	Liljend.	1901	-	-	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
HERMAN, John	1839	Oulu	1880	1896	Murchinson	Labourer	-
HERMAN, J. Single -17	1863	-	1909	-	Otira	Miner	-
HERMANSON, Gustav Alex. w. Regina Nygrann son Harry	1873	Kokkola	1921	1927	Opotiki (in South Afr. 18 years)	Farmer	1932
HERMANSON, Harry Married	1917	Helsinki	1923	1927	Opotiki	Farmer	-
HERMBURGER, Roland, See De Viale							
HILL (Tobiasson), Oscar W. Florence Pascoe brother of Aino Thomson	1895	Imatra	1913	1948	Auckland	Stonemason	1966
HILLMAN, August	1861	-	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
HIMANEN, Mikko W. Edith Levina Benson, marr. Auckland, ab. 1929	1882	Lappeen- ranta	1906	1911	Auckland Onehunga	Seaman	1937
HIORT, Isaac W. Margaret Britton (moved to Australia, where nat. 1909) 16 ch.	1840	-	1859	-	Otago	Miner	-
HIRVIÖ, Fielding	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
HOFF, Robert	1839	-	-	-	Auckland	Labourer	1890

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
HOFFMAN, Isaac, See Haggman							
HOGBACKA, Emilia (F) Married	1881	-	1910	-	Braeburn	Dom.Duties	-
HOGBACKA, Lennart Married	1882	Kokkola	1902	1910	Braeburn	Dairyfarmer	-
HOGBACKA, Lennart Engel. /1882	1860	Kokkola	1902	1910	Kaikoura	Engineer	-
HOGLUND, Karl	1873	Turku	1895	-	Lyttelton	Seaman	-
HOLM, Anders Edvard W. Lea Strandberg brother of Johannes Vilh. Holm	1904	Munsala	1921	-	-	- in Canada 1929-31	-
HOLM, Anders Wilh.	1895	Munsala	1921	-	-	-	-
HOLM, Andrew Will. Son of Eric Johan Holm	1870	-	-	-	Christch.	Labourer	1897
HOLM, Anna Beata Husband Matts Alarik Holm 3 ch.: Signe -07 USA, Johannes -10, Erik -20	1878	Munsala	1932	-	Wellington	-	1966
HOLM, Axel	-	-	1926	-	Auckland	-	-
HOLM, Charles	1878	Helsinki	1900	1905	Palmerst.N.	Labourer	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
HOLM, Charlie Single -17	1890	-	1914	-	Whatatutu	Bushman	-
HOLM, Erik	1845	-	1896	-	-	-	-
HOLM, Erik Axel Married, w. Vera Helsing brother of Karl Johan Holm	1902	Munsala	1921	-	-	-	-
HOLM, Erik Emanuel Son of Matts Alarik	1920	Munsala	1932	1926	Te Awa- mutu	Labourer	1961
HOLM, Erik Johan W. Olga Sofia Söderlund	1872	Munsala	1889	1909	Pigeon Bay	Labourer	1952 Ohura
1874-1902, 3 ch.							
HOLM, Erik Johan J. 1. w. Greta Storsvart 2. w. Brita Rutas	1843	Munsala	-	-	Pigeon Bay	1916 USA 1874-77, S-Africa	1895-98
HOLM, Erik Martin W. Dorothy Lagnäs b. son of Eric John Holm	1913	Munsala	1930	1970	Pahuranga	-	1972
1927							
HOLM, Esther Maria	1902	Munsala	1921	-	Pigeon B.	-	-
HOLM, Jacob	1859	Uusikarl.	1879	1884	Little R.	Farmer	-
HOLM, Johannes S. W. Gerda Margareta Backlund Son of Matts Alarik	1910	Munsala	1932	1926	Te Awa- mutu	Farmer	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
HOLM,							
Johannes Vilh. brother of Anders Edv. Holm	1901	Munsala	1926	-	Auckland	Labourer	-
HOLM,							
Karl Johan brother of Erik Axel Holm	1893	Munsala	1913	-	-	-	-
						returned to Finland	1920
HOLM,							
Karl Sigfrid Son of Matts Alarik	1909	Munsala	1930	1926	Te Awa- mutu	Sawyer	-
HOLM,							
Matts Alarik	1881	Munsala	1913	1926	Te Awa- mutu	Farm Lab.	1946
W. Anna Beata Antus, marr. Utah, USA 1903							
Ch. Helen 1905, Signe 1907, Karl 1909, Johannes 1910, Erik 1920							
HOLM,							
Signe Maria Daughter of Matts Alarik Husband Anders Wilhelm Holmberg	1907	Utah, USA	1932	1926	Te Awamutu	-	-
HOLM,							
Sofie	1863	-	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
HOLM,							
Otto Single -17	1856	-	1894	-	Otokia Dunedin	Farm Lab.	1919
HOLM,							
Uno Johannes	1913	Munsala	1930	-	-	-	-
HOLMBERG,							
Anders Wilh. W. Signe M. Holm Ch.: Anne Greta 1940, Eric 1941	1898	Munsala	1921	1946	Waiuku	Farmer	1968
HOLMBERG,							
Arvid Adolf Single -17	1885	Uusi- kaupunki	1905	1913	Auckland	Seaman "Altai"	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
HOLMBERG, Carl Metodus Married	1886	Vestan- fjärd	1906	1922	Tapuwaeroa	Stationhand Carpenter	1967
HOLMBERG, Johan Married, 3 ch.	1844	Nykarl.	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
HOLMBERG, Johannes	1854	Munsala	1883	-	-	-	-
HOLMLUND, Carl Wilhelm Ch. Carl	1854	Tuusula	1878	1901	Moeregi Wairoa Howick	Labourer	1930
HOLMQUIST, Gustav Adolf W. Haremine Lee & son, marr. at Oamaru ab. 1919	1882	Turku	1902	1905	Oamaru	Fisherman	1938
HOLMSUN (Hohnrun), Albin Joakim Single -17	1877	-	1915	-	Wellington	Seaman "Orepuki"	-
HONGA, Herman Married -17	1871	Kokkola	1901	-	Nydia Bay	Labourer	-
HONGELL, Alfred	1880	-	1914	-	-	-	-
HONGELL, Herman	1877	-	1901	-	-	-	-
HONKA, Herman	1871	-	1907	-	-	-	-
HUGO, John	1899	-	1915	-	Ohaewai	Farm Hand	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
HYMEN,							
David	1854	Viipuri	1879	1900	Caversham	Labourer	-
W. Elizabeth Grason, 8 ch., marr. Dunedin ab. 1878							
HÄGGLÖFF,							
Henrik Arvid	1895	Munsala	1915	-	-	-	-
W. Tekla Sofia Eriksson							
HÖGBACKA,							
Lennart	1882	-	1901	-	-	-	-
HÖGLUND,							
Karl	1873	Turku?	1908	-	Lyttleton	-	-
before N.Z. in Australia							
INGELIN,							
Johan Valdem.	1894	Helsinki	1908	-	Auckland	Seaman	-
ISAACSON,							
Herman	1835	Turku	1860	1883	No Town	Miner	1906
Marr. at Greym. ab. 1877 Red Jack's County of Grey							
ISAKSON,							
Johan Erik Single -17	1850	Maalahti	1883	1905	Kumeroa Waipawa Napier	Labourer	1930
ISAKSSON,							
Karoline (F)	1864	Nykarl.	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
ISAKSSON,							
Oscar	1855	-	1888	1890	Dunedin	Seaman	-
ISONIEMI,							
Antti P.	1875	Utajärvi	1891	-	-	Gardener	-
JACOBSON,							
Alfred Single -17	1895	-	1913	-	Akitio	Labourer	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
JACOBSON, Edward W. Ellen Kelly, 10 ch. marr.	1843	Åbo	1872	-	Chuta Glenomaru	Bushman	1905
JACOBSON, Jacob	1860	Nykarl.	-	1889	-	-	-
JACOBSON, Walter Single-17	1893	-	1911	-	Masterton	Tallow Worker	1941
JACOBSSON, Jakob	1855	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
JAKOBSON, Karl Niclas Married died in South Africa	1862	Munsala	1884	1891	Akitio	Labourer	-
JAKOBSSON, Nils	1848	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
JANSEN, Axel Angelb. Son of Consul Elias Jansen and Gustava Wass, went to Austr., W. Stella Brinks, b. 1879	1872	Turku	1890	1896	Pahautanui	Labourer	-
JANSEN, John Single-17	1844	-	1867	1902	Glenfield Dargaville Auckland	Gardener ret. Gumd.	1933
JANSON, Anders August	1865	Marie- hamn	1895	1902	Kairanga Taihape	Labourer	1931
JANSON, Carl Gust. Hj. Married	1868	Turku	1906	1913	Auckland	Mariner	-
JANSON, John	1847	Raahe	1872	1902	Dargaville	Gumdigger	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
JANSSON, Alexander Single -17	1888	-	1917	-	Wellington	Fireman ss. "Woolcar"	-
JANSSON, Thorbjorn	1921	Finstrom	1941	1947	Wellington	Stewedore	-
JANTTE, Johan	1851	Oulu	1877	1906	Tangiter. Whangarei	Cook(bush)	1919
JENSEN, (Johanson) Christ. Edward Single -17:	1855	Pietari	1882	1928	Ohakune, Tangiwai Ohura	Labourer Railw.lab.	1931
JENSEN, Edward Oscar	1858	Oulu	1880	1938	Gisborne	Labourer	1941
JENSEN, William Gord. Single -17	1860	-	1882	-	Gisborne	Fencer	-
JENTTINEN, Jack Single -17	1894	-	1915	-	Ohewha	Labourer	-
JERN (see YERN)							
JERNWALL, Frans Alfred	1862	Uusik.	1892	1899	Eketahuna	Labourer	-
JOANSON, Victor	1857	Turku	1889	1902	Invergard. near New River	Farmer	-
JOENSUU, Jacob	1850	-	1879	1887	Wainuioru	Shepherd	1902
JOFFS, Aino Mary H. Axel Joffs, 4 ch.	1886	-	1911	-	Dargaville	Dom.Dut	1916

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
JOFFES, John Single -17	1877	-	1912	-	Whangai- moana	Ploughman	-
JOHANNESON, Peter Married -17	1873	-	1897	-	Whatatu	Scrubcutter	-
JOHANSEN, Charles Single -17	1856	Pori	1883	1921	Inangahua Westport	Farm Labourer	Lab. 1923
JOHANSEN, Franz	1877	-	1903	-	Christch.	Seaman	1904
JOHANSEN, Victor Single -17	1852	-	1890	-	Redan	Labourer	-
JOHANSON (Herrala), Carl Gustaf W. Sarah Ridden, marr. in	1850	Lumijoki	1880	1928	Christch.	Farmer	1930
Christch. ab, 1893, 2 daughters							
JOHANSON, Carl Gustav Married -17	1855	-	1882	-	Addington	Labourer	-
JOHANSON, Gabriel W. Rose Campbell Ch. Alfred 1886, Mary 1890, Eliza 1893, Edgar 1894, Alfred 1896, Grace	1864	Uusik.	1886	1907	Pitt Isl. Masterton	Sheepfarm.	1950
JOHANSON, Herman Married 2nd w. Frances Joan Thomsen, 7 ch.	1857	-	1882	1897	Te Kopuru Manurewa Drury	Farmer Poultryfarmer Fisherman	1918
JOHANSON, Johan	1849	Rauma	1880	1884	Whangarei	Shipcarpenter	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
JOHANSON, Johan Emil Single -17	1868	Maarian- hamina	1889	1902	Auckland	Master Mar.	1945
JOHANSSON, Johan W. Miriam (Dale) & son	1877	Maalahti	1901	1905	Dunedin	Yardman, Carpenter	1938
JOHANSON, Matts	1863	-	1884	-	Akaroa	Labourer	1887
JOHANSON, Peter August widow & 7 daughters W. Alice Wittin	1859	Porvoo	1906	1932	Otahuhu Auckland	Bootrepair Builder 17 years in Tasmania	1933
JOHANSON, Victor	1853	Turku	1880	-	Chistch.	Missionary	1932
JOHANSSON, Emil Johannes Ellen Bjermwrist & 9 ch.	1879	Turku	1896	1908	Wellington Karori	Eng.Driv. Dairyfarm.	1944 -17
JOHANSSON, Erik Johan	1868	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
JOHANSSON, Frans	1847	Uusik.	1877	1897	Lake Pukaki	Rabbister Lab. Cromwell	1912
JOHANSSON, Isak	1861	-	1886	-	Auckland	-	-
JOHANSSON, Jakob Wilhelm	1902	Munsala	1920	-	-	-	-
JOHANSSON, Johan	1874	Morby	1895	-	Dargaville	Seaman	-
JOHANSSON, Johan Ans. W. Isabella Caulsland, 7 ch.	1872	Abo	1898	1909	Pigeon Bay Tauranga	Labourer	1949

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
JOHANSSON, Johan Jakob	1866	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
JOHANSSON, Matts Wilhelm	1868	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
JOHANSSON, Oswald Rafael	1894	Kemiö	1914	1937	Napier	Stewedore	-
JOHANSSON, Petter Niklas	1866	-	1886	-	Auckland	-	-
JOHNSON, Alfred Single -17	1891	-	1915	-	Nelson	Carpenter.	-
JOHANSON, Breta (F) h. Peter J.	1865	-	1894	-	Manga- whare	Dom. Duties	-
JOHNSON, Carl w. Amy Hooker & 5 ch., marr. in Auckland ab. 1911	1872	-	ab. 1910	-	Auckland	Labourer	1941
JOHNSON, Charles A. W. Emma Elizabeth de Freatus, 5 ch., marr. Auckland ab. 1879	1855	Sund	ab. 1878	-	Auckland	Mariner	1918
JOHNSON, Christopher	1878	-	-	-	Wellington	Stewedore	1944
JOHNSON, David W. Julia McCarthy, 2 sons	1844	-	1887	1890	Lyttelton Christch.	Labourer Fisherman	1926
JOHNSON, Eric Married	1851	-	1878	-	Ponsonby, Auckland	Labourer	-
JOHNSON, Erick Reinho. W. Evelina Faulkner & daughter	1875	Marieh.	1898	1905	Gisborne Manurewa	Seaman Carpenter	1943

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
JOHNSON, Frank Widower	1863	-	1888	-	Alfreton	Roadman	-
JOHNSON, Henry W. Margot Brennan, 3 daughters, marr.	1853	Oulu	1867	1890	Dunedin Dunedin ab. 1878	Fireman	1905
JOHNSON, Henry Widower	1842	Krist.k.	1874	1908	Kumeu Kaipara Auckland	Sailor Gumdigger Shoebblack	-
JOHNSON, Isaac	1860	Vaasa	1886	1899	Dargaville	Gumdigger	-
JOHNSON, Jacob, see Määttä, Jaakko							
JOHNSON, John	1827	-	ab.1865	-	Kumara	Goldminer Greenstone	1895
JOHNSON, (Hakkanen) John Married, sons Jack, William and Henry.	1835	-	1882	1905	Greymouth	Sawyer	-
JOHNSON, John W. Maria Christina Jacobson	1842	Uusik.	1875	1887	Kaiwairai Featherston	Farmer Midhurst	1924
JOHNSON, John Wanganui	1843	Rauma	1876	1900	Mahend	Labourer	1926
JOHNSON, John Single -17	1851	Rauma	1876?	-	Waitaki Oamaru	Pensioner	1919
JOHNSON, John	1887	Vaasa	1894	1908	Dargaville	Farm labourer	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
JOHNSON, John Emil W. Lucy Blackwell & daughter	1867	Vaasa	1895	1898	Dunedin	Labourer	1926
JOHNSON, John Henry	1859	Turku	1904	1925	Masterton (1878 to Australia)	Fencer	-
JOHNSON, Karl Married with Newzealander, 3 ch.	1872	Orivesi	1905	1919	Auckland	Labourer	-
JOHNSON, (Jonson) Matias Will. W. Jessie Adams	1861	Åland	1887	1894	Wellington Stewedore	Seaman	1924
JOHNSON, Oscar Single -17	1867	-	1887	-	Newtown, Wellington	Labourer	-
JOHNSON, Peter	1872	Uusik.	-	1919	Auckland	Labourer	-
JOHNSON, Petter W. Brita J., 2 daughters	1866	-	1887	1893	Auckland Mangaware	Gumdigger Roadman	-
JOHNSON, Robert W. Esther Lewis, marr. Caversham -87	1856	Vaasa	1879	1928	Mataura Island	Labourer	1943
JOHNSTONE, Eric	1853?	-	1877	1900	Auckland	Millhand	-
JULIN, Anders Robert	1895	Munsala	-	-	-	-	-
KALI, Alfred	1890	-	1914	-	-	-	-
KALLIO, Otto	1888	-	1909	-	-	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
KANERVA, Kustaa J. Sulo W. Aili Halonen Daughter Tuula	1904	Kustavi	1933	1958	Auckland	Hardboard Foreman	1968 1987
KANERVA, K. W. brother of Kustaa J. Sulo	1896	Kustavi	1921	1926	Wellington	Seacaptain	-
KARLSON, Anselm Charles W. Annie Lockie, marr.	1864	Helsinki Auckland about	1889 1913	1920	Auckland form.	Labourer Seaman	1932
KARLSON, Carl Peter W. Sarah Munth, 3 ch.	1854	Turku	1879	-	Kikawa	Farmer	1932
KARLSON, Charles John Single -17	1867	Vaasa	1886	1900	Dargaville Brickmaker	Contractor	-
KARLSON, John	1893	-	1914	-	Whatatutu	Bushman	-
KARLSON, Mats Single -17	1864	Uusik.	1883	1922	Dargaville	Contractor Carter	-
KARLSSON, Anders	1873	-	1891	-	Canterbury	-	-
KARLSSON, Johan Jakob	1866	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
KARSIKAS, Helmer Single -17	1878	-	1914	-	Auckland "Corona Tion"	Seaman	-
KARSTEN, Samuel W. Hilma in Finland, son in Canada	1873	Rauma	1898	1902	Waipiro B. Gisborne	Carpenter	1938

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
KASKISTO, Alli Husband Lauri Niskanen Ch. Henna 1946 & Helen 1951	1911	Rauma	1931	-	Auckland	-	1995
KAVANDER, Karl Wilhelm	1870	Sauvo	-	-	Wellington	Seaman "Poherua" accident.	1896
KARVANEN, Väinö Single -17	1890	-	1917	-	Wellington	Seaman	-
KEINAN, (Keynanen?) John W. Mary Lindström son John Oscar (see below)	1845?	-	1874	-	Invercarg.	-	1887
KEENAN, (Lindström) Mary Gustava 1st husb. John William Keenan 2nd husb. Matson, Carl 4 children	1842	Oulu	1874	1906	Bluff Christch.	Dom.Duties	1926
KEINAN, John Oscar Married -17:	1869	Uusik.	1874	1935	Dunedin Storeman	Relief Work.	-
KELLBERG, Erick	1867	Vaasa	1889	1893	Wellington	Seaman	-
KINNUNEN, (nee Mansikka) Anna Elina (F) Husband Eino Kinnunen Ch. Elvi, Ella, Al. Edwin, Eric	1898	-	1928	-	Gisborne	-	1974
KINNUNEN, (Anderson) Eino W. Anna Elina Mansikka 4 ch.: Elvi b. 1918, Ella b. 1921, Al. Edwin and Eric	1897	Viipuri	1928	-	Gisborne Motu Hora	Blacksmith	1946

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
KINNUNEN, Ella Married Kellow, son Terry	1918	-	1928	-	Gisborne	-	-
KINNUNEN, Elvi Married, 2 ch. Margaret & Leslye Rotorua	1921	-	1928	-	Gisborne	-	1968
KIVI (Stone), Elias	1890	Evijärvi	1914	-	Auckland	Labourer	1924
KIVIMÄKI, (known as Arthur Kivi) Armas Oma V. first in Canada & Australia, 1973-74 in Brazil	1909	Kauhaj.	1937	-	Auckland	Papermill Worker	1975
KLEMENTS, John August Married -17:	1879	Krist.- kaup.	1900	1906	Auckland "Will Watch"	Seaman Marine Engin.	-
KLOCKARS, Andras Wilhelm	1864	Munsala	1886	1891	Pigeon Bay	Labourer	-
KLOCKARS, Anna Husb. Matt Erickson Ch. Anna -87 & Erik -90	1854	Munsala	1909	-	Lyttelton Thames	-	1925
KLOCKARS, Anna	1887	Munsala	1909	-	Lyttelton	-	-
KLOCKARS, Erik	1890	Munsala	1909	-	Lyttelton	-	-
KLOCKARS, Katarina	1870	Nykarl.	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
KLUUKERI, Nestor	-	-	-	-	Gisborne	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
KNUTS, Anders Anders. Married, 2 ch.	1846	Munsala	1886	-	-	-	-
KNUTS, Erik Isaksson	1859	-	-	-	Canterbury	-	-
KOIVUNEN, Severi W. Anna W. Björkrooth	1874	Kuhmo	1905	1908	Palmerst.N. In Australia 1899-1905	Labourer	-
KOSKELA, John W. Elizabeth Brown Ch. John, William, Alfred, Charles, Reuben	1841	Oulu	1865	1878	Lyttelton	Labourer	1903
KOSKINEN, Einar	1895?	-	1913	-	-	-	-
KOSKINEN, Ida Adina Husb. Otto Rock	1889	Ruokol.	1908	-	Lyttelton	-	-
KOSKINEN, Tuomas Returned to Finland, father to the Thomson brothers	1853	Ruokol.	1914	-	Gisborne	Gardener	-
KRONSTROM, Wilhelm Single-17	1868	Turku	1894	1912	Albany	Labourer	-
KRÖBERG, Aarne	-	Tammisaari	-	-	s/s Port Whangara	-	-
KURAL, Andrew (Anders) Single-17	1845	Kala- joki	1872	1912	Balclutha Dunedin	Labourer	1934
KUULA, Yrjö Timari	1894	Valkeala	-	-	Maihihi	Rabitter	1936

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
KYTÖLÄ, Aila	1910	-	1927	-	Gisborne Melbourne	-	-
1st husband Nathaniel White							
2nd husband George Masters							
KYTÖLÄ, Elias	1885	Alavus	1916	1921	Matawai	Sawmillhand	1949
W. Senja							
Ch. Aila, Kauko, Sonja							
KYTÖLÄ, Kauko	1913	-	1927	-	Gisborne	-	-
W. Lynda May Williams							
KYTÖLÄ, Senja	1888	Nykarl.	1927	-	Gisborne	-	-
Husband Elias Kytölä							
Ch. Aila 1910, Kauko 1913, Sonja 1926							
KYTÖLÄ, Sonja	1926	-	1927	-	Gisborne	-	-
Husband George HowChow							
LAGART, John Victor	1861	-	1885	1921	Lower Hutt Wharf Lab.		-
Married							
LAGERQVIST, Arvid	1882?	-	-	-	Auckland	Seaman	-
LAINÉ, Johan Väinö	1892	Kustavi	1915?	1928	Wellington Auckland	Seaman	1936
Single -17:							
LAINÉ, John Jacob	1879	Pyhämaa	1906	1911	Inangahua Tiraroa	J.Roadman Surfaceman	-
Single -17:							
LAITILA, Karl	-	Viipuri	-	-	Soldier in Troops of N.Z. Killed in action, France		1916

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
LAKSONEN, Victor	1862	Uusik.	1878	1927	Waiheke I.	Farmer	-
LAMBERG, Victor	1862	-	1883	1890	Wellington	Mariner	-
LANUS, Anders	1892	-	1909	-	Lyttelton	-	-
LARKA, Johan George	1908	Munsala	1930	-	-	-	-
LASSUS, Anders	1890?	-	1909	-	-	-	-
LASSUS, Matt's Wilhelm	1892	Munsala	1913	-	Gisborne	Labourer	-
LAUNDON, Charles	1877	-	1893	-	Waihopo	Gumdigger	-
LAUREN, Charles Rob. W. Mary Maud White Ch. Mary 1904, Winifred 1906, Patrick 1908, John 1909, James 1911, Lucy 1914	1869	Turku	1894	1901	Dunedin	Seaman Waterside Work.	1933
LEDEN, Frederick W.	1849	Turku	1879	1885	Wellington	Carpenter	-
LEHTONEN, Henrik Single -17	1874	Uusik.	1899	1905	Wellington	Wharf Lab.	-
LEMPIÄINEN, (Petersen) August	1880	Ruokol.	1909	-	Pigeon Bay In Australia, Old, before N.Z.	Farm Lab.	1914
LIEWENDAHL, Jarl	1908	Helsinki	-	-	Hokianga	Seaman	1928 Drowned from "Isabelle de Freine"

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
LILJEBLAD, Hillel Fred.	1849	Oulu	-	1895	-	Master Mariner	1925
LILLBACKA, Johannes	1873	Viipuri	1906	1914	Kakahi (Australia)	Tallyman	-
LIND, Carl E. Married -17	1877	-	-	1901	Mt Roskill Labourer	Stewedore	1930
LINDBERG, Eric Single -17	1893	-	1902	-	Mt Roskill	Stewedore	-
LINDBERG, Erik	1862	-	1887	-	-	-	-
LINDBERG, Jack	1875	-	1902	-	Mt Roskill	Stewedore	-
LINDBERG, John	1875	Viipuri	1902	1911	Gisborne	Stewedore	-
LINDBLOM, Carl Elias	1877	Turku	1902	1920	Auckland	Labourer	-
LINDBLOM, Gustaf Ferd. Married -17	1875	Helsinki	1898	1934	Auckland	Carpenter	-
LINDBLOM, Gustaf Wict.	1878	Nauvo	1903	1906	Mangaweka	Bushfeller	-
LINDELL, Gustaf Adolf	1855	-	1883	1893	Napier	Gardener	-
LINDFORS, Carl	1845	Turku	1893	1893	Auckland (Nat. in NSW)	Mast.Mariner	1904

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
LINDGREN, William	1891	-	1913	-	Westport	Seaman	-
LINDHOLM, (Holm) Charles	1872	-	1911	-	Wellington	Stewedore	1941
LINDHOLM, Joha Wilh. W. Minnie Brake	1870	Turku	-	1937	Waipawa Hastings	Cook Carpenter	1945
LINDOSS, Walter 1st w. Annie Ballwood, marr. Christch. ab. 1910 Catharine Mckay, marr. Christch. ab. 1925, 2 ch.	1880	-	1913	-	Christch.	Stewedore	1943
LINDOSS, William Single -17	1888	-	-	-	Napier	Seaman	-
LINDQUIST, Alexander w. Barbara Cartwright & 6 ch.	1860	Marieh.	1882	1895	Matakohe Te Kopuru Tokatoka	Dairyfarm.	1938
LINDQUIST, Carl W. Doris Cliff, marr. 1923	-	-	-	-	Paparoa	-	-
LINDQUIST, Francis Oscar W. Robina McLeod Ch. Mary, Francis Oscar, Hilda and James	1875	Nauvo	1898	1903	Bluff	Fisherman Master Mariner	1956
LINDQUIST, Frank 1st wife Erika in Finland W. Fanny Harman & 2 sons, marr. Auckland ab. 1919	1891	Snappert.	-	-	Whangarei	Dredge- master	1925
LINQUIST, Johan Edward	1868	-	-	-	Canterbury	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
LINDROOS, Alfred W. Louisa Cavratt, 3 ch.	1849	Eckerö	1876	1890	Tamutu, Ellesmere Christch.	Fisherman Labourer	1917
LINDROS, Jossua Rich.	1852	-	1878	1899	Auckland	Seaman	1899
LINDSTROM, Frank	1852	Turku	1892	1897	Wade	Gumdigger	-
LINDSTROM, Fredrik Wilh.	1851	-	-	-	-	-	-
LINDSTROM, Gustaf w. Emma Peck & daughter	1878	-	-	1901	Lower	Hutt Carpenter	1943
LINDSTRÖM, Oskar w. Amalia Briggs	1889	Helsinki	1905	-	Nelson	Seaman	1934
LINN, John	1842	-	1880	-	Dunedin	Labourer	1904
LOFQUIST, Bertel Michel	1902	Porvoo	1928	1934	Paihia Wairoa	Bridge- worker	1993 Auckl.
LONG, Mrs.	-	-	-	-	Gisborne	-	-
LUKKARILA, Antti A.	1863	Lohtaja	1896	-	-	-	1957
LUND, Joseph Will.	1870	Turku	1886	1901	Auckland	Mariner	1890
LUNDBERG, Johan Albert Single -17	1882	Uusi- kaupunki	1913	1921	Avondale "Else Mary"	Steward Cook	-
LUNDGREN, Francis Victor, see Urwin F. V.							

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
LUNDGREN, John	1855	Turku	1894	1901	Auckland	Seaman	1906
LUNDON, Charles	1868	Helsinki	1882	1908	Houhora Auckland	Labourer Brickworker	1917
LUNDVICK, Augustin Widower	1878	-	1897	-	Piopio	Farmer	-
LYYJYNEN, Eino	1892	-	1914	-	-	-	-
MAGNUS, Nils	1846	Åland	1876	1931	Te Kopuru	Gumdigger	1938
MAKI, Karl Anton Married	1886	Pori	1917	1919	Wellington 1907 nat. in Austr.	Labourer	-
MANNINEN, (Lauri Victor?) Karl Anton	1893	Tampere	1915	1922	Waihopo	Gumdigger	-
MANSNER, Oskar Joak. Married -17	1867	Turku	1893	1905	Port Ahuriri Wharf Napier	Lab.	-
MANTEN, Charles	1873	-	1906	-	Te Puia	Cook	-
MANUANEX, Neils Single -17	1894	-	1915	-	Auckland	Seaman "Tarawera"	-
MARTINSON, Frank	1874	Uusik.	1898	1928	Wellington	Seaman	-
MARTTILA, Adam Single -17	1893	-	1917	-	Wellington	Fireman	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
MATHENS (Mathews?), John	1824	Krist.k.	1864	1901	Reefton	Farmer	-
MATHESON, Mathew	1860	-	1881	-	Tangowahine	Sawmillhand	
W. Prudence Holden, 4 daughters Marr. Paeroa ab. 1888					North Wairoa Whangerei	Bushman	1936
MATSON, Carl Alfred	1862	Maarianh.	-	-	Ponsonby	Fisherm.	1939
W. Mary Keane, marr. in Auckland							
MATSON, Charles	1864	Helsinki	1901	1905	Longburn	Flaxmillhand	-
Married -17							
MATSON, Jacob	1850	-	1886	1893	Kumeroa	Labourer	-
MATSON, Jakob	1861	-	-	-	Auckland	Labourer	1934
Escaped from a Finnish ship in Wellington ab. 1904, imprisoned							
MATSON, John	1861	-	1883	-	Martin- borough	Labourer	-
Single -17							
MATSON, John	1864	-	1899	-	New Plym.	Carpenter	1915
MATSON, Mathias	1863	Munsala	1884	-	Dargaville	Brickmaker	
W. Elizabeth Hausman					Auckland		1937
MATTSON (Hynninen), David	1854	Viipuri	1881	1911	Martinbor.	Farmlab.	1918
MATTSON, Erick, See Erickson, Erick							
MATSSON, Emil Wilh.	1886	Turku	1908	1923	Auckland	Shipwright	1966
Married ab. 1923					"Moalla"	Seaman	

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
MATTSON, Erik Johan	1890	Munsala	1909	-	-	-	-
MATTSON, Frederick Single -17	1867	Vaasa	1893	1906	Halfmoon B. Stewart I.	Fisher- man	-
MATTSON, Henry Single -17	1896	-	1917	-	Gisborne	Bushfeller	-
MATTSON, Ingrid (F)	1904	-	1930	-	Wellington	-	-
MATTSON, Johanna W.	1886	Munsala	1912	-	-	-	-
MATTSON, John Married later, returned to Finland, Hirvlax	1896	-	1913	-	Gisborne Cascade River	Bushfeller	1991
MATTSON, William Single -17	1894	-	1914	-	Gisborne	Bushfeller	-
MATTSON, Yrjo Ludvig,	1869	Tampere	-	-	St. Colliers Soldier, killed in France in action 1917	via Greymou.	
MATTSSON, Charlie Married	1864	-	1894	-	Auckland	Sailor	-
MATTSSON, Wilhelm	1870	-	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
MEMME, Wilhelm	1820	Oulu	1867	1886	Masterton	Scrubfeller	-
MEPLAINEN, John Single -17	1889	-	1917	-	Westport	Seaman	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
MERILÄ, Charles Wife and children in America	1876	Uusik.	1915	1920	Wellington	Night Watchm.	-
MICHELSON, Frederick W. Flora Ferguson, 1 daughter, marr. Auckland, ab. 1908	1880	-	ab.1898	-	Auckland	Seaman	1918
MICHELSON, Elias Married	1849	Nauvo	1874	1922	Dunedin	Sheepfarmer	-
MICKELSON, Charles 3 ch.	1861	Närpiö	1895	1903	Tarewa Napier	Farmlab. Ret.Pit Sawyer	1938
MIKANDER, Johan Albert Married -17	1862	-	1896	-	Dunedin	Shipwright	-
MILEN, Charlie Single -17	1890	-	1917	-	Napier	Sailor	-
MOLANDER, Otto Alex. Married, 3 ch.	1877	Mikkeli	1913	1938	Wanganui	Labourer	-
MONTEL, Charles Single -17	1873	-	1906	-	Te Puia, Hot Springs	Cook	-
MONTEL, Julius	1870	Turku	1905	-	Auckland 10 years in Austr.	Cook	1922
MUDERS, Edward	1889	-	-	-	Waitangi	Bushfeller	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
MYLIUS, George	1859	Tampere	1900	1903	Timaru	Mast. Mar.	1906
MYLLYOJA (Brown) Antti (Henry)	-	Kestilä	1906	-	Wanganui	-	1926
MÄÄTTÄ, (Jacob Johnson) Jaakko	1845	Muhos	-	-	Mokau	Seaman	1916
NEILSON, Alex Single -17	1889	-	1911	-	Gisborne	Bushfeller	-
NEILSON, Andrew (Anders) 1863 Widower, 1st w. in Finland d. 1912, 2nd marr. at Plymouth	1863	Lohtaja	1891	1933	Gisborne	Fisherman Labourer	1945
NEILSON, Charles W. Mary Broddcher, marr. at Feilding ab. 1888	1860	-	1883	-	Masterton	Labourer	1930
NEILSON, Eric Edward	1886	Munsala	1912	1946	Little Riv.	Labourer	-
NEILSON, (Stenbacka) Edw. Gunnar W. Aurelia Elizabeth Le Leivre	1909	Munsala	1930	1948	New Brighton	Milk Vendor	-
NELSON, Albert Married	1846	Turku	1866	1904	Wade Auckland	Gumdigger	1931
NELSON, Anders Will.	1891	-	1913	-	-	-	-
NELSON, Jacob	ab. 1865	-	1895	-	Auckland	Labourer	1905
NELSON, John Single -17	1895	-	1917	-	Whangai- moana	Labourer	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
NELSON, Niels Edward Married -15	1876	Krist. k. (America-Canada-Australia)	1910	1938	Invecarg.	Home- mission worker	-
NELSON (Jacobson), Nils	1851	Uusi- kaarlepyy	1886	1896	Masterton	Labourer	-
NENONEN, John Nestor Single -17	1890	-	1915	-	Te Kaha	Bushfeller	-
NEUSTROM, (Nystrom) August	1851	Vaasa	1882	1884	Lyttelton	Seaman	-
NEWMAN, Peter Herman w. Lily Gracy/ Gracia?, marr.	1862	Pietars. Akaroa	1885	1911	Akaroa Stratford	Farmlab.	1943
NEWMARK, Harry Alex.	1874	Helsinki	-	-	-	Mast. Marin.	-
NIELSEN, Anders Marr. twice, 3 sons from 1st marriage	1852	-	-	-	Palmerston	Farmer	1941
NIELSEN, Hilma Maria (F) Husb. Carl Nielsen, marr. about 1905 in Auckland, 5 ch.	1879	-	1903	-	Ponsonby	Dom. Dut.	1919
NIKANDER, John Albert	1861	Kisko	1895	1897	Christch. Queenstown	Carpenter	1928
NILSSON, Anders Wilh.	1866	-	1913	-	Auckland	-	-
NILSSON, Erik Edward	1886	Munsala	1911	-	-	-	-
NILSSON, August	1872	-	1896	-	-	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
NILSSON, Jakob	1870	-	-	-	Lyttelton	-	-
NILSSON, Johan Jakob	1867	-	1886	-	Auckland	-	-
NILSSON, Matts	1866	-	1886	-	Auckland	-	-
NILSSON-NYMAN, Axel Teodor	1888	Munsala	1909	-	Petone	Carpenter	1938
NIRAM, Emil Single -17	1889	-	-	-	Wellington	Seaman	-
NISKANEN, Lauri John	-	-	-	1951	-	-	1962
NISSAS, Anders Will.	1894	Munsala	1913	-	-	-	-
NISSAS, Erik Johan	1868	Munsala	1888	-	-	-	-
NIULAND (Nylund?), Mikael	-	-	-	-	Hawkes B.	Wharflab.	1874
NIUMAN, Karl Oskar W. Elisabeth Kasper, marr. at Mahurangi ab. 1909	1861	Turku	1884	1894	Auckland	Master Mar.	1927
NOORD, Victor Single -17	1884	-	1915	-	Auckland	Seaman.	1934
NORDBERG, Leonard Rob.	1864	Turku	1891	1902	Little R. Ashburton	Labourer	1935
NORDEN, Charles Ric.	1892	Vaasa	1928	-	Opotiki	Labourer	1938

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
NORDIN, Johan Oskar	1889	-	1913	-	-	-	-
NURMI, Kaarlo Single -17	1876	-	1916	-	Te Kaha	Bushfeller	-
NURMINEN, Isak M., See Apola							
NY, Gustav W. Elizabeth Westlake, 2 ch.	1857	Sundom	1879	1890	Georgetown	Labourer	1905
					Otepopo		
NY, John	1884	-	1902	-	Oamuru	Labourer	1904
NYBERG, August Israel W. Alice Wilson Ch. Margaret R., Dagmar E., Evert A. and George S.	1886	Helsinki	1906	1928	Waikawa	Fisherman	-
NYHOLM, Johan Jacob	1903	-	1925	-	Waiuku	Labourer	-
NYLAND, Axel Single -17	1892	-	1913	-	Whatatutu	Bushman	-
					Gisborne		
NYLUND (Karlson), Eric Edward W. Irene Hares Son Carl 1940	1895	Munsala	1926	1939	Tuai, Wairoa	Labourer	1967
	-	-	1938?	1939	Maymorn		
NYLUND, Harry Michael 1917-19 in USA W. Gertrud Maria Tilliacus	1916	Tammi- saari	1939	1951	Gisborne Napier	Waterside Worker	1990
NYMAN, Anders Hugo Married ab. 1930	1897	Munsala	1916	1932	Khandallah	Turner	1966
					Wellington		

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
NYMAN, Frans Otto	1896	-	1913	-	-	-	-
NYMAN, Fred Single -17	1897	-	1914	-	Tahunaroa	Fencer	-
NYMAN, Jack Single -17	1896	-	1914	-	Tahunaruoa	Shepherd	-
NYMAN, Thure Johann.	1895	-	1913	-	-	-	-
NYMARK, Harry	1875	Helsinki	1900	1902	Auckland	Seaman	-
NYQVIST, Anders	ab.1850	-	ab.1883	-	Te Kopura	Gumdigger	1886
NYSTRÖM, August	1851	Vaasa	1882	1884	Lyttelton	Seaman	-
NYSTRÖM, Karl Ingmar	1920	Ekenäs	1941	1967	Wellington Auckland	Seaman "Pamir"	-
NYSTROM, Oscar W. Jane Kay & 3 ch., marr. at Lyttelton	1858	Pietars.	1889	1899 ab. 1897	Lyttelton	Mariner Labourer	1932
NÄRÄNEN, Simo	1889	Rautu	1913	-	Lyttelton	Carpenter	-
OBERG, Charles	1852	Viipuri	1878	1892	Christch.	Carpenter	-
OGREN, Andrew W. Margaret Little & 1 son	1854	-	1875	1897	Invercarg. Riverton	Labourer	1904

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
OHLS, Johannes W.	1893?	-	1913	-	-	-	-
OHLS, Karl Johan	1853	Munsala	1883?	-	-	-	-
OHLS, Selim Single -17	1892	-	1913	-	Whatatutu	Bushman	-
OJALA, Konsta W. Florence Witheford Ch. Owen, Eric, Alam, Gilbert, Doreen	1880	Vironl.	1905	1911	Auckland Tauranga	Carpenter	1939
OJALA, Matti Konsta Ojala's brother, left soon for Australia and Finland	1883	Vironl.	1905	-	-	-	-
OLIN, Alex	1879	Turku	1902	1908	Auckland	Seaman	-
OLIN, Robert Single -17	1857	Vihti	1877	1886	Greymouth Waiuta in Tasmania as miner	Labourer Gold Miner	1923
ORNIA, Harry Single -17	1885	-	1909	-	Karamea	Bushman	-
ORNIO, Henrik	1883	Turku	1910	1925	Tekinga	Sawmiller	-
OSTERLUND, Erik August	1871	Åland	-	-	Greymouth Died in accident	Seaman	1907
OSTERMAN, Karl	1861	Turku	-	-	East Cape	Seaman	1899

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
PAHIKAINEN, Wilhelm Single -17	1893	-	1915	-	Horopito	Sawmillhand	-
PAULI, Matti Single -17	1851	-	1881	-	Green Mead.	Labourer	-
PEDERSEN, (Pederson, Cristof.) George Gustav W. Minnie Bailey	1873	Vaasa	1916	1926	Wellington	Seaman Carpenter	1931
PELTOLA, Johan Henrik	1886	Nousiai- nen	1915	1925	Auckland	Carpenter	-
PENTTINEN, Johannes	1886	-	1912	-	Lyttelton	-	-
PESONEN, Anders Mattias	1859	Munsala	1886	-	-	-	-
PETERSEN, Peter W. Ann Jane Murlin	1845	-	ab. 1878	-	Auckland Mariner	Master	1918
PETERSEN, Oscar, See Bjorkbom K. R.							
PETERSON, August	ab. 1879	-	-	-	Pigeon Bay	Labourer	1912
PETERSON, Charles Single -17	1863	Dago Is.	1907	1936	Fordell Putiki (1903-07 in Australia)	Farmlab. Seaman	-
PETERSON, Freed	1857	-	1887	-	Te Kopuru	Nightwatchm.	-
PETERSON, Peter Widower	1852	-	1876	1893	Auckland	Seaman	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
PETERSON, Peter	ab. 1856	–	–	1883	Hokianga Waiomorangi	Bushman	1886
PETTERSON, August	1836	Turku	1875	1895	Masterton	Labourer	–
PIPONIUS, John	1854	Iisalmi	–	–	Dunedin	Seaman	–
POLSON, Peter	1862	–	1900	–	Auckland	Mariner	1914
POLTILA, Jenny Loviisa (F) Husband Arthur Ruohonen	1907	Rauma	1924	–	Auckland	–	–
POLTILA, Naimi (F)	1912	–	1931	–	Auckland	–	–
POMERDY, Hyman	1879	Ripa	1906	1911	Wellington	Bootmaker	–
POPPS, Andrew	1858	Helsinki	1903	1906	Auckland	Seaman	–
POROLA, Oscar	1879	Kokemäki	1925	1938	Arapuni	P.W.D. Employ. – (13 years in Canada, cit. of Can.)	–
PULKKINEN, Urho Armas Single –17	1890	–	1917	–	Wellington	Seaman "Woolgar"	–
PYKÄLÄINEN, Taavetti	1883	–	1913	–	Lyttelton	–	–
PYY, Jacob	1842	–	1881	1914	Dannevirke	Labourer	–
PÄRSSINEN, Esaias Married, 3 ch.	1870	Ruokol.	1909	–	–	–	–

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
RANK, Erik Anders.	1865	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
RAY, John, See ROY							
REYNOLDS, John	1823	Rauma?	1868	1901	Kumeu Flat Waitemata	Gumdigger	-
RIKMAN, John 2nd w. Sarah Ann Gratton (form. Shaw)	1843	-	1869	-	Hamilton	Railway- serviceman	1909
RICKSON Erick "Snowy" moved to Australia	1907	-	-	-	-	Seaman (Union Steamship Co.)	-
ROCK, Frans Michael Moved to Australia, Queensland later Atherton Wife & 4 children	1881	Keuruu	1911	-	-	-	1934
ROCK, M. (F) Married	1890	-	1911	-	Whatatutu	Dom. Duties	-
ROCK, Otto W. Ida Adina Koskinen Marr. ab. 1912 in Durgaville, Ch. Mirjam 1912, Frederick 1922	1888	Keuruu	1909	1920	Matakana Whatatutu Gisborne	Labourer	1950
ROSE (Wahlroos), Charles	1858	Rauma	1881	-	Ahipara Mangonui	Gumdigger	1926
ROSNELL, Johan Eino Single -17	1890	Uusi- kirkko	1915	1929	Nelson	Seaman "Awatea"	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
ROSNELL, Otto Emil	1880	Uusikir.	1908	1937	Wellington Napier	Seaman	-
ROSTEN, John Gust.	1865	Uusik.	-	-	Auckland	Seaman	-
ROY (Röj), Isaac Single -17	1879	Maa- lahti	1901	-	Jackson B. Masterton	Labourer Shearer	1941
ROY (Röj), Johan W. Mary Sanders Ch. Cecil, Edwin, Ina, Freda	1863	Maalahti	1884	1893	Eketahuna Manga- tainoka	Farmer Builder	1948
RUNDBACKA, Anders Erikss. Married, 4 ch.	1851	Ähtävä	1886	-	-	-	-
RUNDBERG, Karl Holger	1920	Hammarl.	1941	1948	Wellington	Steward	-
RUNDLE, William Single -17	1891	-	1913	-	New Plym.	Sawyer	-
RUOHONEN, Frans Arthur W. Jenny Polttila	1898	Tyrvää	1926	1935	Auckland	Sailmaker	- 1980
RUTAS (Wilson), Anders Wilh.	1891	Wexala	1913	1939	Waimiha	Farmlab.	-
RUTAS, Matts	1877	-	1896	-	-	-	-
RÄISÄNEN, Otto Moved to Australia	-	-	-	-	Auckland	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
SAARINEN, Wilhelmina (F)	1892	Helsinki	1918?	-	-	-	-
SAIN, Len Single -17	1893	-	1916	-	Wellington "Monowai"	Fireman	-
SALO, Charles Single -17	1893	-	1914	-	Auckland	Seaman	-
SALO, John Married -17	1860	Raahe	1882	1905	Wanganui Brunswick	Timber Work.	-
SALONEN, Charles Vic.	1892	Helsinki	1913	1922	Auckland	Sailmaker	-
SALONEN, Francis Nestor w. Mildred Cornish & 3 ch. Marr. at Lyttelton ab. 1912	1886	Turku	1909	1913	Lyttelton	Seaman Labourer	1936
SALONEN, Frank Single -17	1892	-	1915	-	Waipiro B.	Carpenter	-
SAMBERG, Henry Aug. W. Amelia Esther Soppi Ch. Harriet 1877, Lena 1880, Ada 1881, Hannah 1882, Henry 1884, Agnes 1886, Lucy 1887, George 1890, Alfred 1891	1847	Kaskin.	1871	1894	Matakohe	Farmer	1926
SAND, (Sandos?) John Harry Married -17	1865	-	1883	-	Watawata	Dairyfarmer	-
SANDELIN, Otto Arne	1907	Helsinki	1924	1933	Waitaki	Hydro Electr.	-
SANDELIN, Otto Wilh.	1881	Helsinki	1912	1903	Christch.	Electrician	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
SANDELIN, Sigrid (F)	1893	-	1912	-	Christch.	Dom.Duties	-
SANDHOLM, Alfred Single	1886	-	1916	-	Palmerston North	Sawmiller	-
SANDHOLM, Carl Anders W. Maragaret Fleming & 3 ch.	1869	Turku	1902?	1905	Wellington Stratford	Carpenter Farmer	1914
SANDHOLM, Iven (Ivar?) Single -17	1896	-	1916	-	Palmerston North	Sawmiller	-
SANDMAN, Charles W. Cecilia McKay & 9 ch.	1850	-	1874	-	Christch.	Railw.empl.	-00
SANDOS, Karl Sigfrid	1869	Munsala	1901	-	Kaikoura	-	1916
SANDOS, John Henry w. Clara De Kierski, nee Schröder/Nicolest. Ch. Ivy Louisa 1893, Dolly & Tiny 1895, Eva May 1896, Archie Sigfrid 1898, Bert Magnus 1901, Venla Maria 1906	1864	Helsinki	1883	1907	Hamilton	Farmer	1940
SANDOS, Johan Henrik Father of the above, returned to Finland after 4-5 yrs.	1842	Munsala	1884?	-	Kaikoura	-	-
SANDOS, Maria Wilh. (F) H. James Leitch	1879	Munsala	1901	-	Kaikoura	-	1913?
SANDSTROM, Alexander	1850	Tammis.	1880	1901	Cardona Arrowtown	Miner	1901
SANDSTROM, Christian	1874	-	1910	-	Greenmead.	Sailor	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
SANDVIK, Johan	1856	Vaasa	1883	1901	Aratapu	Carpenter	-
SANDVIK, Johannes	1877	Pietars.	1899	1901	Dunedin Cashmere Christch.	Seaman Wharf.lab	1939
SARAN, (Saarinen) John (Joseph) W. Annie Clark & 4 ch., marr. in Auckland ab. 1897	1866	Turku	1898	1907	Auckland	Seaman	1928
SARELIUS, Waino Victor Married twice, 4 ch. Appointed 1923 vice-consul for Finland	1883	Tornio	1913	1920	Christch.	Masseur	-
SATAMA, Erik	1892	-	1913	-	Lyttelton	-	-
SCHAUMAN, Karl Osten	1874	Turku	-	1905	Sumner	Gentleman	-
SCOTT, Walter Severi Widower -17 W. Valency Agnes Widdowson, marr. at Stewart ab. 1918, 2 ch.	1876	-	1893 &1917	-	Stewart I. Invercargill	Eng. Driver	1933
SEDERSTRAND, Herman	1861	-	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
SEGER, Charles Single -17	1857	-	1917		Lyttelton	Seaman "Ionic"	-
SIIDER, Fred	1913	Viipuri	1941	1947	Wellington	Cabinetmaker	-
SIKANEN, Albin W. Amelia Elsie Major, marr. at Raetini ab. 1917, 2 sons	1888	Lapp.r.	1913	1924	Raetihi Franckton].	Millhand Sawmiller	1946

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
SIKESTROM, Isaac	1874	Munsala	1896	1899	Dargaville	Gumdigger	-
SIKSTRÖM, Johan Erik W. Maria Fredriksson, sister of Johan H. Henriksson moved back to Finland	1870	Munsala	-	-	-	-	1945
SILLIACUS, Joonas	1884	-	1914	-	Lyttelton	-	-
SIMMONS, F. Mrs. was in Australia before	-	-	-	-	Waymouth Beach	-	-
SIMONSON, Alexander	1859	Kokkola	1886	1902	Masterton	Carpenter	-
SIMONSON (Kokko), Isaac	1877	Oulu	1904	1909	Auckland Wellington	Mariner	1930
SINKKONEN, Kaarlo Single -17	1884	-	1916	-	Te Kaha	Bushfeller	-
SJOBLOM, Niklas	1863	-	1886	-	Auckland	-	-
SJOHOLM, Anders Johan	1852	-	1886	-	Auckland	-	-
SJOHOLM, Edvard	1872	Munsala	1888	-	Auckland	-	-
SJÖHOLM, Helena Sofia	1879	-	1913	-	-	-	-
SJOLUND, Victor Albert Single -17 Died in Finland	1865	Lemland	1905	1911	Mokau/	Seaman Launch-propr.	1936

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
SJOSTROM, Victor Widower	1866	Hammarl.	-	1904	Hamilton	Labourer	1933
SKRIVARS, Jakob Edward	1898	Munsala	1928	-	Pigeon B.	Farmer	-
SMEDS, Jacob w. Annie Allen, marr. in Auckl. -86?	1852	Vaasa	1880	1904	Ponsonby /Auckland	Labourer Millhand	1929
SMITH, Charles Victor, See Hellstrom I. W.							
SMITH, William	1850	-	1882	-	Kawakawa	Gumdigger	1894
SMOLANDER, Charles Married -17 (not married according to another source)	1851	Myrskylä	1878	1890	Dunedin Halfmoon B. Invercargill	Seaman Fisherman	1928
SODERHOLM, Hans Single -17	1892	-	1915	-	Wanganui "Inga"	Seaman	-
SOLIN, Matts Hugo	1895	Kruunup.	1923	-	Bay of P.	Labourer	-
SOLNESS, Jean Elizabeth h. Tuomo Solness	-	-	-	1936	Takapuna, Auckland	-	-
SOLNESS, Tuomo Tuisku Married	1889	Kurikka	1935	1936	Takapuna (USA -24, Austr. -25 -35)	Mech. Eng.	-
SPAAN. John W. Elizabeth Esther Rich & 2 ch.	1864	Vaasa	1887	1901	Lyttelton Christchurch	Shipcarpenter	1919

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
SPOLANDER, Jonathan	1870	Lapfjärd	1902	1905	Ngawau /Westport	Farmer Railw.labourer	1909
SPOLANDER, Victor	1852	Pietars.	1893	1902	Manaia Whangarei	Labourer Nightport.	1917
STENBACKA, Edward	1890	-	1909	-	Lyttelton	-	-
STENBACKA, Johan Jakob M.	1870	Munsala	1886	-	-	-	-
STENBERG (Steinberg), Frans Wilhelm	1853	Rauma	1885	-	Hokitika	Labourer	1933
STENVATTEN (Henrickson), Alfred	1888	Purmo	1926	1938	Reefton Owhango	Farmlab. Labourer	1947
STIMPSON, Francis John	1894	-	1913	-	Motuhora	Bushman	-
STONE, Eli, See Kivi Elias							
STORM, Arvo Alex. W. Betty (d. 1971), son Graham	1897	Pietari	1914	1919	Wellington Motueka Auckland later	Engineer Farm Ass.	1978
STRANDBERG, Emil	1876	Turku	1900	1903	Aratapu	Seaman	-
STROM, Charles O. W.	1884	Turku	1906	1911	Te Hord Paekakariki	Farmlab. Soldier	- 1917
STUBB, Jakob Jakobss.	-	-	-	-	Canterbury	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
STYRIS,							
Johannes	1876	Malax	1897	1899	Eketahuna	Sawmillh.	1957
W. Agatha Mary McMillan					Wanganui		
Ch. John 1906							
SUDER, See Siider							
SUDERLUND, (Söderlund) (see Sutherland)							
Erik	1847	Uusi-	-	1887	Brunnerton	Labourer	1917
W. Sofia Henrickson		kaarlepyy		Greymouth			
Ch. Olga Sofia, 2 sons							
SUND,							
Victor Albert	1861	Pietars.	1879	1887	Dargaville	Carpenter	1912
W. Mary Teresa de Valley, marr. 1888 Auckland							
SUNDELL,							
Anders	1858	Munsala	1878	-	-	-	-
SUNDELL,							
Anders	1892	-	1915	-	Whatatutu	Bushman	-
SUNDELL,							
Edward Gabr.	1872	Munsala	1888/	-	Lyttelton	Farmer	1955
W. Hilda Hermansson, b. 1879 1917 (2nd)					Opotiki		
Ch. Elvira 1906 and Hugo 1909						1900 in South-Africa	
SUNDELL,							
Edward	1888	Munsala	1925	-	-	Labourer	-
SUNDELL,							
Jakob	1854	Munsala	1888	-	Lyttelton	-	-
W. Anna Louisa b. 1852							
Ch. Ellen b. 1880, Jacob b. 1888							
SUNDELL,							
John Peter	1845	Kokkola	1868	1890	Greymouth	Mast. Mar.	-
SUNDELL,							
John Robert	1893	Uusik.	1912	1928	Wellington	Carpenter	-
/Munsala							

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
SUNDELL, Wiljam	1892	-	1909	-	Lyttelton	-	-
SUNDHOLM, Karl Arthur	1905	Munsala	1930	-	Wellington	Construct. worker	1981
SUNDQUIST, Anders Anders.	1861	-	1886	-	Auckland	-	-
SUNDQUIST (Carlson), Erik	1874	Munsala	1893	1899	Dargaville	Gumdigger	-
SUNDQUIST, John	1874	Helsinki	1899	-	Taumaruinui Utiku	Railwaylab.	1922
SUNDQUIST, Karl	1854	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
SUNDQUIST, Karl Gunnar	1906	Munsala	1928	1928	Auckland	Farmer	-
SUNDVICK, August	1877	Vaasa	1896	1935	Pio Pio	Farmer	
W. Elsie Bermel, marr. ab.	1919				Te Kuiti		1937
Ch. Edith 1920, Arthur 1923, Ola 1925, Eric 1927, Frank 1930							
SUNDVIK, Eles	1893	-	1912	-	Christch.	Labourer	1913
SUNDVIK, John	1854	-	ab. 1886	-	Tokatoka	Carpenter	1916
SUOMINEN, Hjalmar Aug.	1889	Paimio	1911	1920	Hokianga	Farmer	1937
W. Maungaroamore Tukuriri, marr. at Totara N. ab.	1929						
SUTHERLAND, (see Suderlund) Erik	1848	-	1883	-	Duvauchel-	Independ.	-
W. Sophia Harrison 1854-1912, 2 sons					les Bay		

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
SUVANTO, Armas Veikko "Isbelle De Freine" shipwrecked at Hokianga	1906	Helsinki	-	-	-	Seaman	1928
SVARTNÄS, Erik Johan	1869	Munsala	1888?	-	-	-	-
SWANBACK, Arthur Albin	1889	Helsinki	1911	1922	Whatutū	Labourer	-
SYAHOLM, Sofia (F) Single -17	1882	-	1914	-	Little River	Housemaid	-
SÖDERHOLM, Harry wife maori	1925	Turku	1948	-	Wellington	Boilermaker form. seaman	-
SÖDERLUND, Erik Johans. W. Sofia Rausk Ch. Olga Sofia b. 1883	1847	Uusi- kaarlepyy	1893	-	Brunnerton	Labourer	1917
SÖDERLUND (née Rausk), Sofia (F) H. Erik Söderlund	1854	-	1893	-	Brunnerton	-	-
SÖDERLUND, Olga Sofia H. Erik Johan Holm	1883	-	1893	-	Brunnerton	-	-
TAIVAL, Alfred	1896	-	1916	-	Wanganui "Inga"	Seaman	-
TALLBERG, Carl	1857	Loviisa	1887	1896	Masterton	Labourer	-
TALLQUIST, Gustaf Adolf	1858?	Helsinki	1883?	1903	Auckland	Seaman Labourer	1919

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
TALMINON, Arthur	1890	-	1916	-	Te Kaha	Bushfeller	-
TAMMELIN, Ernest	1862	-	1900	-	Auckland	Seaman	1907
TAONRD, Andrew	1851	-	1875	-	Tenui	Roadman	-
TEIR, Isak Edward	1901	Munsala	1925	-	Stoke Ngawhatu	-	1943
TELENIUS, Carl Bernh. 1st w. Lydia Walker 2nd w. Eliza Dickens, 1 son	1842	Uusik.	1879	1890	Nelson Wakefield	Draper	1931
THOMSEN, Einar Wald.	1896	-	1914	-	Wheturau	Bushman	-
THOMSON, Charles Alf.	1865	Ekenäs	1885	1902	Auckland	Seaman	-
THOMSON, Edwin	1855	-	1915	-	Gisborne	Gardener	-
THOMSON, Edwin	1892	-	1909	-	Wheturau	Bushman	-
THOMSON, John Edwin (Obviously same as above) W. Aino Karoliina Tobiasson Ch. Mary -17, two adopted sons	1891	Viipuri	1909	1937	Gisborne	Pelt Grader	1976
TILLAEUS, Joonas Sant. W. Senni Maria, 2 ch.	1881	Viipuri	1914	1923	Pigeon B. Gisborne	Stat. Hand	1936
TILLAEUS, Kerttu Maria (F)	1909	Ruokol.	1925	-	Pigeon B.	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
TILLAEUS, Senni Maria (F) Husb. Joonas Tillaeus	1886	Ruokol.	1925	-	Pigeon B.	-	-
TINDELL, Gustav Adolp.	1858	-	1882	-	Lower Hutt	Servant	-
TOBIASSON, Oscar, See HILL, Oscar							
TOIVARI, Eino	1892	-	1916	-	Wellington	Seaman	-
TOLOSEN (Tolson), Lance Tahvetti W. Ellen Robertson Ch. John 1916, Bruce 1920, Catherine 1922	1888	Uusik.	1910	1925	Stewart I. Halfmoon B.	Labourer Sawmiller Boatbuilder	1961
TORNSTROM, Peter Hjalmar	1873	Naant.	1901	1913	Wanganui	Sailmaker	1932
TRÄSK, Erick Johann.	1870	Munsala	1894	-	Papakura	Labourer Gumdigger	1906
W. Annie Speer & 4 ch. (2nd husb. Joh. Haapala)							
URWIN, (Lundgren) Francis Vic. W. Emma Brown Ch. Edith 1879, Albert 1881, Victor 1882, Henriette 1888, William 1889, Fred 1895, Ida May 1897	1844	Uusik.	1867	1900	Hohoura Auckland	Farmer Butcher	1933
WAHLROOS, See Rose							
WAICK, John	1866	-	ab. 1889	-	Auckland	Seaman	1909
WAHLSTEDT, John	1863	Kemiö	1898	1902	Rakaia Gorge, Can.	Baker	-

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
WALKER, John W. Anna Elizabeth Martin	1840	-	1870	-	Ashburton	Carpenter	1905
VASKA, Joseph	1889	-	1915	-	Hurimoana	Labourer	-
VERTINAN, Victor Alex.	1896	Vehmaa	1920	1920	Auckland Dunedin	Cook	-
WANHALLA, (Antti Vanhala) Andrew W. Henrietta Mehlhopt 2 daughters	1852	Hailuoto	1881	-	Tai Tapu, Clarence Br., Marlbor.	Fisherman	1923
WASS, George Wil. went back to Finland, family stayed in N.Z.	1891	Rauma	1916	1924	Petone	Labourer	- 1962
WAST, Abraham W. Jane Maraetaia Ch. Helena 1894, Henrietta 1897, Karl J. 1898, Thomas W. 1900	1845	Bergo	1876	1896	Stewart I. Halfmoon B.	Fisherman	1923
WASTROM, Carl	1835	-	1862	-	Auckland	-	1911
WEST, Erik	1823	Vaasa	1854	1883	St. Albans	Carpenter	-
WESTERBERG, Aron	1862?	-	1887	-	Waipiro B. Walapu	Farmlab. Station Hand	1918
WESTERHOLM, Otto W. Gerda Blixt, married in 1881 Ch. Elizabeth 1881, Oscar 1886, Clara 1887, Sydney 1888, Herbert 1890, Norman 1894	1851	Turku	1874	1890	Palmerst. N.	Labourer	1899

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
WESTERLING, Frans Henry	1828	Rauma	1860?	-	Wairau	Labourer	1890
WESTERLUND, Andrew	1852	Loviisa	1888	1924	Dannevirke Tipapakuku	Labourer	1937
WEXTRAM, Carl	1841	Porvoo	1875	1904	Riverhead	Labourer	-
WHITBERG, ("Russian-Jack") John Herman	1850	Uusik.	1879	1922	Methven	Farmlab.	-
WICKMAN, Adolf Alex.	1855	Helsinki	1885	1893	Karori "	Labourer Dairyfarmer	-
WICKMAN, Johan	1841	-	1882	1893	Eketahuna	Labourer	-
WIDBERG, Niklas Emil	1900	Munsala	1925	-	-	Labourer	-
WIDERSTROM, Uno T. G. W. Winnifred Tannion & 5 ch	1856	Vaasa	1883	1887	Napier	Sailmaker Mast. Mar.	1937
WIJK, Emil	1882	-	1909	-	-	-	-
WIJK, Jakob	1887	-	1909	-	-	-	-
WIK, Alice Ing. (F)	1914	Munsala	1921	1937	Waiuku	Nursing	-
WIK, Birger Wilh.	1906	Munsala	1921	1931	Waiuku	Farmer	1934

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
WIK, (née Nylund)							
Ida Eliz. (F)	1885	Munsala	1921	-	Waiuku	-	1934
Husb. Anders Wik							
Ch. Birger -06, Alice -14							
WIK,							
Wilh. Anders	1876	Munsala	1921	-	Waiuku	Farmer	1927
W. Ida Nylund							
Ch. Birger W. 1906, Alice I. 1914							
WIKLUND,							
Anders Matts.	1864	-	1886	-	Canterbury	-	-
WILLIAMS, (Vidlund)							
Charles	1845	Vaasa	1868	1921	Oamaru	Labourer	-
W. Emily Raymond, 6 ch.							
WILLIAMS,							
John	1830	-	-	-	Auckland	Mariner	1894
WILS,							
John Felix	1868	-	1895	-	Dunedin	Bricklayer	1904
WILSON, Andrew, See RUTAS, A.							
WILSON,							
Andrew Wilh.	1892	-	1914	-	Waitangi	Bushfeller	-
WILSON,							
Arnold Peter	1888	Turku	1904	1927	Martinbor.	Contractor	1962
WILSON,							
Carl	1869	Turku	1903	1907	Te Kopuru	Seaman	-
WILSON, (same person as above?)							
Carl	1869	-	-	-	Auckland	Labourer	-
WILSON,							
Edward	-	-	-	-	Little R. Christch.	Bootmak.	1930's

Name	Born	Parish	Arr.	Nat.	Residence	Occupat.	Died
WILSON, Francis Vic.	1881	Turku	1903	1912	Wellington	Mariner	-
WINDSOR, Frederick	1850	Kaskinen	1873	1907	Mangawai	Labourer	-
WIRE, Antton Paul	1894	Forssa	1914	1925	Cape Runaw. Kahukura	Contractor Labourer	-
VIRTANEN, Aleksi	-	-	-	-	-	Cook	-
Escaped 1914 together with Arvo Storm.							
VIRTANEN Sulo	1885	Jämsä	1913	-	Runanga	Coalminer	-
WHITTINGTON (Koivunen?), Anna Wilh.	1884	-	1905	-	Oneroa	Dom. Duties	-
1st h. obv. Severi Koivunen, arr. from Austr.							
WONOLANNA, Charles	1893	-	1917	-	Wellington "Wolgar"	Sailor	-
YERN, Johannes	1862	Vaasa	1891	1911	Swanson	Farmer	1913
1st wife in Australia, Herminia Sochtig							
2nd w. Sarah Ellen Tidyman							
Ch. George, David 1904, Albert Johannes 1907							
YERN, Frans August	1879	Vaasa	1904	-	Oamaru	Labourer	1909
W. Selma Ny, 2 daughters, marr. in Vaasa ab. 1903							

Appendix II: Finns to New Zealand after 1949

Uncomplete. Compiled mainly from the immigration files (NZIS)

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
AHONEN, (form. Torvinen)								
Signe Margit Divorced	1907	Saloinen	-	1956	-	New Plym.	Cook	-
AITTAMÄKI,								
Aulis U.	1932	-	Pori	-	-	Tokoroa	-	-
ALLEN, (née Rytönen)								
Riitta Anneli husb. David Allen Ch.: Michael	1947	Joroinen	Hel- sinki	1983	-	Tauranga	Clerk back to Finland	-
ANTTILA, (née Sihtola)								
Arja Liisa husb. Olavi Anttila Ch.: 2 children in Finland Oona	1943	Helsinki	Espoo	1990	-	Dunedin	Nurse	-
ANTTILA,								
Olavi Olli w. Arja Sihtola	1937	Kauha- joki	Espoo	1990	-	Dunedin	Psychiat.	-
ANSELL/GRIFFIN (née Rantonen)								
Marja-Liisa 1. husb. Roger Ansell NZ, divorced 2. husb. David Griffin Ch.: Jason	1947	Pyhä- järvi	Nigeria	1970	1977	Tauranga Hamilton Auckland	Toll Op.	-
Ch.: Jason 1970 Tauranga, Adrian 1979 England								
ARPONEN,								
Hannu Armas w. Inkeri Siitonen Ch.: Soile	1934	Ruokol.	Imatra	1962	-	Kawerau	Pap.Mach. Tender	-
Ch.: Soile 1955 Imatra, Eija 1961 Imatra								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
BJORK,								
Sigurd Mikael	1906	Kokkola	Hel-sinki	1951	-	Auckland	-	-
w. Hellin Deppene?	1918							
Ch.:Elsie Elizabeth	1951							
BJÖRK,								
John August.	1912	Kokkola	Hel-sinki	1951	1963	Auckland	Harbour Worker	-
w. Maj-Lis Karlsson					?			
Ch.:Solveig	1942	Helsinki	(marr. Lancaster,	appl. nat. 1962),				
Marianne	1953	Auckland	(marr. Brock)					
BLARAMBERG von, (née Turunen)								
Elsa Marjatta	1927	Sortavala	Eng-land	1954	-	Wellingt. Auckland Tauranga	Wages Clerk	-
Ch.:Taina	1963	Tauranga						
BROWN, (née Malinen)								
Aino Maria	1948	Pielavesi	Ger-many	1982	-	Auckland	Clerk	-
husband NZ								
Ch.:Jason	1986,	Katie	1990					
BROWN, (née Nieminen)								
Sirpa Helinä	1949	Angelnieniemi	Can-berra	1969	1980	Palmerst. North	Waitress	-
husb. Hohepa Brown								
BUNTING, (née Harju)								
Pirjo	1949	Jyväskylä	Queenst. Tasmania	1974	-	Hamilton	-	-
husb. Keith Bunting								
BURGESS,								
Aino	See Sallinen, Aino							

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
CHRISTIANSEN, Jerm Thorwald w. Aune Irene Lähtevänoja	1911	Kymi	-	1948	1960	Tokoroa	Super Intendent	1970
CHYDENIUS, Pia Margareeta Single	1946	Juan- koski	Juank.	1964	-	Kawerau	Schoolg.	-
COWLRICK, (née Kuusisto) Irmeli Katar. husb. Brian Cowlrick Ch.:Sacha Ellen	1941	Pori	London	1973	-	Auckland	Housew.	-
	1938	NZ						
	1975	Auckland,	David Peter	1977	Auckland			
DOWDESWELL, (née Pusa) Hilkka-Liisa husb. Peter Dowdeswell Ch.: Marko	1946	Lem- päälä	Eng- land	1984	-	Auckland	Graphic Artist	-
	1942							
	1974	England,	Kathleen	1977	England			
ELGAR, Kaisu Lea husb. John Elgar Ch.: Kai, Nils	1940	Maa- ninka	Eng- land	1970	19	Wellingt.	Secretary	
GARAM, Veli Janos w. Aino Maria Antti Ch.: Viivi	1949	Hel- sinki	Kark- kila	1988	-	Wellingt.	Systems Programm.	-
	1943							
	1971	Rovaniemi,	Salla	1977	Karkkila			
GEELEN, J. Alexander w. Marie Heybroeck & 3 ch. father Dutch, mother Russian	1916	Hel- sinki	Amster- dam	1952	-	Hamilton	Electric. Engineer	-

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
GERMAN, (née Martikainen)								
Seija Marjatta	1954	Lapin- lahti	Eng- land	1975	1979	-	-	-
husb. Keith German 1948								
GRAHAM, (née Annala)								
Oili Onerva	1935	Hauki- pudas	Eng- land	1974	1980	Auckland	Housewife	-
husb. Percival Graham								
Ch.: Sirpa 1965, England, Richard 1967, England								
GRÖNFORS,								
Martti Jarkko	1942	Tam- pere	Valkea- koski	1968	1973	Wellingt.	Probat. Officer	-
w. Jill Kersey NZ 1939								
HAHL,								
Birger Holger	1930	Lapp.r.	Kemi	1962	-	Kawerau	Papermill Worker	-
w. Raili Viitakangas 1931								
went to Australia 1967								
Ch.: Marja 1950 Kemi (marr. Apostolidis), Ari 1954 Kemi, Rauli 1955 Kemi, Eeva 1962								
HALL, (née Jägerroos)								
Irmeli Krist.	1931	Helsinki	S.Afr.	1977	1978	Auckland	Housewife	-
husb. Victor Hall 1915 NZ								
Ch.: Eric 1958 S. Afr., Susannah 1959 S. Afr., Reginald 1961 S. Afr.								
HALONEN,								
Aili Tuulikki	1915	Viipuri	London	1952	1959	-	Dom. Dut.	1987
Single, later married Sulo Kanerva								
HANSENS, (née Viitanen)								
Anneli Ritva	1944	Kontio- lahti	Eng- land	1971	-	Auckland	Housew.	-
husb. David Hanssens								
Ch.: Julian 1969 England, Thor 1973 Auckland, Nathan 1981 Auckland								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
HARJU, Viljo Robert Divorced, married later	1935	Lavans.	Hel- sinki	1964	-	Tokoroa	Millhand	-
Gna (NZ), many ch.								
HATTINEN, Merja Divorced, married later Ch.: Liisa-Kaarina	1956	Helsinki	London	1981	-	Wellingt.	Clerk	-
Peter Howman 1983 Wellington								
HENDRY, (née Suikkanen) Terttu Husband Robert Hendry Ch.: Annika, Stefan	1947	Pori	Ger- many	1975	-	Wellingt.	Office Manager	-
HIIPAKKA, (later Stewart) Aulik. Hannele Single, married later Grant Ch.: Mikael	1956	Töysä	Töysä	1984	-	Auckland	Housew.	-
Thomas 1987 Auckland, James 1991 Auckland								
HILL, Sirkka-Liisa husb. Peter Hill	1943	Turku	Engl.	1963	-	-	-	-
1935 NZ								
HILTUNEN, Kauko Kalevi Single	1945	Helsinki	-	1973	-	Auckland	Carpenter	-
HOLM, (née Lagnäs) Dorothy Kate husb. Erik Martin Holm	1927	Munsala	-	1972	-	Pakuranga	Dom. Dut.	-
1913 (arrived 1930, son of Eric J. Holm)								
HOLM, (née Backlund) Gerda Margar. husb. Johannes Holm	1925	Helsinki	Vaasa	1972	-	Pukekohe	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
HOLOPAINEN,								
Eero Ilmari	1922	Laurit- sala	Jout- seno	1956	-	Tokoroa	Papermill Operator	-
w. Hilja 1926								
Returned to Finland 1959								
Ch.: Marit 1952 Sweden, Ilkka 1953 Sweden								
HUHTALA,								
Lynn Single	1954	Alberta, Canada	Canada	1983	-	Dunedin	Uni.Stud.	-
HYVÖNEN,								
Toivo Heikki	1911	Juan- koski	Kotka	1953	-	Tokoroa	Kamyr Operator	-
Widower								
Returned to Finland 1954								
Ch.: Aira 1941, Pekka 1944								
HYYTIÄ,								
Voitto Väinämö	1930	Hel- sinki	Hel- sinki	1959	-	-	-	-
w. Maria 1932								
HÄGGLUND,								
Kurt Selim R. Single	1935	Vaasa	Vaasa	1958	-	Kawerau Auckland	-	-
Returned to Finland								
HÄGGLUND,								
Göran Rafael Single, brother of Kurt Hägglund	1936	Vaasa	Vaasa	1958	-	Kawerau Auckland	-	-
Married later								
Ch.: Peter 1963 Auckland								
Benny 1967 Auckland								
Roger 1968 Auckland								
HÄNNINEN,								
Arvo Albin w. Lyyli 1909	1909	Kotka	Karhula	1954	-	Kawerau	Caustic Operator	-
Returned to Finland 1958								
Ch.: Arvo 1935 Kotka, Maija 1948 Kotka								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
ILASKARI, Heli and Heikki	-	-	-	-		Auckland		-
JAKOSUO, Pertti Sakari w. Leonore Cowie	1938	Suojärvi	Austral.	1961	-	Invercar.	-	-
JALAVA, Lauri Uuras J. w. Marja-Terttu Väänttinen Ch.: Ari Tomi Kawerau	1930	Rauma	Pori 1930	1954	1976	Kawerau	Sulph. Cook	-
JONES, Pauline	-	-	-	-	-	Little R.	Psychiat.	-
JUUSELA, Kaarle Väinö w. Irja Ch.: Pekka Returned to Finland	1913	Lahti	Lohja	1954	-	Tokoroa	Papermill Worker	-
JUVONEN, Olavi Single	1937	Kiven- napa	Darwin Austral.	1961	-	-	Welder	-
JÄHI, Pentti Juhani w. Raija Ravi Ch.: Tia Nina	1950	Hamina	Riihi- kallio	1989 ?	-	Auckland	Managing Director	-
JÄRVINEN, Bruno Kalervo w. Kerttu Selander Ch.: Arja Jukka	1925	Pälkäne	Kotka	1954	-	Kawerau	Sulphate Cook	-
JÄÄSKELÄINEN, Kari Aarre E. Single	1938	Sakkola	Hamina	1962	-	Kawerau	Dryerm.	-

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
KAAPRO, Toivo Kuller. w. Maire 1933 Nat. Canadian	1924	Viipuri	Van- couver	1961	-	Kawerau	Timber- hand	-
KAARTE, Esko Aarne w. Ida Hyytiä 199 Ch.: Eeva 1946, Riitta 1949, Maija 1952	1917	Ähtäri	Kotka	1954	-	Kawerau	Paper Engineer	-
KAJAVALA, Toivo w. Kyllikki Ch.:Jalo Tapio 1947 Pori (nat. 1975)	1924	Pori	Para- quay	1962	-	Murupara	Forest Work	-
KALJUNEN, Reino Veikko w. Laura 1929 Ch.: Maria 1957	1930	Rautjär.	Imatra	1954	-	Rotorua Tokoroa Papamoa	Electric. Fitter	-
KARHUNEN, Reima Olavi Single	1929	Viipuri	Jokela	1950	1956	-	Seaman Labourer	-
KARJALAINEN, Matti Johann. w. Aune Tapio 1926	1907	Paltamo	Oulu	1954	1965	Kawerau	Kiln Operator	1989
KERÄNEN, Ida Single, married later Martti Korhonen 1923	1917	Rist- järvi	Eng- land	1952	1958	Wellingt.	Dom. Dut.	-
KERÄNEN, Ilta Inkeri Single	1928	Oulu	London	1952	1964	Wellingt. Auckland	Dom. Dut.	-
KILJUNEN, Verner w. Anna-Liisa Vakkari 1910 Returned to Finland	1918	Muolaa	Kotka	1953	-	Tokoroa	Flakt Dr. Operator	-

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
KUNTONEN,								
Paavo Henrik Single Probably went to Canada	1940	Iitti	Tikku- rila	1967	-	Kawerau Met.Work.	Sheet	-
KUNTONEN,								
Juho Fredrik Single	1940	Iitti	Tikku- rila	1964	-	Kawerau	Sheet Met.Work.	-
KUUSINEN,								
Lauri Kyösti w. Paula Riihimäki	1926	Längel- mäki	Toronto Canada	1957	-	Auckland	Welder	-
KÄRKI,								
Jouko w. Else-Maj Tirinen Ch.: Ritva 1947 Oulu, Terho 1949 Oulu, Eeva Kawerau	1912	Liekksa 1924	Oulu	1955	1977	Kawerau	Paper Technic.	-
KÄRKKÄINEN,								
Viljo Aabel w. Kerttu Sylvia Ch.: Raimo 1945 Kymi, Pauli 1948 Kymi	1918	Kymi 1920	Sunila	1954	-	Kawerau	Evaporat. Operator	1981
KÄRNÄ,								
Esko Johann Single Probably returned to Finland	1939	-	Hel- sinki	1967	-	-	-	-
LAAKKONEN,								
Jaana Single ?	1964	-	-	1988	-	Auckland	Nanny	-
LAJUNEN, (née Luotsinen, form. Andersson)								
Maria Margaret husb. Kyösti Lajunen Ch.: Peter 1967 (from 1st marr.), Brolwyn 1972 (from Kyösti's 1st marr.) Katrina 1974 (from Kyösti's 1st marr.)	1945	Kok- kola	Swe- den	1986	-	Tokoroa	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
LAJUNEN, Paul Olof	1916	Parik- kala	Sunila	1953	1977	Tokoroa	Machine Operator	1985
w. Hilja Lääperi 1918								
Ch.: Kirsti 1941 Kymi (married Wilson, USA), Kyösti 1942 Kymi, Kai 1947 Kymi (died 1985), Jukka 1957 Tokoroa (lives in Australia), Sirpa Tokoroa (married Joyce)								
LAULAJAINEN, Veikko	1931	Sakkola	Oulu	1962	-	-	-	-
w. Iris Anneli 1927								
Ch.: Hanna 1958 Pori								
LARM af, Osmond Olaf	1928	Sipoo	Austral.	1974	-	Auckland	Lawyer	-
Divorced								
Ch.: Jack 1963 Australia, Jerry 1964 Australia, John 1966 Australia, Leann 1970 Australia								
LAYCOCK, (Kykkänen) Merja Tellervo	1947	Hel- sinki	Hel- sinki	1970	-	Dunedin Timaru	Librar.	-
husb. Rodger Laycock 1938 (British)								
Ch.: Angela 1972, Liisa 1973, Suvi M. 1977								
LEHTINEN, Ari	-	-	Hel- sinki	1986	-	Kawerau	Student	-
Single?								
LEINONEN, Ahti Ensio	1929	Kemi	Kemi	1959	-	Kawerau	Papermill Worker	-
Single								
LEMPIÄINEN, Heikki Juhani	1938	Ruokol.	Vuoks.- niska	1962	-	Kawerau	Papermill Worker	-
w. Hilka Ekholm 1939								
Ch.: Marja-Leena 1957								
Returned to Finland								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
LINDFORS, Kaino Sinikka Single	1931	Pälkäne	Vieru- mäki	1957	-	Auckland	Nurse	-
LINDEN-SAFIOTTI, Eija Marita husb. Carl Safiotti	1957 1950	Hel- sinki NZ	Austral.	1988	-	Auckland	Sales Assistant	-
LUJANEN, (née Torvinen) Britta Liisa	1928	Kemi	Hel- sinki	1956	-	Kawerau	Mat.Nurse	-
Divorced, married later Hannu Mustonen Ch.: Jouko 1947 (from 1st marr.), 3 other children								
LUKKARINEN, Toivo Aaro Single	1921	Lapinl.	Canada	1955	-	Kawerau	Logger?	1959
LYDIARD, (née Lehtonen) Eira husb. Arthur Lydiard	1939	Turku	Vieru- mäki	1972	-	Auckland	Fys. ed. Teacher	1984
MADGWICK, (née Varjoluoto) Eine Kaarina husb. Kenneth Madgwick	1935	Suis- tamo	Eng- land	1966	1977	-	-	-
Ch.: Karen 1963, Sonia 1965								
MAJURI, Eija husb. Buckley Warwick	1959	Jyväs- ki	Espoo	1989	-	-	-	-
Ch.:Tommi 1983								
MAKHIJA, (née Koskinen) Irja Marjatta husb. Jewahar Makhija	1942	Lap- pi Tl.	Eng- land	1968	-	Te Kuiti	Housew.	-
Ch.:Nina 1967 London, Linda 1969 Te Kuiti, Susan 1975 Auckland								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
MANNER, (née Harju)								
Ulla Maija	1942	Kotka	Austral.	1974	-	Onehunga, Auckland	Office reception	-
divorced 1968								
Ch.:Sini Johanna 1966								
MANSIKKA,								
Taimi Viola	1935	Ruokol.	Imatra	1964	-	Rotorua	Dressmak.	-
Single, married in NZ Edwin Anderson								
MAURANEN,								
Kiira	1943	Hel-sinki	Hel-sinki	1969	-	Auckland	Economist	-
Single, married later John M. Sheppard								
MERIKALLIO,								
Timo H. Tapani	1955	Helsinki	Espoo	1983	-	Tokoroa	Process Engineer	-
w. Camilla Kraatz 1958								
Back to Finland 1985								
MUSTONEN,								
Veikko Feliks	1912	Kymi	Sunila	1954	-	Kawerau	Evaporat. Operator	-
w. Liisa Härmä 1921								
Ch.:Hannu 1935 Kymi (nat.), Raili 1941 Kymi, Jorma 1948, Jukka 1952, Antero Kawerau								
MYLLÄRINEN,								
Anna-Liisa M.	1926	Jout-seno	Sunila	1955	-	Tokoroa	-	-
Single Christch.								
MYLLÄRINEN,								
Edward	1909	Joutseno	Sunila	1953	-	Tokoroa	Caustic Operator	1987
w. Elin Ryhänen 1910 (died 1970)								
Ch.:Anna-Liisa 1926 (adopt.), arriv. 1955, Leo 1927 (adopt.), arriv. 1955, Terttu 1943 (mar. Tito, nat. 1985?)								
MYLLÄRINEN,								
Leo Edward	1927	Joutseno	Sunila	1963	-	Tokoroa	Papermill Worker	-
w. Helvi 1930								
Ch.:Silja 1949 Karhula, Seppo 1950 Karhula								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
MÄKELÄ,								
Eino Ilmari w. Helmi	1916	Pälkäne	Valkea- koski	1954	1976	Kawerau	Evaporat. Operator	-
Ch.:Jorma 1937 Sääksmäki, Jouko 1944 Valkeak., Jukka 1945 Valkeak., Mirja 1948 Valkeak. (marr. Couveld, nat. 1979), Seppo 1954 Valkeak.								
MÖLSÄ,								
Kauko Matti w. Maire Martikainen	1936	Imatra	Imatra	1962	-	Kawerau Worker	Papermill	-
Ch.:Mirja 1959 Hamina Returned to Finland								
NIEMINEN,								
Rainer Johan. Single	1924	Turku	Austral.	1953	-	Tokoroa	Papermill Worker	-
Returned to Finland, Turku 1956								
NUMMINEN,								
Saritiina	1961	Kajaani	USA	1986	-	Auckland	Reception	-
Came second time to NZ 1989, returned to Finland 1991								
NURKKA,								
Toivo w. Aili	1911	Savi- taipale	Sunila	1954	-	Kawerau	Caustic Operator	1987
Ch.:Tauno 1941 Kotka, Osmo 1943 Kotka, Vesa 1945 Kymi (nat. 1969), Irma 1947 Kymi, Matti 1950 Kymi (nat. 1972), Henna Kawerau								
NURMI,								
Aimo Armas Single	1936	Toho- lampi	Austral.	1961	-	Kawerau	Carpenter	-
NURMIAHO,								
Olavi Jaakko w. Terttu Vitikainen	1911	Helsinki	Kotka	1954	-	Kawerau	Super Intendent	1956
Ch.:Eeva 1946								
NURMINEN,								
Pekka Single, married later	1945	Karhula	Sunila	1967	-	Tokoroa	Papermill Worker	-
Divorced and returned to Finland								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
OATES, (née Saikkonen)								
Lilja Kaarina	1922	Sorta- vala	Eng- land	1952	1986	Wellingt. Auckland	Various Works	-
husb. Frank R. Oates								
Ch.:Philip 1957 Christchurch, Lilja 1966 Christchurch								
ODELL, (née Lappalainen)								
Kirsti	1947	Hel- sinki	Hel- sinki	1981	-	Kawerau	-	-
husb. Michael H. Odell NZ								
Returned to Finland 1989								
OTTAWAY, (née Nettamo)								
Sirpa M-L.	1938	Liperi	Hel- sinki	1964	-	Auckland	Secretary	-
husb. R. Ottaway, British								
Ch.:Mark Tapio 1963 Helsinki (british by birth, appl. NZ cit. 1986), Maija-Liisa 1965 Auckland, Tanja 1968 Auckland								
PAAJANEN,								
Jouko Kalevi	1940	Lappee	Hamina	1962	-	Kawerau	Papermill Worker	-
Single								
Returned to Finland 1965								
PAAJANEN,								
Lauri	1934	-	-	-	-	Tokoroa	Paperwork	-
PAASISALO,								
Erkki Johannes	1925	Muuru- vesi	Tapiola	1959	-	Wellingt. Auckland	Building Contract.	-
Single								
Returned to Finland								
PAAVONPERÄ,								
Tauno Hugo A.	1923	Oulu	Oulu	1954	-	Kawerau	Caustic Operator	1982
w. Irja Lauttasaari 1922								
Ch.:Jorma 1943 Oulu, Matti 1945 Oulu, Pekka 1954 (appl. NZ cit. 1975)								
Wife Irja returned to Finland 1983								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
PRASAD,								
Arja	1954	Kesä-lahti	Canada	1980	-	Wellingt.	Hair-dresser	-
Husband Ali Prasad (from Fiji) Ch.: Martin 1979 Vancouver								
RAHM, (later Charteris)								
Mirja Anita	1937	Oulu	Austral.	1966	-	Te Teko	Bar Maid	-
husb. David Charteris								
RAUTJOKI,								
Veikko	1913	Valkeala	Sunila	1954	1969	Kawerau	Machine Tender	-
w. Aino Piirola, born 1911, died 1966 Ch.: Reijo 1939 Oulu (nat. 1969), Anna-Liisa 1940 Oulu (marr. Wana, nat. 1970), Harri 1949 (nat. 1981) Veikko, Aino and Harri went to Finland 1961, returned to NZ 1962								
REDDY, (née Bäckström)								
Eeva-Maija H.	1956	Oulu	Oulu	1985	-	Auckland	Computer Operator	-
husb. Jan Reddy 1955 NZ								
REINIKKALA,								
Jouko Juhani	1944	Viro-lahti	Karhula	1966	-	Tokoroa	Motor Mechanic	-
w. Ulla Hietanen 1946								
REINIKKALA,								
Kalevi	1941	Kotka	Hel-sinki	1966	1978	Tokoroa	Electric.	-
w. Riitta Luukkanen 1946 Ch.: Kari 1965 Helsinki (nat. 1978), Anne, Minna First came to NZ with parents 1953 (father Lauri Reinikkala)								
REINIKKALA,								
Lauri Mikael	1913	Virolahti	Kotka	1953	-	Tokoroa	Cellulose Cook	-
w. Tyynne Rytö 1912 (died 1983) Ch.: Kalevi 1941 (nat. 1978), Liisa 1948 (marr. Dines, 2 Ch.:in New Pl.) Returned to Finland 1990								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
RYTKÖ,								
Sulo Armas Single	1924	Viro- lahti	Virol.	1955	-	Tokoroa	Farmer	-
RYÖPPÖNEN,								
Raija Sisko Single, married later P.C. van der Ploeg NZ	1943	Viipuri	Austral.	1965	-	Invercar.	Cutter	-
RÄIKKÖNEN,								
Unto Johannes w. Taimi Ovaska Ch.: Seija 1947 Ruokol. (marr. Spear, nat. 1973), Ch.: Tom & Kim	1924	Ruokol. 1920 (died 1981)	Imatra	1951	-	Gisborne Tokoroa	Builder	1987
RÄNNÄLI,								
Matti w. Kaarina Nurminen Ch.: Ulla 1944 Turku (nat. 1971), Hannu 1945 Kymi (nat. 1986), Timo 1951 (nat. 1971)	1913	Vuolee 1921	Sunila	1955	1971	Kawerau	Paper Technic.	-
RÄSÄNEN, (later Wiltshire)								
Lea Tellervo Single, married later Michael Wiltshire 1932 NZ	1929	Kemi- järvi	Hel- sinki	1960	1968	-	-	-
SAIKKONEN,								
Reino w. Seija Ch.: Anna-Kristiina 1949 Äänekoski (marr. de Lacey, Auckland, 3 ch.), Markku 1951 Karhula (nat. 1974)	1921	Sorta- vala	Kar- hula	1954	1974	Kawerau	Super Intendent	-
SALLINEN, (later Burgess)								
Aino Esteri Single	1929	Rääk- kylä	Hel- sinki	1961	1968	Invercar.	Restaur. Keeper	-
SALLSTEN,								
Rolf Wilhelm w. Toini Hyytiä Ch.: Roland 1955 Helsinki, Wilhelm 1956 Helsinki	1926	Espoo 1927	Kei- mola	1958	-	Whangarei	-	-

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
SANDBERG,								
Paavo	1926	Kemi	Kemi	1959	-	Kawerau	Papermill Worker	-
w. Toini Viitakangas 1929								
Ch.: Sirkka 1950 Kemi (marr. Edwards, divorced),								
Maria 1954 Kemi (marr. Thomas, nat. 1981)								
SHARMA, (née Manninen)								
Aila Inkeri	1953	Kuopio	Austral.	1975	-	Auckland	-	-
husb. Suren D. Sharma 1951, British								
Ch.: Justin Suren 1976 Otahuhu								
SHOTTON,								
Leila Hellevi	1951	Koke- mäki	Eng- land	1978	-	-	Nurse	-
husb. Frank Shotton 1947								
SIITONEN,								
Raimo Johannes	1938	Ruokol.	Vuok- senniska	1962	-	Kawerau	Dryerman	-
w. Anna-Liisa 1937								
Ch.: Harri 1963 NZ, Manu NZ, Eeva-Liisa NZ								
SIPINEN,								
Viljo Armas	1912	Savon- linna	Jyvä- skylä	1952	-	Gisborne	Electric.	-
w. Senja								
Ch.:Marja-Liisa 1943 (marr. Denny, Auckland)								
SIRKKU,								
Heikki Kalevi	1943	Kemi	Kemi	1967	-	Kawerau	Instr. Fitter	-
Single, married NZ Kay, 2 daughters								
SIRKKU,								
Matti	1949	Kemi	Kemi	1970	-	Kawerau	Papermill Worker?	-
Single, married later Pirkko Mäki 1949								
Brother of Heikki Sirkku								
SIRKKU, (née Mäki)								
Pirkko Hanna	1949	Lapua	Lapua	1975	-	Kawerau	Youth Officer	-
husb. Matti Sirkku (see above)								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
SMITH, (née Hyttinen)								
Ritva Aulikki	1940	Hämeen- linna	Hong Kong	1967	-	Auckland	Housew.	-
husb. NZ								
Ch.: Suzanne 1966 Hong Kong, Mark 1967 Auckland, Martin 1969 Auckland								
SPEIRS, (née Suomela)								
Astrid Alice	1926	Mänttä	Eng- land	1962	1967	Christch.	-	-
husb. Donald G. Speirs 1932 NZ								
SPENCER, (née Laurola)								
Tytti Kaarina	1937	Enso	Hel- sinki	1969	-	Auckland	Architect	1992/ 1993
Ch.: Bernidge? 1970 Auckland, Mertsii Louise 1972 Auckland								
ST MARTIN, (née Reikko)								
Saara Anna H.	1923	Kau- vatsa	Canada	1962	-	Auckland	Assistant Chemist.	-
husb. Osbourne St. M. 1918, Anglo-Indian								
Ch.: Leena Sarita 1966								
SUNDHOLM,								
Ellen Cecilia	1920	Jeppo	1951	-	-	-	-	-
Husband Johannes Bertel								
Ch.: Dorita Inger Helena 1944 (married Spence), Douglas 1951								
SUNDHOLM,								
Johannes B.	1913	Munsala	1950	-	-	-	-	-
w. Ellen 1920								
Ch.: Dorita 1944, Douglas 1951								
SUURNÄKKI,								
Matti Antero	1940	Vehkal.	Summa	1962	-	Kawerau	Reelerman	-
Single								
Returned to Finland								
SÄDE,								
Eino Edvard	1907	Kymi	Sunila	1953	-	Tokoroa	Evaporat. Attendant	-
w. Sylvi Kähkönen 1911 (died 1968)								
Ch.: Eila 1936 Jääski (marr. Pepper, british, nat. 1969), Erkki 1946 Kymi (nat. 1968)								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
TAMMILEHTO,								
Aarre Niilo J. w. Raija	1934	Sip-pola	Hami-na	1963	-	Kawerau	Papermill Worker	-
Ch.: Sirpa 1958 Vehkalahti, Virpi 1960 Vehkalahti boy in NZ, Moved to Australia 1967?								
TANI,								
Pekka Tuomas w. Kirsti Juva	1937	Sippola	Hami-na	1962	-	Kawerau	Dryerman	-
Ch.: Vesa 1960 Hamina Returned to Finland								
TANI,								
Veikko Oiva J. w. Sirpa Heikkilä	1933	Sippola	Hami-na	1962	-	Kawerau	Shift Foreman	-
Ch.: Sirkku 1957 Hamina, Jukka 1958 Hamina, Teppo 1960 Hamina Returned to Finland 1966								
TATE-MANNING,								
Liisa husb. Sean R. Tate-Manning (b. 1945 N.Z.)	1943	Turku	Belfast	1975	-	Waikou-aiti	Social Worker	-
Ch.: Maya Tuulikki 1970 Belfast , Rory 1974 Belfast, Anya Dzamilja 1981 N.Z. Auckland								
TIIRAKARI,								
Erkki w. Laila	1927	Viipuri	Austral.	1962	-	Kawerau	Paper Machinist	-
Ch.: Marja 1950 Kotka, Erkki 1952 Kotka, Pirjo 1953 Kotka								
TIMONEN,								
Pirjo Tuulikki	1951	Joensuu	Sweden	1971	-	-	-	-
appl. Not sure if came to NZ								
TIMONEN,								
Tauno Johannes	1927	Nurmes	Sweden	1959	1970	Wellingt.	Railway-repair.	-
Single, married later british woman Elizabeth								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
TOLANEN,								
Veikko Robert w. Kerttu Fors (née Vakkari) Returned to Finland 1982	1917	Lavans.	Kotka	1963	-	Tokoroa	Papermill Worker	-
TORSSONEN,								
Viktor Johann. Ch.: Cindy Gina	1936	Turku	Canada	1961	-	Kawerau Dunedin	Fine Mec. Carpenter	-
Ch.: Cindy 1964 Canada, Fiona 1966 Australia Auckland, Kristian 1968 NZ, Elena 1976 NZ								
TORVELAINEN,								
Yrjö Kullervo w. Raili Kontiainen Ch.: Marja Ismo	1934	Viipuri	Heinola	1963	-	Kawerau	Machine Tender	-
Ch.: Marja 1955 Imatra (marr. Dunlop, nat. 1990?, Opotiki), Ismo 1957 (nat. 1978, Remeura), Jouni 1958 (nat. 1978, Auckland)								
TULKKI,								
Lauri Taru T. Single	1933	Kau- kola	Austral.	1958	-	Hamilton	Labourer	1975
TUOMI,								
Jorma Lauri w. Eeva Nygren Ch.: Jukka Returned to Finland	1933	Kuu- sankoski	Kuu- sankoski	1962	-	Kawerau	Machine Tender	-
Ch.: Jukka 1957 Kuusank., Pekka 1959 Kuusankoski								
TURUNEN,								
Raimo Johannes w. Leila Jortikka Returned to Finland	1936	Ruokol.	Kajaani	1964	-	Kawerau	Super Intendent	-
URRILA,								
Kristiina	-	-	-	-	-	Auckland	-	-
VAN OORDE, (née Holkko)								
Esteri Tellervo husb. Frans van Oorde	1928	Lapua	Hague	1969	-	Auckland	Clerk	-

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
VARTIAINEN,								
Orvo Tapio L.	1915	Viipuri	Kotka	1953	-	Tokoroa	Flakt Dr.	1960
w. Martta Pakarinen	1915						Attendant	
Ch.: Yrjö 1938 Enso (w. Yvonne Ivoga, Western Samoan), Rauno 1952 Kotka (returned to Finland), Roy Tokoroa (moved to Australia 1975)								
VEGAR, (née Pohjonen)								
Anita Hannele	1962	Tampere	Suomi	1989	-	Hokianga	Housewife	-
Ch.: Maia Mila 1991								
VENNONEN,								
Paavo	1914	Kokkola	Austral.	1957	-	various places	Technic.	1989
Single, married later Moved to Australia about 1964								
VIITAKANGAS,								
Kaarlo Ilmari	1922	Nivala	Kemi	1954	1971	Kawerau	Machine Tender	1992
w. Maria Leinonen	1920							
Ch.: Raija 1943 (marr. Mc Cappin, nat. 1971), Rauli 1948 (nat. 1971)								
VIITAKANGAS,								
Vilho Johannes	1918	Nivala	Kemi	1962	-	Kawerau	Papermac.	1979
w. Elina Ranta	1919						Driver	
Ch.: Timo 1943 Kemi (nat. 1972), Jouni 1948 Kemi, Esko 1951 (appl. cit. 1981), Hannu 1957 Kemi (appl. cit. 1981) Brother of Kaarlo Viitakangas Super In- tendent								
VIITANEN,								
Tomi Juha	1960	Inkoo	Hel- sinki	1983	-	Tokoroa	Temporary Work	-
SINGLE								
VINCENT,								
T. Marja-Liisa	1943	Helsinki	England	-	1978	Auckland	-	1992
husb. Brian C. Vincent, British								
VINKKA,								
Heli Aulikki	1945	Lappaj.	Turku	1983	-	Dunedin	Senior Lecturer	-
husb. Martti Puhakka 1948 Ch.: Antti 1980 Turku, Liisa 1982 Turku								

Name	Born	Parish	Resid. bef.NZ	Arr.	Nat.	Resid in NZ	Occupat.	Died
WALROND, (née Pärssinen)								
Hellevi	1939	Lap- peenranta	Swazil.	1983	-	Wellingt. Dunedin	Secretary	-
husb. John W. Walrond 1944 NZ								
Ch.: Mark Tapio 1970 Mbane, Carl Wesley 1972 Mbane								
WEARNE,								
Satu Hannele	1945	Kuusan- koski	Austral.	1977	1988	Auckland	Nurse	-
husb. Michael R. Wearne								
WONG, (née Vanhanen)								
Raili	1931	Äyrä- pää	Eng- land	1957	1959	Palmerst. North	Domestic Worker	-
Single, married later in NZ								
WOOD, (née Torvinen)								
Margaret Kaisa	1927	Kemi	-	1953	1954	New Plym.	-	-
husb. Cyril G. Wood NZ								
YRJÖLÄ,								
Esko	1926	Vilppula	Juan- koski	1964	-	Kawerau	Technical Manager	-
w. Alli Nieminen 1927								
Ch.: Ritva 1953 Helsinki, Risto 1957 Sippola, Elina 1960 Myllykoski								
Returned to Finland after 3-4 years								



The history of the Finns in New Zealand starts with H. D. Spöring from Turku, Finland, sailing on board the "Endeavour" with James Cook in 1768-71.

The first permanent settlers were whalers, sailors and goldminers followed by farming people to settle in small colonies by chain migration.

During the Second World War the New Zealand Government seized the Finnish sailing vessel "Pamir", pictured on the cover, in Wellington, and many crew members remained in New Zealand.

In the 1950's Finns were the pioneers of the New Zealand pulp and paper industry in Tokoroa and Kawerau.

In the last few decades a major reason for a Finn to settle in New Zealand has been marriage with a New Zealander.

Finnish emigration to New Zealand has been only a trickle compared with the major flows to the United States and other destinations.

But the arrival of some 2,000 Finns to the "Aotearoa" is a unique and interesting story of the European overseas emigration worth telling to the posterity - as well as the contribution of sturdy Finns and their descendants to the multiethnic society of New Zealand.



Cover Jussi Jäppinen

ISBN 951-9266-50-X
ISSN 0356-780X

Since 1974 OLAVI KOIVUKANGAS is the Director of the Institute of Migration, Turku, Finland. He received Ph.D. in Demography at the Australian National University in Canberra in 1972 and Ph.D. in History at the University of Turku in 1986. His major books are *Sea, Gold and Sugarcane; Finns in Australia 1851-1947*, Turku 1986, and *The Scandinavians in Australia* with John S. Martin, Melbourne 1986.

